The fascist element in A.M. Ludovici's defence of conservatism

Scholtke, Paul Ernest

How to cite:

Use policy
The full-text may be used and/or reproduced, and given to third parties in any format or medium, without prior permission or charge, for personal research or study, educational, or not-for-profit purposes provided that:

- a full bibliographic reference is made to the original source
- a link is made to the metadata record in Durham E-Theses
- the full-text is not changed in any way

The full-text must not be sold in any format or medium without the formal permission of the copyright holders.

Please consult the full Durham E-Theses policy for further details.
"THE FASCIST ELEMENT IN A.M. LUDOVICI'S DEFENCE OF CONSERVATISM"

by Paul Ernest Scholtke, B.A. (Hons.)

Master of Arts

University of Durham

Department of Politics

1980

The copyright of this thesis rests with the author. No quotation from it should be published without his prior written consent and information derived from it should be acknowledged.
THESIS ABSTRACT

Paul Ernest Scholtke "The Fascist Element in A.M. Ludovici's Defence of Conservatism."

By the study of the writings of Anthony Mario Ludovici, his affiliates, and other fascists, it is demonstrated that it is the traditions of ideologies that are incommensurable, not ideologies per se.

That it is not logically impossible for fascism to be introduced into a party system, which it intends to succeed, through rendering the ideology of an established political party commensurable with fascism.

That fascists have attempted to render established ideologies commensurable with fascism, and have succeeded. The study of the doctrine of Anthony Mario Ludovici demonstrates the latter in relation to conservatism.

That the fascists who rendered established ideologies commensurable with fascism, like Anthony Mario Ludovici and his affiliates, contingently failed to get their innovations accepted by the adherents of established ideologies. They failed because ideologies are traditions, and the respective traditions of established ideologies are incommensurable visions of how men should be associated and authority and power distributed. Incommensurable ideologies are both cause and consequence of the political divisions of party systems whose political parties deploy them as the language of their adherence. The practical success of an innovation in any ideology is always and everywhere decided by its contingent acceptance or rejection by the custodians of the traditions of an ideology, political parties and their constituents. Political ideologies tend to inertia because they are traditions that are incommensurable. It is this inertia that the fascists who rendered established ideologies commensurable with fascism, could not overcome.

Ludovici and his affiliates never succeeded in getting themselves regarded as conservatives because the traditions of conservatism, and the consensus among conservatives about its meanings as its traditions, created sufficient inertia that the innovations which the former sought could not be effected in the contemporary party system. If they had succeeded conservatism would have become commensurable with fascism.
# TABLE OF CONTENTS

## Chapters

<table>
<thead>
<tr>
<th>Chapter</th>
<th>Page</th>
</tr>
</thead>
<tbody>
<tr>
<td>1. <strong>TYPOLGY OF GENETIC FASCISM</strong></td>
<td>6</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Notes</td>
<td>38</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>2. <strong>CONSERVATION IN THE WRITINGS OF AUSCHTNAI HAIST INJUICHA</strong></td>
<td>45</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Notes</td>
<td>82</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>3. <strong>PERENNIAL CONCERN WITH ART, CULTURE AND NIETZSCHE</strong></td>
<td>91</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Van Gogh</td>
<td>155</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Augusto Rodin</td>
<td>159</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Emilo Zola</td>
<td>167</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Augustus John and Frederick Gallegher</td>
<td>167</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Notes</td>
<td>171</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>4. <strong>THE DISEMBOTTLE WORLD</strong></td>
<td>191</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Introduction, Action and Struggle - The Principles of History and Life</td>
<td>196</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>The Causes of Degeneracy:</td>
<td>218</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>1. Social: Misogynism and Dysgenic Mating</td>
<td>230</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>3. Ideological:</td>
<td>242</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Liberalism and Socialism</td>
<td>246</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Utilitarian Rationalism</td>
<td>255</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Socratic Humanism</td>
<td>262</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Totalitarian</td>
<td>281</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Rousseauian Romanticism</td>
<td>291</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Socialistic Volkerism</td>
<td>298</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>4. <strong>Institutional: Democratic Government</strong></td>
<td>305</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Conclusion</td>
<td>307</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Notes</td>
<td>307</td>
</tr>
</tbody>
</table>

<p>| | 336 |
| | 336 |
| 5. <strong>THE WORLD REGENERATED</strong> | 346 |
| The Revolution | 346 |
| Introduction, Ethnic, Party and Discipline - The Principles of Selective Breeding | 366 |
| The Program for Regeneration: | 383 |
| 1. The Role of Men and Women | 336 |
| 2. The Whitechapel Ethic | 391 |
| 3. The Inauguration Reality | 391 |</p>
<table>
<thead>
<tr>
<th>Chapter</th>
<th>Page</th>
</tr>
</thead>
<tbody>
<tr>
<td>4. Migration</td>
<td>398</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>5. Populism</td>
<td>407</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>6. Totalitarianism</td>
<td>422</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>7. The Order of Nature Restored: Naturalism, Induction and Propaganda</td>
<td>436</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Conclusions and Conspicuean</td>
<td>453</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Notes</td>
<td>461</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>6. LUDOVICI'S POLITICAL AFFILIATIONS</td>
<td>492</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Notes</td>
<td>515</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>CONCLUSIONS</td>
<td>523</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>APPENDIX: Anthony Mario Ludovici's Unpublished Papers and Manuscripts</td>
<td>526</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>BIBLIOGRAPHY:</td>
<td>528</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Anthony Mario Ludovici: Primary Source</td>
<td>528</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Anthony Mario Ludovici: Secondary Sources</td>
<td>551</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Anthony Mario Ludovici's Political Affiliations</td>
<td>554</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>The Main Contemporary Newspapers and Periodicals</td>
<td>556</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Fascism: Primary Sources</td>
<td>557</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Fascism: Secondary Sources</td>
<td>563</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Conservatism: Primary Sources</td>
<td>579</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Conservatism: Secondary Sources</td>
<td>582</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Miscellanea</td>
<td>584</td>
</tr>
</tbody>
</table>
STATEMENT OF COPYRIGHT

The copyright of this thesis rests with the author. No quotation from it should be published without his prior written consent and information derived from it should be acknowledged.
CHAPTER I. TYPOLOGY OF GENERIC FASCISM

This chapter is divided into two sections. The first deals with the origins of fascist ideology before World War I; the second with the motifs of fascism, a term which gained currency after World War I.

Fascism is an ideology which occurred in liberally constituted political systems whose traditional ideologies and parties were the objects of its attack. Extreme nationalists before World War I, who were later to be regarded as fascists, attempted radical innovations in the ideologies of the party systems with which they were disillusioned. Their extreme nationalism drew from all the extremes of the party systems which they intended to succeed. They attempted to enlist the support of socialists in an authoritarian socialism; they attempted to enlist the support of conservatives in a revolutionary conservatism. Always, they attempted to reconcile what had been regarded as oppugnant political ideals in movements to overthrow the party systems which they believed, led to the degeneration of their respective nations. To enlist the co-operation of political extremes they identified themselves as the proponents of all ideologies, but never with their parties. They called themselves socialists, conservatives, liberals, or the proponents of any established ideology as circumstances prompted, with the object of uniting the political extremes, but never aligned themselves with the traditions of established ideologies. Theirs was to be a novel socialism, liberalism, conservatism, nationalism, or anarchism. It was one that linked all political extremes in militant allegiance to the nation. In continental Europe, from the latter decades of the nineteenth century, they drew upon contemporaneous movements of thought which repudiated the legacy of the Enlightenment with its rationalism, materialism, positivism, and
humanism. The influence of the changing conception of race, Darwinism, and the 'discovery' of the unconscious by psychologists was clearly evident in their militant nationalist rhetoric that was directed against established ideologies, especially liberalism and socialism, and the mediocrity of an industrial society. These proto-fascist expressions of discontent with democracy and the legacy of the Enlightenment occurred, principally, in Germany, France, and Italy.

In Germany, from the latter part of the nineteenth century, intellectuals claiming to be 'radical conservatives' argued that liberalism and secularism had brought about the decay of society. Their opposition to the ideas of the Enlightenment and the French Revolution was accompanied by appeals for the militant regeneration of the nation. They extolled 'blood and mysticism' in opposition to rationalism. Their advocacy of struggle and heroic action was conjoined with the anti-rationalists ideas of occult and spiritualist circles which were in the vogue towards the end of the century, such as Theosophy.

Many of these Volkish theorists were associated with the contemporaneous youth movements and their attempts to abandon the poisonous influence of materialism and return to nature. They linked the human soul with nature and the nature of the soul of the Volk was regarded by them, as determined by the native landscape. Thus, the Germans were praised as deep, mysterious, and profound as they lived in dark, mist-shrouded forests. Conversely, the Jews were denigrated as a shallow, arid, 'dry' devoid of profundity and totally lacking in creativity as they were a desert people. The city, because of its association with materialism and progress, symbolised decay of the Volk.

Associated with the revolt against reason was the changing conception of race. Whilst the primacy of an intuitive vitalism was to
endure, it became attached to the idea of the nation as a race and not a class or classes. At the same time the preoccupation with the decline of civilisation changed to that of its regeneration. Gobineau's racism portrayed decadence, disorder and degeneration, as the irreversible outcome of democracy and materialism, which destroyed the aristocratic and traditional society he idealised. But, Houston Stewart Chamberlain, in particular, after being influenced by Wagner at Bayreuth, deployed his racist theory as one of regeneration which could be secured through the victory of the Germans and Teutons over the degenerate spirit of the Jews. Human will creates the national unity which is the indispensable condition of the creation and perpetuation of the race against the Manichean forces of degeneration. His belief that intuition and instinct, not reason, are the best guides to regeneration, is typical of the mysticism and anti-rationalism that was deployed to oppose positivism at the end of the century.

The ideology of Ernst Haeckel and his Monist League, in which the laws of biology were transferred to the social realm and the primitive forces of nature deified, was representative of these streams of thought. Radical racial nationalism was coupled with an aggressive denial of the political and social assumptions of liberalism. It was claimed that the community should absorb, not liberate, the total energies of the individual. The laws of biology were presented as the standard of judgement exclusively appropriate to politics. The organic racial state would be man's salvation from what was decreed as the tendency of a society governed according to liberal ideals, man's alienation in a society that is devoid of integration. In the organic racial state, man would be restored to the mystically apprehended forces of nature and of race. Class harmony was to be
secured through the cessation of industrialisation and urbanisation. This policy would enable a strong and biologically superior Germany to subdue inferior races.

Contemporaneously with the social strains that accompanied rapid urbanisation and industrialisation of Germany, a vicious anti-Semitism developed that stereotyped the Jews as the instigators of liberalism and degeneracy. Anti-Semitism was adopted and developed by numerous movements at the turn of the century which, drawing from both the 'left' and the 'right', expressed national grievances about the influx of foreign labour into the industrialising regions of Germany and Austria. Indeed, the programme of one of these movements, the Deutsche Arbeiterpartei, of August 15, 1904, blamed democracy and capitalism for the ills of the people, used the word 'movement' to describe itself and was presented as both anti-Marxist and anti-capitalist, anti-foreign and anti-traditional. Racialism, that had already assumed a fixed relation between the physical and moral natures of men, gained credence by the impact from Russia of the Protocols of the Elders of Zion and the doctrine of the proto-fascist Union of Russian People (Black Hundreds) which, like its Austrian and German counterparts, fused political extremes. As early as 1903 Ludwig Weltmann in his Politische Anthropologie synthesised the extremely incongruous beliefs of Marx, Darwin and Kant, in a doctrine justifying mass racial struggle. Like J. Lanz von Liebenfel's anti-Semitic and Nordicist Ostara association, founded in 1905, which advocated racial struggle by the Volk, they afforded the pan-Germanic circles doctrinal cohesion.

Paradoxically, it was in France that the ideals of the French Revolution were to be subjected to the most trenchant attacks, especially after the debacle of the Franco-Prussian war in 1870. Conservativism
was conjoined with notions from the radical tradition. Ernest Renan and de la Tour du Pin advocated a total break with liberalism and idealised a corporate state devoid of social and antagonisms. The latter, a conservative, became rabidly anti-Semitic during the Dreyfuss Affair.17 Edouard Drumont in his very popular book of 1886, *La France Juive*, repeated a familiar conspiracy theory that the Jews were responsible for France's degeneration and, although a conservative writer12, typical of proto-fascists hailing from conservatism, described socialism as "very noble."13 They contributed to the transformation of the theory of nationalism in France from its association with reason and liberalism to its conjunction with notions of an authoritarian state attacking social injustices in the name of group solidarity. Nationalism and conservatism were synthesised with socialism.

Maurice Barres, another conservative writer14, concerned with the relative decline of France after the Franco-Prussian war, formulated a nationalism synthesised with notions of elitism. He advanced the cult of energy, action, and bitter anti-Semitism. The desideratum of heroic regeneration was contrasted with the inaction of democracy. He conceived democracy deficient in vitality and force. His preoccupation with decadence reflected a widespread intellectual mood of the fin de siècle and the revolt against positivism.15 During the Dreyfuss Affair, Barres substituted racial for cultural rootedness and advocated a political programme of national socialism in 1898. He extolled emotion against reason as the best guide to the basic truths of our existence and assimilated man's nature to that of the animal world in his assertions that struggle was a revitalising force against decadence. He was a theoretician of that new populist and socialist 'right' that crystallised during the last years of the nineteenth century. Opposed to parliamentary democracy, he appealed directly
to the people and called for direct action to mobilise against the triumphant bourgeoisie. His anti-Semitism cemented the 'proletariat' into the national community. French workers were to be protected from finance and capitalism.

Boulangerism and anti-Dreyfusard nationalism combined the right with a whole assemblage of ideas from the 'left' and amalgamated political authoritarianism, romantic anti-liberalism, and anti-Semitism. Representative of this trend was another putative conservative Charles Maurras, who contributed his virulent intellect to one of those anti-Dreyfusard nationalist movements, the Action Francaise. He thought the nation should break with democracy and attain the spirit and ideal of classicism, the static and perfect order, hierarchical, authoritarian and untainted by any foreign element. His doctrine was a panegyric of war. Anarchy, Jewry, and Germany constituted France's enemies in his Manichean vision of the world. In his glorification of heroic action, irrationalism, and synthesis of conservative and populist ideas he drove conservatism beyond the limits dividing it from incipient fascism.

France was not unique in this questioning of the whole body of institutions characteristic of industrial civilisation and those values inherited from eighteenth century rationalism. Many thinkers in the eighteen-nineties were to denigrate the world of matter and reason, materialism and positivism, the mediocrity of what they regarded as bourgeois society and the 'muddle' of parliamentary democracy. The consequence was a popular and authoritarian nationalism that prefigured the emotional and sentimental fascist ethos. It had the same cult of youth, adventure and heroism, the same hatred of bourgeois values, and the same faith in the power of the unconscious.
The same romanticism and the mystique of action and hostility to capitalism which it exhibited, were to reappear in fascism. Typical of its leaders was Paul Doraules whose League of Patriots, founded in 1886, blamed democracy for the degeneration of the nation and whose vocabulary of revolt emptied of its humanism, universalism, and appeal to liberty, served to mobilise the masses against the Republic.

As the preceding thinkers changed the notion of nationalism in France, Georges Sorel and the syndicalists were to transform socialism. Sorel saw rationalism, democracy and utilitarianism as symptoms of declining strength, senility and exhaustion. He had an ambiguous relationship to both the 'left' and the 'right' as he placed his faith in the elite of the 'proletariat' to realise national regeneration. Decadence was depicted by Sorel as the natural tendency of civilisation against which men must perpetually struggle through the invocation of myths evoking militant action and heroism. His emphasis on myth cohered with his anti-rational evaluation of man. The Jews were anathema to Sorel as he believed reconciliation between groups, through compromise and negotiation, impossible. Together with some of his ex-syndicalist followers he collaborated in a number of extremist authoritarian reviews, to which monarchists, nationalists, militants, anti-democrats, and anti-humanitarians of all kinds contributed. Paul Bourget and Maurice Barres, two of the most extreme traditionalists, authoritarians, and nationalists in France, were on the editorial council of l'Independence, of which Sorel was co-editor from 1911-1913.

Revolutionary syndicalism did not have a preconceived theory or an integrated doctrine, it was presented as a philosophy of action and movement. Its revolt was linked to the wider revolt against reason.
that occurred during the three decades from approximately 1890 to the early Nineteen-Twenties. During this period the assumptions of social thought, which had hitherto been rationalism, were changed to the assumptions that man and society were not characterised by reason and intelligence. It was increasingly claimed, by social thinkers, that the attribution of rationality to man and society was erroneous. Henri Bergson, Vilfredo Pareto and Sigmund Freud are a few of the thinkers associated with this transformation. Fascism was the most acute expression of this revolt against reason and shared obvious similarities with revolutionary syndicalism's denigration of democracy, bourgeois society, and the capitalist economy. Italian fascism was, to an extent, a fusion of syndicalism and nationalism.

Both Sorel and the pro-war nationalists linked the extreme of 'right' and 'left' in their common attacks on rationalism, democracy, and the bourgeoisie. In France, before World War I, nationalist and socialist symbols were being synthesised in a new and strange form. In 1903 a National Socialist Party was founded by a former socialist, Pierre Brossoit, and in the following year the Federation Nationale des Jeunnes de France was founded advocating capital and labour collaboration, a strong state, anti-Semitism and elitism. More important, the Circole Proudhon was founded in December 1911 and was presided over by Charles Maurras, with Georges Sorel as its moving spirit. It embraced both nationalists and syndicalists belonging to the Action Française. The butt of its tirades were against democracy and capitalism. Symbolic of its ideological eclecticism,
Heur assass declared there was: "a form of socialism, when stripped of its democratic and cosmopolitan accretions, would fit in with nationalism just as a well made glove fits a beautiful hand." At his instigation the Action Française made a considerable play for the support of the workers promoting their disaffection from the liberal state.

A similar pattern of events can be traced in Italy. Anti-parliamentarianism of a systematic character had already been expressed in the elite theories of Gaetano Mosca and Vilfredo Pareto in the eighteen eighties. This was indicative of the contemporaneous influence of social Darwinism which conferred respectability on anti-democratic ideas. Significantly, Robert Michels, one of these elitists, was to become a fascist after World War I as his political sympathies changed from humanitarian socialism to those of authoritarianism and nationalism. He considered the Italian Fascists to be a new and more vigorous political leadership replacing an exhausted liberal elite, who were incapable of stemming the drift towards anarchy and social decline. He contributed to the climate of disillusionment with democracy from which fascism benefitted as he claimed that it concealed the fact of minority ruling. These ideas, and those of Gustave Le Bon on the fundamental irrationality and suggestability of human nature, "became common media of intellectual exchange among the most radical elements of Italian socialism."24

As in France and Germany, the Italian nationalist movement turned to the workers and peasants whilst remaining militantly anti-democratic. Enrico Corradini, though vehemently anti-Marxist, considered his nationalist doctrine to be socialist as he declared to the First Congress of Nationalists in December 1910 in Florence, when he spoke of "our national socialism". He extolled war and heroism.
as necessary and salutary facts of human life unrecognised by democrats and liberals. The class struggle should be transferred to the international arena as Italy was a "proletarian nation". A corporate state resolving class antagonism would, he believed, create the indispensable conditions for an aggressive nationalism.

Futurism also contributed to the disillusionment with liberalism and positivism. From the beginning it was an aspect of the new aggressive Italian nationalism that agitated against socialism and clericalism. Masonry and all international organisations. Ethical codes were reduced to such heroic virtues as war and struggle presented as the motives of progress. Blind love of danger and the inordinate worship of action were extolled in Futurist art. Intuition in its unconscious vivacity is what sends the poet down the streams of motion. They considered war and struggle to be the only remedies for personal and national degeneration. But, for Marinetti indicative of the changes being made in nationalism, national regeneration "cannot be explained without the action of socialism".26

Italian pragmatism challenged positivism which it claimed reduced life to facts. For Giovanni Papini, the leading pre-war pragmatist in Italy, "faith modifies reality - we believe and we act; we act and we transform. The anti-rational element in pragmatism was developed by men sceptical of the power of reason, and optimistic with regard to the power of belief in creating the truths by which we live. As a philosophy of action pragmatism reached its extreme limit, under Giovanni Papini and Giuseppe Prezzolini, in the blind exaltation of action, which, devoid of any criterion of ends, liberals would regard as irrational. They worshipped action as an end in itself. This form of pragmatism appeared in Futurism.27 Action was the key word. The sphere was a
They called themselves philosopher wolves and professors of energy after a decade of pale lost lilies and suicides. This pragmatic exaltation of action was inbibed and developed by syndicalists and nationalists disillusioned with the effects of Italy's unification and liberal constitution. The effect was to unite the extremities of syndicalism, which demanded a purification of the world, and nationalism which called for war.

D'Annunzio embellished nationalism by marrying it to refinement and sensuality. He borrowed the figure of the 'superman' from Nietzsche and identified this with the masterful man of action, capable of controlling multitudes and shaping events by the strength of his will. D'Annunzio perceived the world through myths and symbols as visual image follows visual image in his works, until the reader can see the scene rising before his eyes. These images were combined with an exaltation of action. One of these symbols was the 'Flame of Life' symbolising personal and national regeneration. In d'Annunzio's poetry and essays the heroic passions, closeness to nature, power of will are contrasted with modern degeneracy. He contrasted them with the greyness of bourgeois existence and the inaction and compromise of parliamentary government. The Arditi who came to form the nucleus of d'Annunzio's legion at Fiume were called the 'black flame' indicating fire and steel forging regeneration. His words addressed to the multitude had only the object of heroic deeds and action which could redeem Italy from degeneration, words are feminine and deeds are masculine.

Syndicalism was the agency of changes in socialism that complemented those in nationalism. It was of great influence in Italian socialist circles, and saw the struggle against liberal democracy as the first
and most important objective of socialism. Ardent rebellion was to be led by the elite of activiists. Before World War I syndicalism and nationalism, Enrico Corradini observed, had a "common love of conquest," they were both "imperialist." The writings of Agostino Lanzaillo, who considered war and struggle to be a source of human redemption, reveal the same contiguity between syndicalism and nationalism.

The political career of Mussolini, and many other fascists, was representative of this phase of intellectual history when the legacy of the Enlightenment was opposed and the political extremes fused. Mussolini's pre-war beliefs were a synthesis of political extremes: the anarchism of Max Stirner, which fitted well with his eccentric "socialist" belief that society is a field of struggle; nationalism; authoritarian and elitist categories of thought derived from his knowledge of Pareto and Nietzsche. His avowal and development of the doctrine of fascism was but a nominal transition from his pre-war beliefs — one of name. Indeed, the ideology that was to be called fascism after World War I was, to an extent, the result of international changes that occurred during the preceding decades. The significance of World War I is that it was a catalyst. The important conclusion to remember about the preceding part of this chapter is that there were ideologists before World War I who had already evolved fascism by transforming the meanings of existing ideologies and linking them with all political extremes in an aggressive nationalism. True, they were unsuccessful, and this I maintain is because they still consider themselves to be making transformations in existing ideologies and not acting independently of them. They were attempting to make transformations in existing ideologies that neither could sustain, because they are traditions whose inertia...
they could not overcome. Only World War I provided the

dissillusionment with their traditions upon which fas
cism could sustain an identity independent of traditional ideologies,

and succede. It is the motifs of fascism, which gained
currency after World War I, that I shall proceed to describo.

Typically, fascists described the world as degenerate and

committed themselves to the militant regeneration of the

country. The liberal regime was seen as decayed, rotten, and

would have to be totally eradicated. They considered that they

had plumbed the depths of what they regarded as the sickness

of liberal bourgeois democracy. Gilles, a novel written by

the French fascist Pierre Drieu La Rochelle takes decay as

its theme and abounds with images of death, annihilation, and

putrefaction. The mood of those intellectuals who were to

become fascists was one of disillusion and despair. The heroic

ex-servicemen in Celine's Journey to the End of the Night trying
to floc decadence realises that decay and putrefaction is all-pervasive

and disavows his youthful idealism. Indeed, the works of

intellectuals associated with fascism are filled with imagery

of a decadent and diseased civilization. They portrayed the world

as divided into the Manichean forces of degeneration and those

of regeneration. Indeed, the 'demonological tradition' has been

traced through such apocalyptic myths as the Protocols of the

Elders of Zion into the structure of fascism. The British Fascists,
a group founded in 1923 by Miss Rotha Lintern-Orman, conceived the
forces of degeneration as: 'Communism, Socialism, Anarchism, free
love, atheism, and the trade unions, which the members tended to
lump together into a single mysterious entity.' In contrast the
realism of fascism is evident in its vitalism. Fascists regarded
their ideology as one of life and movement. They described themselves
As movements rather than parties as they challenged what they considered to be the inertia and degeneration of traditional political structures. Fascists saw themselves as liberating the world from what they regarded as the bourgeois spirit, and awakening a desire for regeneration that was simultaneously spiritual and physical, social, moral, and political. They proclaimed themselves as engaged in a revolution to save the nation and inaugurate a new era of national self-asssrtion.

It was presented as a counter-civilisation, a "fascist century" as Mussolini called it, or a "new civilisation" as Oswald Mosley called it. Mussolini claimed that fascists would make a total break with the nineteenth century, the "century of the individual", and inaugurate the collective century, the century of the State. In every possible way fascists opposed themselves to the ancien régime. The militant regeneration of man that fascists proposed was frequently depicted as rejuvenation of the body, since for fascists man's psyche is wholly dependent on the condition of his body. Fascists substituted for what they denounced as the pacific ideals of liberals, the militant ideal of the barbarian knights of the Middle Ages. As an alternative to the economic man of liberal and the Marxist materialism, they offered a brand of new idealism, that put the spiritual above the material.

Ex-servicemen played a leading role in the fascist movements. The combatant and heroic qualities that fascists extolled and their advocacy of perpetual struggle appealed to them as guardians of the nation's heritage and greatness. Their intention was to mould society as a fighting unit, inculcating in it the fighting soldier's heroic virtues of discipline, sacrifice, self-denial, and brotherhood. They considered themselves above preceding generations, parties, classes. The elite of the fascist revolution would be naturally
selected through battle and conquest as they considered themselves a militant order distinguished by sacrifice, devotion, and self-denial. Leon Degrelle, leader of the Belgian Rexist, considered himself one of "the handful of heroes and saints that will undertake the Reconquest." They developed a cult of duty, sacrifice, and heroism. Mussolini said of fascism; "We are against the easy life". For the fascist, life meant "duty, elevation, conquest," it was "serious, austere, religious". Life was a struggle which entailed strength, willingness to serve, obedience, authority, self-denial. Adventure and living dangerously through the cult of strength were the ideal ways to live in sympathy with health, blood and virility. War put man to the test and made potent his primal virtues and basic instincts. "War is my fatherland," said Gilles the hero of the novel by the same name by Pierre Drieu La Rochelle. Fascists substituted the ideal of the primitive instincts and the primal emotions of the barbarian for the sophisticated rationalist humanism of the civilization they were rebelling against. This was the corollary of the cult of war and physical danger, brutality, strength and sexuality, which treated anyone who believed in reasoned arguments with contempt. Man was to be reconciled with nature, saved from a lingering death and physical decrepitude by exalting his body and sexuality. The ideal of virility, for Robert Brasillach, who was not peculiar among fascist satirists, was best portrayed by sexual imagery. The energy and virility of fascist man is contrasted with what they regarded as the impotent bourgeois, liberals and socialists. Power, speed, vigour, toughness, solidity and effectiveness were to be fascists qualities and it is no coincidence that the value placed by the futurists on modernity was readily incorporated into fascism. "We are the party of speed" Pierre Drieu La Rochelle
declared to convey the activists spirit of the fascist movement, whilst Mussolini chose the phrase: "Fascism is a dynamo.\(^43\) The fascist belief in the omnipotence of the will and the capacity of the strong man with faith to triumph over natural obstacles, had, as its corollary a devaluation of the whole sphere of Utilitarian motives. Sacrifice in the service of the nation was to be absolute. According to Mussolini fascism "conceives of life as a struggle\(^44\) and: "believes neither in the possibility nor the utility of perpetual peace.\(^45\) As in d'Annunzio's speeches at Fiume, and the key note of futurist propaganda, the strong and the heroic have an absolute right to rule. Ardengo Soffici desired a "plunge into refreshing barbarism" and the restoration of the condition of "the rudimentary and savage hoards of prehistoric times.\(^46\) Hitler's autobiography, Mein Kampf, is an elaboration of these notions. The survival principle is a fundamental law of nature as it was related to individuals and nations, as nature destroys the weak in order to give place to the strong. Curzio Malaparte applied these notions to government. He believed modern states are amorally captured and defended by successive elites who cynically manipulate power.\(^47\) Central to fascism is a belief in virility and force and, as a consequence, a hatred of decadence. The nationalists had greatly declined in courage and masculinity from earlier times, when they had been rugged, virile fighters. They, too, were evil, because he symbolised rationalism, liberalism, materialism and hedonism. Robert Brasillach declared that the only justice there is in this world is "that which reigns by force.\(^48\) For Alfred Rosenberg: "combat is the father of all things.\(^49\) Pierre Drieu La Rochelle equated passion with force and national regeneration which could be best served by fascism, the most anti-rational and forceful of all European ideologies.\(^50\) He wrote: "Life is always a goddess of war, covered with barbaric ornaments and waving her bloody lance.\(^51\) He glorified man's animality, an espousal of a kind of neo-primitivism.
Frenchmen were decadent, because they had been taught to value disembodied rationalism over physical instinct, the cerebral over the primitive, civilisation over animality. Political problems were analysed by him in terms of animal struggle. If all warfare were abolished, one of man's major ties with nature would be severed, and one of his major sources of virility destroyed.

History, he believed, was not a constant progression towards greater human progress, happiness and wisdom, but instead it was a cyclical process marked by repetitive struggle which left the nature of things unaltered. Human struggle did not create a utopia but gave man an opportunity to express the vital forces within him. Characteristically, he called his system of thought the "Philosophy of the Force". Great leaders embodied force in their very persons and practiced it in their actions. Regeneration could only be achieved through the will: implemented in terms of virility, courage, athleticism, and action. He urged that a society dedicated to inaction should break with its main characteristic by reconditioning the body and restoring thought and action to their proper relationship. By glorifying force he hoped to undermine what he dismissed as the debilitating rationalism and pale idealism that had dominated modern Europe until fascism.

Fascists emphasised pragmatism and action in their struggle to save the nation. Their ideology creates the image of action, life, and movement. Their was an ideology subordinated to action and pragmatism. As Mussolini wrote to Michele Bianchi on the occasion of the opening of a fascist school of propaganda in Milan in the summer of 1921:

Italian fascism on pain of death, or worse, suicide, must give itself a body of doctrines. They will and must not be shirts of mail that bind us to eternity - for tomorrow is mysterious and unpredictable - they must constitute a norm of orientation for our
for our daily political and individual activity. Mussolini promulgated an ideology that would be closely linked to action, both by inspiring and reflecting it. He developed the theory of the unity of thought and action. Fascists called themselves movements and had an immense thirst for action, and not just action aimed at overthrowing the established order, but action for action's sake. All were to act with blind passion and to think of life in terms of fist fights and machine gun fire where the very principle of life could be rediscovered in action and struggle. In the fascist view man rediscovered his essence in extreme situations where risk could be exalted against security, inspiration against rules. Indeed, intellectually the core of Italian fascist ideology was a belief in the primacy of unreflecting action, life and inspired creativity over reason and "dead" systems of thought. Fascism was claimed as a movement liberating itself from intellectual preconceptions, in which practice was subject to theory instead of the converse. The social Darwinist concept of the life force, and the survival of the fittest, were converged with activism to form a movement of dynamism. According to Jose Stroool: "you must come on board, let yourself be carried by the torrent; in other words you must act. The rest will take care of itself." Giovanni Gentile, saw law and institutions in a negative light, as obstacles to the free activity of the spirit, as he thought the State existed only as an internal reality which was constantly created through action. Violence appeared as creative spontaneity freed from legal and institutional regulation. These ideas served as justification for the avoidance of rational discussion and Mussolini's reluctance to commit himself to a clearly defined doctrine. According to G. Pellisi: "the thinker of fascism is...\textsuperscript{53b}
and remains Benito Mussolini, since he has thought and thinks Fascism in making it."  

Accompanying their plea for direct action, fascists exalted feeling, emotion, and violence, which were to replace European rationalism. They developed a cult of the body, health, and the outdoor life, as an alternative to a civilisation that conceived education as an education of the intellect. For the Belgian Rexist Jose Streel fascism was a "state of mind", "something spiritual and mystical." It was against eighteenth century rationalism, which forms the basis of liberal ideology with its imagery of natural rights, individualism, matter and reason, that the fascists rebelled. For Mussolini Gentile, feeling was prior to thought and the basis of it." They opposed what they dismissed as the dry and grey argumentation of liberal politics with appeals to feeling which were part of the great campaigns to conquer souls and hold them. Essentially populist in its appeals and its essence, fascism addressed itself to the sentiments, deeply rooted prejudices and intuitions, not to mere rationality. Rational appeals are accessible to the minority; they are also subject to criticism. Reasoning invites examination, speculation, and disagreement. Feelings can be shared, arguments seldom, and then only by few. Intellectual argument and its associated deliberation is by definition an agent of division, where tolerance and compromise prevail, not unanimity. Fascism acquired the character of an anti-intellectual reaction which pitted the powers of feeling and emotion, and anti-rational forces of every kind, against the rationality of democracy. It claimed to have rediscovered instinct, the cult of physical strength, violence and brutality. Taken together the attention paid to scenarios by all the fascist movements, the care lavished on decor, the great ceremonies, the parades, made up a new liturgy and political style where deliberation and discussion were supplanted by song, torches,
and march pasts.

Fascism assumes the anti-rationality of human nature - that human action and will is guided by instinct, intuition, and feelings. Society is founded on non-rational factors. The peculiarity of fascist ideology is that it does not possess a coherence that is consciously systematic but has an unconscious coherence. Its emphasis on myth accompanies its anti-rational plea. All political and historical ideas are myths as historical interpretations are fictional constructions destined to disappear before the deeds of the moment which break through the temporal pattern of history. Common action is all: ratiocination and discussion otiose. The inherent vagueness of fascist ideology, when considered in practical terms, accords with the Sorelian notion of 'myth', which in order to mobilise the masses should be distant and incapable of immediate realisation. Vilfredo Pareto, whose social and political thought contributed significantly to the movements of thought which crystallised in fascism, made a significant reflection on the mythical nature of fascism just before his demise after the accession to power of the Fascists in Italy. He claimed the the success of fascism would depend on its affording a satisfactory 'faith'.

The immediate success of Italian fascism was advanced rather than hindered by its lack of definition. The open-ended character of fascist ideology facilitated the winning of converts. Novel among political movements it deliberately intended to exploit anti-rationality. The promptings of the unconscious, the race, the blood, the revealed faith, are armoured against critical examination by the assertion that they are 'higher' forms of knowledge which reason is inherently unable to appreciate.
The sources of certainty are held to be collective or supernatural creations, hence the inability of the individual to criticize them. Emphasis on myth was explicitly acknowledged by Pierre Drieu La Rochelle: "A man who disbelieves in his acts and who enchains his acts according to one myth is very succinct."

The ideal is: "To find nihilism before one's tabula rasa, and where supported, abolish every category of the limiting decrepitude of reason turned on rationalism and of morals turned on hypocrisy."

Alfred Rosenberg also extolled mysticism and 'inwardness' instead of reason. As each race has a unique soul the task of the twentieth century was to create a myth to regenerate the race. The life of a race cannot be comprehended by 'logically developed philosophy' of cause and effect, but as a "mystical synthesis, an activity of soul, which cannot be explained rationally." His policy towards art was that non-degenerate art subsisted in the supranational creation of forms and patterns that have a simple and unsophisticated relationship to every aspect of the life of the Volk; particularly as this life represented the unfolding of the collective subconscious into concrete forms, patterns and relationships. Gregor Strasser spoke of the "unconscious sentiment" of the people opposed to rationalism, the characteristic of urbanisation. Hitler preferred that the patriot sought the "life forces, the irrational impulses," rather than the degenerate reason of civilisation.

This reliance on the non-rational has led many to claim that fascism is less a doctrine than a faith, mystical, cloudy, and frequently not just non-rational but consciously anti-rational. Anti-intellectualism was a dominant note of the movements as they opposed rationalism, the idea that by abstract reasoning man is able to arrive at one and the same truth. Fascism looks inward to the
Instinct or soul and is addressed to the feelings, not to the intellect. The fascist ethos is emotional and sentimental; at that level the ends of action count less than the action itself. All European fascisms give the impression that the movement was open ended in a continuous Nietzschean ecstasy.

Primo de Rivera, the founder of the Spanish Falange, believed that "people have never been moved by anyone save the poets"\(^64\), whilst Leon Degrelle, the Belgian fascist leader, called Hitler, Mussolini and Godreanu "poets of revolution"\(^65\). Hitler thought feeling decided more accurately than reason\(^66\), and James Drennan called fascism "an insurrection of feeling", as "the opposition between fascism and social democracy is the opposition between life and theory, man and intellect, between blood and paper."\(^67\)

Fascists considered manipulation of total power by an elite as the agency of national regeneration. Potentially, all members of the nation were equal but the elite were outstanding because of their service to the nation. This provided the rationale for totalitarianism, the system in which the yearning for leadership and authority crystallised into monolithic unity where no pluralism was tolerated and no sector of society was immune to the ultimate definition and control of the elite. As the distinction between the fascist movement, the state and society was ambiguous so the leaders would be a 'natural elite' drawn from all ranks of society. As Hitler declared: "No, my party comrades, we shall not discuss the growth of a new upper class. We shall create it, and there is only one way of creating it, battle."\(^68\) The 'leadership principle' as understood by fascists meant the unrestricted authority of every leader over his subordinates and the latter's unquestioning obedience replacing the democratic principles of parliamentary representation and shared responsibility.\(^69\) Furthermore, this
elitism was to be popular as fascists postulated the absolute identity between people and leadership which was substituted for the liberal dualism between state and society.  

All the French fascist movements had an authoritarian and intolerant tone as they emphasized the necessity of a disciplined unity which overrode class differences and political divisions. The "natural elite" for Lt. Col. Casimir Do La Rocque, the leader of the Croix de Feu, were simply the war veterans. Gottfried Feder spoke both of a community of the Folk and the rise of a new elite, but was ambiguous as to the distinction between the two. Finally, R. W. Darre took the notion of a "natural" biological elite to its extreme: "one cannot very well create 'aristocracy' without somehow subjecting it to the principles of breeding." The duty of the elite was to sweep aside the constitutional, procedural, and other obstacles to the instantaneous attainment of popular desires. The destruction of liberal institutions is a necessary means for protecting the nation and effecting the popular will as they are seen as in the grip of the "enemy". Plebiscitary democracy, or populism, was to liberate the nation from corruption and intervening institutions between the government and the society such as the legislature, the older political parties, and the courts. All these must be abandoned as they have been corrupted by the "money power" or other alien and non-popular influence. An authoritarian one party state disregarding a liberal constitution in direct contact with the popular will is regarded by fascists as necessary for liberating the people from the alien or other Manichean corrupting influence. Typical of this are the writings of Ezra Pound who thought constitutional democracy was "under orders from the usurocracy."
In its efforts to reconcile populism with elitism, fascism conferred upon the modern world a theory of government that was intolerant of all opposition - totalitarianism. Fascism was called totalitarian as it attempted to encompass the whole range of human activity within the State. It would penetrate every sector of life as it intended to create a new type of society and a new type of man. The individual was considered a function of group life. As Mussolini said: "the fascist view of life stresses the importance of the State and accepts the individual only insofar as his interests coincide with those of the State, which stands for the conscience and the universal will of man as an historical entity." The individual had no rights as in a democracy, for nations were living organic totalities which were an end in themselves unlike individuals, and which possess a hierarchy and articulation of their own.

Fascism extolled the value of the national collectivity as it was a vision of a coherent and united people and this was the reason for its emphasis on march pasts, parades and uniforms. It comprised a national liturgy appropriate to national self-representation. Politics and life must penetrate each other, and this means all aspects of life become politicised. Literature, art, architectural, and even the environment are seen as symbolic of political attitudes. The original and vital force of the people through the organisation of the State realises itself fully in the communal life of the nation. Activism was directed into destroying the existing order so that the eternal verity of the Volk or nation could triumph. Fascism would end class struggle, and inaugurate class cooperation. Indeed, wrote Marcel Deat, this was the very meaning of totalitarianism: "Totalitarianism is conciliation, a reconciliation." Pierre Drieu La Rochelle
defined liberty as: "the power a man receives from being bound to other men."\(^8^0\) Man's personal self-realisation can only be fulfilled through the group, and consequently he respects cohesion, discipline, and authority.

Fascism waged an implacable war against everything that tended to divide or differentiate, or which was associated with diversity or pluralism; Liberalism, democracy, parliamentarianism, multi-party systems. Unity was to find its expression in the quasi-sacred figure of the leader who embodied the spirit, will and virtues of the people. This entailed the primacy of political action. Private enterprise, for example, was only permissible if it co-incided with the national interest. The moral life of the individual was organised by the collectivity as the citizen was totally identified with the purposes of the State. Giovanni Gentile, for example, considered politics to be "pedagogy on a grand scale".\(^8^1\) By insisting on the identity of thought and action he excluded all criteria whereby political action could be criticised. It could not be called authoritarian or conservative as ideological unanimity was the end which coercion should serve. The masses were mere instruments animated by the "thought" of "a few guiding spirits - indeed one - the Duce."\(^8^2\)

The British Fascists declared that they were "not altogether constitutional".\(^8^3\) They disavowed identification with what they regarded as a corrupt party system and advocated unconstitutional defence of the government. Government, they thought, should be omnipotent in order that it could struggle against the omnipresent forces of degeneration. The Imperial Fascist League, renegades from the British Fascists, was admiringly described as "an expression of intolerance".\(^8^4\) They advocated an omnipotent
government whose deliberative assemblies would be merely advisory. Oswald Mosley, the leader of the British Union of Fascists, thought posterity would regard *as a curious and temporary aberration of the human mind that great nations should elect a Government to do a job, and should then elect an opposition to stop them from doing it.*

Fascist or totalitarian government is intolerant of minorities as unanimity is the ideal and government is the locus of action not of deliberation or compromise. The mass are regarded as ignorant and indecisive whilst the government should be strong and decisive. Toleration is regarded as fostering the degeneration of the nation. Plurality and autonomy should be overridden on behalf of popular welfare as freedom is a collective and not an individual achievement. In the Fascist State government will have complete liberty to act and crush dissension: "Power* is the monopoly of government.*

The popular revolutionary elite will concentrate power, if necessary, unconstitutionally, to control all social, political and economic activity. Total national regeneration can only be secured through unlimited authority, discipline and loyalty. As they regarded the natural tendency of liberal society to be one of dissolution they thought national salvation depended on the unlimited power of revolutionary *leaders.* Total unanimity was regarded as an indispensable condition for this salvation, consequently, fascist government: "will rout out every party in the land.*

The fascist movements realised those changes of the ideological spectrum that had been attempted before World War I by *national socialists*, *authoritarian socialists*, and *revolutionary conservatists*. Theirs was an ideological synthesis and recruitment from both the *left* and the *right*. They did not take party labels in parliamentary democracy to stand for serious differences of opinion. Both Hendrik de Man, President of the Belgian Workers'
Party, and Marcel Boat, socialist in the inter war years, welcomed the cessation of the parliamentary regime in 1940 as they thought it provided the indispensable condition for socialising the nation or nationalising socialism. Indeed, the two largest fascist movements that developed in France, Jacques Doriot's Parti Populaire Francaise and Marcel Boat's Rassemblement National Populaire, were both largely staffed by men disillusioned with the 'left'. The fascism of planning and modernism that sought efficiency and technical progress in the interest of the community was a legacy of their socialism.

In the ideology of fascism Marxism and liberal democracy are rejected for a modernised, national, and authoritarian socialism. State omnipotence required that parliamentarianism and the party system be abandoned for the militant regeneration of the nation. Many neo-socialists, like Oswald Mosley, had shifted ideologically from what they deprecated as democratic impotence to protect the nation from the international economic crises of the inter war years. The masses must be mobilised for a more compelling reality — the nation — all classes should co-operate as the opposition was no longer between the proletarian and the bourgeoisie, but the nation against those alien forces that have thwarted the popular will through their control of the political parties in a democracy, such forces as the Jews and international finance. According to Jose Streel opposition was between the "workers of all classes" and "banking capitalism or hyper-capitalism". Socialists must abandon their allegiance to the class struggle and militantly affirm total allegiance to the nation.

The national socialism that had been developing since the end of the preceding century had crystallised in the fascist movements.
with their objective of uniting the national and the social, incorporating both socialism and nationalism in one movement, merging the 'right' and the 'left'. Mussolini, for instance, 6 months after the Fasci di Combattimento was formed, indicated that it was:

"a little difficult to define fascists. They are not republicans, socialists, democrats, conservatives, nor nationalists. They represent a synthesis of all the negations and the affirmations, while they renounce all the parties, they are their fulfillment." 92

The fluid nature of fascist ideology is indicated by Mussolini's volte-face in 1922 when he placed fascism in the context of a world wide epochal reaction against democracy, first frankly espoused the reactionary tradition which nationalism had always admitted, and advocated the restoration of a more authoritarian government. 96 Fascist ideology is fluid, open ended, and frequently inconsistent if one analyses it for formal doctrinal content. Fascism 'eclectic functionalism' is revelatory of its appeal to all social groups and political tendencies in the nation as it combines and synthesises political extremes. Mussolini, after affirming allegiance to all political antinomies claimed that fascists are: "legalists and illegalists, according to the circumstances of the moment, the place and the environment." 97

Fascists claim to be an anti-party, both antithesis and synthesis of existing ideologies. Typically, Maurice Bardehno, a contemporary French fascist, claims that fascism is impossible to define outside the crises of democracy and the impotence of the party system. He claimed that it is: "the party of the nation in wrath." 98 Italian fascism was careers open to the talents, never free from ideological disunity because the numerous factions it encompassed were committed to different goals. 99 But it can be said of it what Peron said of his doctrine: "It is an ideological position, which is in the centre, on the right, or on the left according the specific
political circumstances. Hendrik de Man’s political career is typical of those whose disillusion with the party system leads to acquiescence with fascism. As he disavowed orthodox socialism he developed a sense of the necessity for a popular elite that would dominate an ‘authoritarian socialism’ which abandons democracy for the unity of the nation.

The classic case of this transition is that of the ‘revolutionary conservatives’ of the Weimar Republic in Germany who, on the extremities of conservatism, developed under the shadow of Germany’s defeat and her subsequent financial crisis. Some called themselves National Bolshevists. They were extreme ‘rightists’, or extreme ‘leftists’, or indeed both. Plauntive of the inefficacy of bourgeois values they developed a conservatism that was radical. This ‘movement’ was to challenge the compromise and deliberation of a multi-party system. Oswald Spengler, spoke of an “instinctive socialism” peculiar to Germany which is “Illiberal and anti-democratic” the representative of which was Frederick I, not Marx. He desired a ‘Caesarism’ that would be the nemesis of the civilization he mocked, and that “life would govern reason”. Ernst Junger, another of these ‘conservative revolutionaries’, opposed internationalism with nationalism, Pacifism with ‘heroic realism’, the middle class desire for security with the spirit of war and adventure which he believed was primary to life. What were traditionally regarded as the opposite extremes of the political spectrum became fused as the neo-conservative and neo-socialist ideas became thoroughly intertwined in National Socialism.
Wormer Sonbart transcended conservatism and labelled his ideal "German Socialism" in which discipline would extend "from a single central point systematically over the entire social life," imposing "obligatory norms." Othmar Spann's "conservatism" was also representative of this fascist fusion of political extremes. These "conservative revolutionaries" were explicitly elitist. Spengler rephrased Kant's categorical imperative thus: "Act as if the maxim you practice should become, by your will, a law for all." Their ideology, like that of the National Socialist, was so eclectic that they even adopted the liberal idea of democracy in personnel selection.

Hoeller van den Bruck was one of these "revolutionary conservatives" whose attempt to transmogrify conservatism spanned many decades before World War I until the rise of the fascist movements. He believed national destiny, like that of great leaders, unfolds through struggle and that the most vital and energetic nation has a right to dominate others. France and Britain had achieved "civilisation" and completed the possibility of their development whilst the Germans are a "young" people. The biological analogy achieves its purpose in that destiny is non-rational and can only be apprehended through instinct. He thought that the race had disintegrated and that only through the nation could its destiny be fulfilled. The political extremes should be fused in contemporary Germany as the social ideal will be realised through revolutionary means but bound by conservative principles. He regarded liberalism as the enemy. Life should be heroic and society authoritarian or "Caesarist." His main impact was to come in 1923, when mass disillusionment with the ideologies that constituted the political spectrum and the parties associated with them provided him with an opportunity to exploit the drift towards extremists nationalism, with his book Das Dritte Reich.
The chapter headings of the latter are very significant in terms of fascism, they are: 'Revolutionary'; 'Socialist'; 'Liberal'; 'Democratic'; 'Proletarian'; 'Reactionary'; 'Conservative'; 'The Third Reich.' Real revolution can only be that in which the German spirit can be embodied. It can only be made by conservatives. The ideal socialist is he who accepts the conservatives' judgment on the value of a close knit and powerful national life. Liberalism is dismissed as an agency of national degeneration. The only 'democracy' condoned is that consistent with national self-assertion. Ideological divisions should be overcome, and unanimity achieved, by the conciliation of all ideologies with a conservatism that draws from all the political extremes. Only conservatives, who can enlist the unanimous support of the whole nation, are able to resolve the social problem which derives from the relative power of the nation. The Germans are a 'proletarian nation.' National regeneration can only be realised by "The co-operation of the extreme Right and the extreme Left."

It is significant that this discussion on the motifs of fascism has been completed on the subject of the 'revolutionary conservatives' of Germany. They demonstrate the fact that even after World War I there were attempts to transform the meaning of a traditional ideology, in their case conservatism, into fascism by synthesising it with all political extremes in an extreme nationalism. It acquires further significance in relation to this thesis as this is precisely what Anthony Mario Ludovici was attempting to do in relation to English conservatism. The 'revolutionary conservatives' and Anthony Mario Ludovici, like the 'national socialists' and 'authoritarian socialists' before, and after, World War I, were fascists. True, some of the latter wrote before the term 'fascism' gained currency, or chose not to adopt the appellation 'fascist', when it did gain
currency, after World War I. Nonetheless, the motifs of their ideology are the same as those who did, after World War I, adopt the identity "fascist."

Although this thesis permits only a synopsis of generic fascist ideology I think the conclusions of this chapter accord with the abundant literature listed in the bibliography. It presents a paradigm of fascist ideology with which we can proceed to identify Ludovici's political convictions.
1. M. A. W. C. (The Evolution of Catholic Thought (Theology and Leo Meredith University at Westminster, London, 1959)).

2. G. C. (The Fundamental Theology of Catholic Thought (Theology and Leo Meredith University at Westminster, London, 1959)).

3. M. A. W. C. (The Evolution of Catholic Thought (Theology and Leo Meredith University at Westminster, London, 1959)).

4. M. A. W. C. (The Evolution of Catholic Thought (Theology and Leo Meredith University at Westminster, London, 1959)).

5. M. A. W. C. (The Evolution of Catholic Thought (Theology and Leo Meredith University at Westminster, London, 1959)).

6. M. A. W. C. (The Evolution of Catholic Thought (Theology and Leo Meredith University at Westminster, London, 1959)).

7. M. A. W. C. (The Evolution of Catholic Thought (Theology and Leo Meredith University at Westminster, London, 1959)).

8. M. A. W. C. (The Evolution of Catholic Thought (Theology and Leo Meredith University at Westminster, London, 1959)).

9. M. A. W. C. (The Evolution of Catholic Thought (Theology and Leo Meredith University at Westminster, London, 1959)).

10. M. A. W. C. (The Evolution of Catholic Thought (Theology and Leo Meredith University at Westminster, London, 1959)).

11. M. A. W. C. (The Evolution of Catholic Thought (Theology and Leo Meredith University at Westminster, London, 1959)).

12. M. A. W. C. (The Evolution of Catholic Thought (Theology and Leo Meredith University at Westminster, London, 1959)).

13. M. A. W. C. (The Evolution of Catholic Thought (Theology and Leo Meredith University at Westminster, London, 1959)).

14. M. A. W. C. (The Evolution of Catholic Thought (Theology and Leo Meredith University at Westminster, London, 1959)).

15. M. A. W. C. (The Evolution of Catholic Thought (Theology and Leo Meredith University at Westminster, London, 1959)).

16. M. A. W. C. (The Evolution of Catholic Thought (Theology and Leo Meredith University at Westminster, London, 1959)).

17. M. A. W. C. (The Evolution of Catholic Thought (Theology and Leo Meredith University at Westminster, London, 1959)).

18. M. A. W. C. (The Evolution of Catholic Thought (Theology and Leo Meredith University at Westminster, London, 1959)).

19. M. A. W. C. (The Evolution of Catholic Thought (Theology and Leo Meredith University at Westminster, London, 1959)).

20. M. A. W. C. (The Evolution of Catholic Thought (Theology and Leo Meredith University at Westminster, London, 1959)).


65. *The* **First** *Century* *After* **Christ**, *John* *Norris*, *1995*, p.89; quoted in *Deliverance* *Spiritually*, *Practical*.


67. *ACADEMY* *MORALITY*; quoted in *Christian* *Living*, *1940*, p.69.

68. *DELIVERANCE* *SPIRITUALLY*; quoted in *Christian* *Living*, *1940*, p.69.

69. *EDUCATION* *Morality*; quoted in *Christian* *Living*, *1940*, p.69.

70. *The* **First** *Century* *After* **Christ**, *John* *Norris*, *1995*, p.89.

71. *The* **First** *Century* *After* **Christ**, *John* *Norris*, *1995*, p.89.

72. *The* **First** *Century* *After* **Christ**, *John* *Norris*, *1995*, p.89.

73. *The* **First** *Century* *After* **Christ**, *John* *Norris*, *1995*, p.89.

74. *The* **First** *Century* *After* **Christ**, *John* *Norris*, *1995*, p.89.

75. *The* **First** *Century* *After* **Christ**, *John* *Norris*, *1995*, p.89.

76. *The* **First** *Century* *After* **Christ**, *John* *Norris*, *1995*, p.89.

77. *The* **First** *Century* *After* **Christ**, *John* *Norris*, *1995*, p.89.


105. In the same issue, A. Von Miquelkow, "Már a vendégszert" (Magyar Vendégszert, 1923), p.64.


107. E. Leo, "Vágt, kereszmény és a kollégiumi csoport: a főiskolai addigelnem és menedzseri kapcsolat" (Kereszmény, 1923).


112. Etc., 1923.
Generic conservatism is generally regarded as the belief which deniers that man's reason and will is sufficiently powerful to transform human nature and society according to some ideal of perfection. As an ideology in which imperfection is presented as constitutive of the human condition it is opposed to any arguments justifying attempts to effect total or radical change. Thus, its adherents are committed to a limited style of politics\(^1\). Accepting this central belief, in the main, conservatives regard existing society as the best of all possible worlds and themselves as its natural custodians\(^2\). Conservatism is, according to one commentator, "the rationalisation of existing institutions in terms of history, God, nature and man."\(^3\)

As the content of conservative ideology is generally regarded as peculiar to the time and place of its origins\(^4\) I shall concentrate on the context of modern British conservatism. I would suggest that the generic concerns of this conservatism are present in the beliefs that inequality is natural or ineliminable, and that class and structural differentiated are requisite for both national cohesion and economic success. Indeed, Robert Eccleshall is of the opinion that this is the leitmotiv that has underpinned the diversity of modern British conservative thought. It is present in all Conservative policy discussions in contemporary British politics\(^5\). It has persisted throughout their advocacy of laissez-faire in the early part of the period; their subsequent acceptance of a State regulated economy and extension of the public sector; finally, and quite recently, their revived belief in laissez-faire through their adoption of monetarism and new misgivings about the
State as an enterprise and welfare association. This judgement is reinforced by Nigel Harris's analysis of modern British conservatism which, although the period it surveys preceded the recent trend towards the re-adoption of laissez-faire by British conservatives, same to the same conclusion as Robert Holleshall's latest survey. He affirms, for the period which he studied, that the fundamental belief in inequality provided coherence to an otherwise diverse history of successive policy and ideological change by the Conservative Party as British society changed from one dominated by a market economy to one in which the public sector was large, and the bureaucracies associated with oligopolistic enterprises are predominant. Further studies have concluded that the justification of the stratification of society is the conservative's central concern, or that the Conservative Party identifies itself with the existing class structure. Organicism, scepticism, traditionalism, and either religious or secular grounds for believing in man's imperfection are fundamental to the ethos of conservatism. One conservative wrote that the "upper classes" have been selected for their ability to govern as: "heredity is no Tory invention but a scientific fact, a class system, ... becomes at bottom a moral and real necessity." 

Cohering with their notions of imperfection and their belief that inequality is ineliminable is the scepticism of modern conservatism. They agree with Hume in seeing no source of redemption in reason. Harold Begbie wrote of conservatism: "It is of all schools of political thought in the world the most practical. It has no liking for pedants; it is contemptuous of cranks; and it will have no truck with political emotionalists." This leads to the conservative contention that politics ought to be the province of those privileged by experience. The same convictions can be
identified in the writings of Ludovici. He believed that both
nature and human nature is governed by eternal laws that nobody
could change. He believed that mankind is by nature conservative through its
“love of safety, ... tendency to indolence, and ... preference
for the known before the unknown.” Only the “genial innovator,
or the lunatic”, would deny this truth. He regretted that politics
had been relegated to irresponsible opportunists. Ludovici despised
those politicians who could procure their return to Parliament by
releasing their central political organisations of any expenses
in their election, and by using their own means to nurse the
constituency which they select. He claimed to have heard it said
by one prominent politician that he could undertake with ten thousand
pounds to win any constituency in the kingdom. Ludovici called this
an “abuse” of the Constitution: “that is leading more and more to
the total discredit of Parliamentary institutions.” Ludovici
thought to be a conservative meant to entertain no notions about
the alleged radical goodness of human nature: “He is not prone
to imagine utopias or ideal states, which, in order to be successful,
must be maintained and supported by angels of virtue and self-effacement.”
He believed the recent political history of Europe afforded
abundant proof of the neglect of this conservative principle.
Mere “hawkers of ideas”, journalists not statesmen, pamphleteers
not politicians had risen to power: Lenin, Trotsky, and Mussolini.
We should not look gladly upon “journalists” who have acceded to
power for they appeal to popular tastes, which spells opportunism
and irresponsibility. And the example afforded by these successful
“journalists” statesmen ought to warn the politician of the future
against “so-called men of action.” Ludovici believed that it
is the role of the Conservative Party to oppose such dangerous
subversives as it is among the chief duties of the Conservative
Party to preserve the Constitution in Church and State. He was
mortified that the House of Lords, which Englishmen regarded as
"part of the bedrock of their Constitution", had been severely curtailed by the Parliament Act of 1911. Through the latter both the Constitution and Parliamentary government had been imperilled.

Ludovici discredited rabid anti-Semitism as a device of agitators to provoke united action and common feeling against a common enemy. It pointed to a unique cause of all existing suffering, oppression, exploitation and injustice, without implicating the national himself. He called anti-Semitism "despicable" as when purely English people alone were operating in England there was chronic exploitation of the weak and defenceless. Not more than seventy years after the expulsion of the Jews in 1290, a priest, John Ball, was driven to the leadership of an open revolt among the peasants as a result of the deplorable hardships they had to endure, began preaching a sort of communism which was inspired less by contemplation and thought than by the spectacle of the sorrow and want about him. Ludovici derived from this, and other instances of native oppression, two conclusions:

..First, that in the period 1290 to 1656 there was in the land a spirit persistently trying to break loose, which for lack of a more popular term I have called individualistic and a social, the prevalence of which, despite much legislation calculated to suppress it, constantly impeded the establishment of the mutuality essential to a sound culture; and secondly, that this spirit increased rather than decreased as time went on (his italics).

Ludovici thought that it was not without significance that, at the very end of the 365 years of the absence of the Jews in England, that is, in the fifth decade of the seventeenth century, Thomas Hobbes, shaping his cosmogony from the world about him, as Darwin was later to do with his notion of the "struggle for existence", arrived at the memorable conclusion that the natural
state of man was a bellum contra omnes. As he believed exploitation of the English throughout the Industrial Revolution and after, was not due to the Jews, anti-Semitism was devoid of reason. Ludovici regarded anti-Semitism as one aspect of man's native wickedness. He believed man's imperfections could not be eradicated by being conjoined with superior intelligence, education, or material resources. Those who proclaim the contrary, "as Julien Benda has ably shown [in his anti-fascist The Betrayal of the Intellectuals], betrayors rather than saviours of their generation".

Perhaps the most thorough study of modern British conservatism has identified two fundamental strands in the fabric of its ideas, these two strands are collectivism and libertarianism. The former strand is associated with: "humanitarianism; noblesse oblige; piecemeal concession; radicalism; and the reaction to economic crisis".

The advocates of the libertarian strand form two groups: "the adherents of a more or less orthodox laissez faire and free trade doctrine; and the supporters of the modified position which draws a firm distinction between social and economic intervention, the former being permissable, and the latter generally is not". The following discussion of the policy of modern British conservatism constitutes a modification of Greenleaf's thesis as I synthesise it with other analyses of modern British conservatism, and my study of the thought of individual conservatives. Nevertheless, the outline of this discussion will conform, in part, to a brief study of those conservatives that Greenleaf nominates as the conservatives whose thought is the most felicitous expression of modern British conservatism.

Conservative thinkers whose policy exemplifies the libertarian strand during the latter days of the nineteenth century conceived their libertarian conservatism as a defence against the rise of socialism which, they believed, represented a threat to liberty. Conservatives
adopted what had been previously regarded as liberal values. This trend was to culminate in the systematic anti-socialist position of W.H. Mallock.

James Fitzjohn Stephenson conservatism is significant in the transition by conservatives to the adoption of liberal values. He selectively incorporated utilitarianism into conservatism in his advocacy of progress and was concerned, like liberals, with efficient government and administration. However, there remained within his thought anti-democratic strands, like the assumption that power preceded liberty in that progress was in many instances the outcome of the force of a minority applied to the conduct of an ignorant and inert mass.33

Further evidence for the claim that conservatives adopted liberal values correlative with the rise of socialism is afforded by Michael Pint-Duschinsky’s recent study of Lord Salisbury’s political thought which concluded that the ultimate reference for the latter’s political thought were Benthamite principles.34 Lord Salisbury believed that such moral and material improvement as was possible depended on the individual’s free and rational exercise of his faculties. All that the statesman could afford to the poor man was to shape matters that the greatest possible liberty prevailed under the law to facilitate progress.35

From the latter decades of the nineteenth century conservatives adopted liberal values as a reaction to the extension of the suffrage and socialism which they believed constituted a threat to the society which they sought to conserve. Two prominent conservatives, Henry Sumner Maine and W.E.H. Lecky respectively, thought that the extension of the suffrage would either occasion tyranny by the bureaucracies of
parties whose constituents are the property-less; or "level down quite as much as it levels up." Democracy would be the nemesis of liberty; as political equality would be the first step to "real equality" which it is wholly impossible to establish without "destroying liberty".

Lord Hugh Cecil maintained that charity, on a compulsory basis was inconsistent with the munificent ethic of Christianity as responsible agents could only realise their capacity for goodness in a system that promoted charity on a voluntary basis. Thus, conservatives could only sustain their identity as authentic Christians in a competitive system which Lord Hugh Cecil believed promoted beneficence.

The Liberty and Property Defense League, founded in 1882, propagated a doctrine which was representative of this trend for conservatism to become associated with liberal values. Though the major source of its doctrine was Herbert Spencer by the turn of the century it was regarded as an association for the propagation of conservatism. It harmonised the doctrines of liberty, evolution, natural selection, science, efficiency, and progress. One of its ideologues wrote:

"We should be very careful, lest in combating poverty by the aid of authority, we fall into slavery. When we invoke the aid of authority to combat evils other than poverty, we should beware lest we play into the hands of those who would involve us in slavery in their mistaken efforts to put an end to poverty."

Perhaps the most sustained and coherent distaste of collectivism to come from a conservative was that of the prolific W.H.Mallock. He was both a vigorous pamphleteer of the Liberty and Property Defense League and wrote profusely for the London Municipal Society.
V.H. Mallock systematically opposed socialism by a "scientific", economic justification, theoretical and statistical, of a capitalist elite, stressing that elite is efficiency in producing well being for all and hence social stability. The modern development of knowledge, of industrial methods and machinery, Mallock wrote, only arose from the operation of oligarchy or, in other words, from the exercise of exceptional ability by great individuals. He wrote that no community can become or remain civilised which does not reward those great men adequately. His conviction was that society was essentially atomistic, spontaneously generating competition and individual achievement, rather than naturally fostering cooperation like the relations of reciprocity and dependency of the members of an organism. Mallock completed his defence of conservatism against socialism by elaborating those premises based on utilitarian psychology, the individualist nature of society, and the primary importance of competition. The presence of wealth within society, for Mallock, was like a developing solution passing over a negative which reveals inequalities but does not cause them. He contradicted the Marxist axiom that capital is fossilised labour by asserting that it is rather, fossilised business ability. However, these liberal values were combined with thought of a more pessimistic and authoritarian kind. After being influenced by Robert Michels, Mallock argued that political democracy was impossible without the cooperation of oligarchy.

There is abundant evidence that the libertarian conservatism of the preceding thinkers was representative of a trend for liberal values to be successfully combined with conservatism, as it is a conservative standpoint that has been sustained. Even during the depths of the economic depression of the inter-war years, when
confidence in laissez-faire was at its nadir, J.F.C. Hearnshaw maintained that adherence to the conviction that self-help afforded the only hope for popular welfare constituted the criterion of authentic conservatism. And Aubrey Jones defined conservatism as the "doctrine of freedom" in the aftermath of World War II when popular acclamation of the notion of a Welfare State and managed economy viero widespread.

Indeed, in the post-war era libertarian conservaitism has flowed rather than ebbed as many conservatives believed World War II had discredited totalitarianism. A "neo-liberal" school has developed among conservatives which maintains that political and economic liberty are indivisible because economic and political spheres are inter-related.

The two most important and systematic advocates of the libertarian strand of modern British conservatism in the post-war era have been Michael Oakeshott and Enoch Powell. The latter's advocacy of libertarian conservatism is exemplified by his belief that government intervention should be restricted to non-economic fields like defence, health, and education, as wholly autonomous economic processes are the condition for progress. His conviction that the terms 'free economy' and 'free society' are inter-changeable is typical of the "neo-liberals".

The presence of liberal values within Michael Oakeshott's conservatism is so salient that he has been called a "libertarian Whig". His libertarian conservatism is found at its most felicitous in his essay "On the Character of a Modern European State." He contrasts two forms of associations: That of 'societas' in which men are related in terms of legality and not a common substantive purpose; and
"universitas" in which men recognise themselves to be engaged upon the joint enterprise of seeking some common want. If a state is understood in terms of the latter, which Oakeshott thinks it commonly and mistakenly is, government may be said to be "teleocratic".\textsuperscript{54} He evaluates the latter as an "inherently compulsory association" in which: "Each is the property of the association, an item of its capital resources."\textsuperscript{55}

The libertarian conservatism of Oakeshott and Powell is representative of a fair consensus among modern British conservatives. Timothy Raison reckons that Conservatives should put more emphasis on competition, which he believed the only source of social harmony and progress.\textsuperscript{56} This has been reiterated by David Howell.\textsuperscript{57}

Rhodes Boyson has implored his fellow Conservatives that the cause of Britain's crisis is that of an overbearing government.\textsuperscript{58} Finally, Lord Hailsham, another contemporary British Conservative, has contrasted "collective dictatorship", which he believes the paradoxical effect of modern democracies, with his ideal of limited government, the accompaniment of a society in which power is diffused. For the promotion of this liberal ideal: "Conservatives... who were the natural enemies of the liberals in the nineteenth century, are, or rather should be, their natural allies in the twentieth."\textsuperscript{59}

The progenitor of the collectivist strand of modern British conservatism and its most significant exponent was Benjamin Disraeli. As the leader of "Young England", Disraeli advocated a popular and socially responsible Toryism appealing to the masses through paternalistic reform, though he never crystallised this inaction.\textsuperscript{60} He identified the Tory Party as the national and democratic party.\textsuperscript{61}
Lord Randolph Churchill developed the collectivists strand of modern British conservatism that Disraeli had initiated. Moreover, Curzon's disparagement of the "war of classes" and his tirades against what he regarded as the mercenary exaltation or tyrannical coercion of the working classes by capitalists was representative of the paternalism that had become established as an authentic conservative standpoint by the latter decades of the nineteenth century.

Rather than provide a detailed narrative of those conservatives whose prescriptions afford a felicitous expression of the collectivist strand of modern British conservatism I think the little space that this thesis permits on Ludovic's conservative contemporaries is better expended on those conservatives who expressed admiration for fascism. This digression is appropriate to this context because the British conservatives that did express admiration for fascism were, like Ludovic, those whose conservatism is located in the collectivists strand. Pierce Loftus, whose conservatism is representative of the latter, complained that after Sadler, Oastler, and their friends had passed away, Toryism had become associated with plutocrats whom, he thought, had abnegated the duties that possession of wealth should entail. Like a few others whose conservatism was in the collectivist strand during the inter-war years, he was to make his brand of conservatism look like fascism. He wrote that Toryism appealed "to the subconscious rather than the conscious" and that the "Vocational Senators" and "Meritocracy of Talent" of a corporate state, eschewing a multi-party system is the organisation of society most conducive to popular welfare.
Among British conservatives of the inter-war years, Christopher Dawson's conservatism and that of T.S. Eliot were, perhaps, the most contiguous to fascism. T.S. Eliot lamented the evanescence of what he called 'organic society' and its 'organic relationships' between people as society, he thought, had deteriorated in its inward and outward manifestations. He attributed this to what he called the age of free exploitation and liberalism, that he hoped had passed. T.S. Eliot believed that only in a society that possessed the ordered articulation of classicism, in contrast to the 'waste land' of contemporary society, could his strictly classical ideal in literature and the arts be attained - the pre-condition for a flourishing and integrated culture. He thought the ideologies of totalitarian states were incompatible with his values, but their practices "might be more or less tolerable" for his ideal of an integrated culture. Indeed, he wrote:

"It is a part of my thesis that the culture of the individual is dependent upon the culture of a group or class, and that the culture of the group or class is dependent upon the culture of the whole society to which that group or class belongs."

Nevertheless, T.S. Eliot did not advocate a uniform culture which is one of his many conservative qualifications to his admiration for fascism. Rather, culture should be stratified and the creation of hereditary co-operative classes integrated by "a continuous gradation of cultural levels", with corresponding gradations of power.

Christopher Dawson hoped that fascism was the nemesis of laissez-faire. He deprecated the liberal regime which it succeeded, for its immorality, irresponsibility, and individualism. If totalitarian practices for creating unanimity were applied to a
revived Christianity man's salvation could be realised:

Better perhaps that the State should organise our culture than that it should be left to the mercenary leadership of the popular press and the financial exploitation of its intellectual and moral weaknesses.  

He desired a controlled and authoritarian direction of culture.  

As he thought the totalitarian regimes offered man a deeper spiritual life they were preferable to a constitutional democracy.  

Walter Elliot's assertion that "Toryism is not and cannot be a creed of logic", and his assimilation of Bergson's notion of the 'life force' into his conservatism made it suspiciously resemble fascism. He wrote that the dry bones of organisation which the corporate state entailed had come together in the flesh of the Italian Fascist movement.  

It might be contended that these virtual panegyrics of fascism by conservatives during the inter-war years should be excused as contemporaneously fascism had a different meaning. This is plausible for the nineteen twenties when even the special correspondent to the Daily Mail regarded Mussolini's Italy as Europe's saviour from bolshevism. However, it is implausible for the subsequent decade.  

Furthermore, the collectivist strand of modern British conservatism was in some cases reconciled with the advocacy of a corporate state that is, the unification of what had been self-governing industries by a national committee representing them and other interests, including the State. They were intrigued by corporatism as a model of national unity although they were repelled by aspects of fascist
politics which had accompanied it. They wanted a form of political organisation that would establish order and hierarchy in the national life, not just in the economy. However, they saw no need for a fascist party or movement, or for a campaign to destroy an internal enemy. They believed that neither the advocacy nor the implementation of corporatist organisation necessitated fascist disregard of the established law and constitution.

Both Sir Arthur Salter, a former high ranking civil servant, and Hugh Sellon, an aspiring Conservative politician, welcomed what they regarded as the end of laissez-faire and advocated extensive planning. Lord Eustace Percy, who had been Conservative Minister for Education between 1924 and 1929, claimed that the significance of the revolutions in Italy and Germany resided in their being the revolt of men who had rebelled against the sham equality of both democracy and socialism. Fascists had recreated those conditions, amongst their fellow nationals, which satisfied man's primal yearning for authority and equality. He suggested that fascist or totalitarian government afforded many examples, in which the principles of authority and equality had been realised, on which Conservative politicians should model the government of Britain. Subsequently, he wrote that:

"in days of crisis... Tory principles sanction and indeed require, an exercise of leadership and compulsory authority more far reaching than the principles of any other school of thought."

Roy Glenday, economic advisor to the Federation of British Industries, outlined a system of government in which "the mass would have its leader; the leader would act on his own responsibility. The dictatorship would have a popular foundation." He advocated
a new form of communal life in which the suppression of individualism would be a necessary phase. In 1935 Leo Amery, in a book sympathetic to Mussolini and Fascist Italy, reckoned that Britain must reconcile herself to a world that was receding from laissez-faire and becoming increasingly characterised by isolated and controlled national economies.

Even Sir Winston Churchill, in the Romanee Lecture of 1930, doubted if institutions based on adult suffrage could reach the right decisions upon the intricate propositions of modern business and finance, which government was increasingly concerned with.

However, I am not claiming that the conservatives who expressed admiration for fascism in the inter-war years, or, those who advocated corporatism, are fascists. But, that their conservatism is located in the collectivist strand of modern British conservatism. Furthermore, this does not mean that all collectivist conservatives in the inter-war years either expressed admiration for fascism, or advocated corporatism. Harold Macmillan, whose conservatism has been one of the most significant contributions to the collectivist strand of modern British conservatism, claimed in 1927, with other Conservatives that the Conservative Party must increasingly be identified with policies of collectivism, for both electoral and governmental success, as the epoch of laissez-faire had passed. By 1933 he had wholly accepted the idea of extensive government planning as a pre-requisite for national economic success. A fundamental axiom of his conservatism was: "the collective responsibility of all citizens of a society to each citizen individually." Furthermore, he operated among a group who from the nineteen twenties were known as the "Young Conservatives", the more prominent members of which were Duff Cooper, Anthony Eden, Noel Skelton, Oliver Stanley, Rob Hudson, Robert Boothby, and later Terence O'Connor. Their collectivism
fructified in the Industrial Charter of 1947. 95

Indeed, the collectivist strand has been especially evident in the post-war era with the acceptance by conservatives of expanded government activity and the Welfare State. In 1947, David Clark wrote that the government should set the objectives and the standards of industrial activity96 whilst, in 1948, Bernard Braino thought Conservative policies should match the needs and aspirations of the people.97 Perhaps the most significant contribution to the collectivist strand in the post-war era has been that of R. A. B. Butler, with his concern that: “the need in our modern democracy is to associate the Tory with progressive and humane concerns”98

Although this thesis does not permit a thorough investigation of the collectivist and libertarian strands of modern British conservatism I think it worth mentioning that Joseph Chamberlain, with his perception that political power had shifted to the working classes provided impetus to the collectivist strand. A similar impetus was afforded to the libertarian strand during the inter-war years with the ailing fortunes of the Liberal Party and the defection of many of its supporters, including Ernest Benn, into the ranks of the Conservative Party.

This dichotomy of modern British Conservatism into collectivism and libertarianism has been similarly recognised by Samuel Beer,99 Harvey Glickman 100, and Sir Ernest Barker 101. Unlike a recent study 102 I would locate Ludovici’s conservatism within the collectivist strand of this dichotomy. In his A Defence of Aristocracy, a text-book for Tories, Ludovici tells us that the legislature tolerated “that laziest, stupidest, and cruellest of all principles, laissez-faire”, unlike the wise check it had received in earlier Tudor and
Stuart times. He submitted that it was on the battlefields of Edge Hill, Marston Moor and Naseby that trade first advanced in open hostility against tradition, quantity against quality, capitalistic industry against agriculture and the old industry of the guilds, vulgarity against trade, machinery against craftsmanship. All contemporary ugliness and vulgarity were "baptised Puritan and Non-conformist in the blood of the cavaliers sacrificed on the battlefield of the Grand Rebellion." Even the reforms that Shaftesbury secured were terribly belated. Thousands were maimed, crippled and killed before the evils which he discovered were suppressed the old conscience-stiller which Darwin and his school flung to the conscience-striekon, by telling them that all the aching misery and the cruel struggle led invariably to the survival of the fittest, should cease and no longer be believed. Charles I did not fight for despotism but for the welfare of the people. He opposed the fighters for parliamentary supremacy because it was:

...simply coveted for the liberty which it gave to those in power to indulge their lusts of private gain and private greed, unfettered by a ruler who, while standing apart from all factions, could rule for the benefit of all.

Correlated with the above was the development of mechanical science, with its contrivances of all kinds calculated to increase the rapidity of production without concerning itself in any way with the character of the workmen who were to operate these machines. The Long Parliament was not an assembly of decent men, but a pack of mercenaries. It represented the ruthless force of rapacious vulgarity and trade. The anomaly of the Grand Rebellion is that it was a fight against the poorer people and the King, for the "liberties" of the people. For Ludovici the Industrial Revolution
one race of its own members. He attributed part of the blame for its occurrence on the English nobility whose lack of public spiritedness contributed to rather than discouraged it. Only Charles I, the whole of his government and lieutenants, were inspired by the sacred watch word of public spiritedness: "Respect the Burden." The dignity of wealth and the social duties of property had repeatedly been desecrated by generations of plutocrats since the Grand Rebellion. Ludovici believed Viscount Bolingbroke would have confirmed his contention that: "the ruler is essentially a protector, and only where men see or exercise superiority do they always see and experience protection. Superior power is and always has been the shelter of the weak." Aristocracies who imagine that they can rule hedonistically and egotistically without the consent of the people are bound to fail and be swept away. Only Charles I satisfied Ludovici's aristocratic ideal by his insight, dauntless courage, fearless and desperate sense of duty to the people.

If I may digress, Ludovici's predilection for aristocracy is consistent with his lineage. His ancestry, as the name implies, were of Italian origin from Bologna. Under Pope Gregory XV (who was Alexander Ludovisi) his family was ennobled, and attained to great power as members of the Venetian nobility. This line continued until it became extinct in the person of Ludovici, Prince of Piombino, General of the Fleet of Galleys of the Kingdom of Naples, who left an only daughter, Princess of Piombino, who married Ludovisi of Rome. Then the line proceeds.

The original coat of arms (Bologna) is a shield with alternate stripes of red and gold, which becomes the top or chief of those of Rome.
That of the new Ludovici of Piccibone is the second quartering, with the Lion of Venice as the chief and the motto broken below. The significance of the broken wheel is unknown. The third quartering, a white eagle, is a coat of augmentation granted for some personal service. The fourth quartering is the same as the first, repeated for the sake of symmetry.120

In his A Defense of Conservatism, Ludovici claims that for five hundred years the English people had looked to their gentlemen to lead and to defend their liberties.121 He quoted Disraeli to indicate their mutual belief that:

"The proper leaders of England are the gentlemen of England. If they are not the leaders of the people I do not see why they should be gentlemen. Yes, it is because the gentlemen of England have been negligent of their duties and unmindful of their station that the system of professional agitation, so ruinous to the best interests of the country, has arisen in England."122

So effectively did Charles I bind the populace to the cause of monarchy that his successors on the throne were able to indulge in the worst abuses without bringing monarchy into discredit.123 He was the staunch defender of the qualitative values that had been the paramount preoccupation of the Middle Ages. Workmen and tradesmen combined to maintain a standard of quality in the work or goods they produced and purveyed. The guilds which were the outcome of these combinations, punished breaches of technical conscientiousness, or of fair-dealing with severity. The craft guildsmen of the Middle Ages insisted on maintaining quality for the honour of their guild124, and their system of regulations was "intended to check fraud and maintain the corporate good name of their craft."125 Charles I, whom Ludovici thought was the first
great Tory, strove to secure the welfare of the people throughout his reign. This aim has characterised the best conservatives down to Disraeli who maintained: "Power has only one duty; to secure the welfare of the people." For Ludovici, the conservative should believe in private property, but not private property divorced from responsibility. Ludovici censured Conservatives for their tendency, during the preceding 50 years, to identify themselves with capitalists and co-operate with Liberals. He conceived it as one of his political tasks to correct their deviation. Conservatives should follow the lead of the greatest conservative, Charles I, who secured the personal freedom and happiness of the people by protecting them from the rapacity of their employers in trade and manufacturing, but also against the oppression of the mighty and the great. In this paternalism Charles I revealed the only attitude which constitutes the means for preserving the nation's identity.

The Tories should have kept to their public-spirited tradition, of which Charles I was the epitome, and ensured the welfare of the working classes. Ludovici commended the factory measures of 1874, 1878, 1891, 1895, and 1901, which all tended to improve the condition of the worker, and to protect his life and limb. But, he castigated the Conservative Party as these measures were belated and mainly inspired by private individuals. The only redeeming feature was the presence of two Tories, Michael Thomas Sadler and Lord Ashley, among the pioneer agitators for factory reform.

The only important treatises on conservatism that Ludovici thought Englishmen were responsible for, are those of Bolingbroke and Disraeli. The line of cleavage in English politics is between the Tories plus the people on the one hand, and the Liberals plus the manufacturers, the big traders, and the exploiters of the people on the other. Therefore, Winston Churchill's claim at
The time of the General Strike that society is divided into those who stand for capital and those who stand for socialism, was inaccurate:

...particularly, as when he announced it, he drew the unjustifiable conclusion that the political fight of the future would be between a coalition of Conservatives and Liberals on the one hand, and Labour on the other.\textsuperscript{132}

Indeed, the line of cleavage in English politics could not, according to Ludovici, lie between capitalism and socialism:

...It lies between the Tories plus the people on the one hand, and the Liberals and Socialists of all classes plus the exploiters of Labour on the other, for that Socialists are the exploiters of the people, whatever they may say to the contrary is clearly to be read from their doctrine. They simply stand for a more machine-like organisation of the industrial community. They rob the people not only of their belongings but also of their character.\textsuperscript{133}

We are told that Lord Firle, an aristocratic hero in \textit{What Woman Wishes}, held Disraelian beliefs. He thought his brothers' actions, Rupert had gone to America and Henry to China, and their refusal to enter politics, were unpatriotic and a selfish desertion of the Conservative Party.\textsuperscript{134} After hearing A. H. Landrassay's speech to the 1900 Club, Lord Firle proclaimed: "It's the best thing I've heard since, as a boy, I listened to Disraeli discussing the Compensation for Disturbance Bill".\textsuperscript{135} Again, this locates Ludovici's ideal of conservatism in the Disraelian tradition.
Ludovici's collectivist conservatism is evident in his notion that private property should always be associated with duty and responsibility. He praised the ancient Greeks for their reluctance to grant or admit absolute individual ownership as readily as the Romans did. The compulsory readjustment of wealth and property in ancient Greece, unlike the Agrarian Laws of the Gracchi, were successfully maintained. There were innumerable public services which the wealthy were called upon and expected to perform. Although wealthy Romans also performed public services, they were more voluntary than those of the Greeks and prompted by ostentation. Ludovici attributed this to the absence of Aristotle's "balanced view" in Rome. Aristotle, in his Politics, defends private ownership as being economically superior because all men regard more what is their own; as being a source of pleasure; and as being more conducive to the development of character. However, he insists repeatedly on the desirability of blending private with communal ownership. Ludovici accepted Aristotle's position and turned to history to vindicate his collectivist notion of property as it will: "at least enable us to see the different institutions of civilised mankind in the process of working, and to judge of their viability and worth by the extent of their endurance." After the return of the Jewish exiles from their captivity in Babylon in the sixth century BC, and their rebuilding of the Temple, it was found that the community they formed in Judah developed all the injustices and symptoms of oppression that Ludovici believed inseparable from uncontrolled conditions of wealth. It was left to Nehemiah to forbid usury and effect a re-distribution of property confiscated for debts. The speed with which similar evils called forth similar remedies, Ludovici believed, is shown by the fact that not later than the fifth
century BC in China, about a century after the introduction of money, and therefore of the means of accumulating wealth, the Chinese were already recommending the control of capital.

Ancient legislatures such as Solon, Pericles, Lycurgus, and Agis, had recourse to re-distribution to try to avert catastrophe. Throughout the history of Athens we are constantly reminded of the conditional nature of the original proprietary rights and of the sound prejudice against excessive accumulation, by the innumerable services imposed upon and expected of the rich. The Athenian democracy financed its administration from exactions from the wealthy and also tried to prevent gross accumulation of property in private hands.

The development in Rome was slightly different, according to Ludovici. The history of Rome reveals a steady encroachment of absolute private ownership upon conditional ownership, or ownership bound up with duties and obligations, with a consequent accumulation of large fortunes in the hands of a few, and all the resulting evils of such a condition. Although the bulk of the ultimate private owners of the land had either descended, or had bought their land, from the Possessores (men who had only conditional or usufructuary rights granted by the community as a whole) when the two Gracchi attempted by their Agrarian Laws, to effect a re-distribution of land, these mere possessores, who had no right of private ownership in the land, protested as if Tiberius and Caius were perpetuating an act of robbery. The reforms attempted by these brothers came to nothing, and by 111 BC nearly all the land, which had been public property, had passed into private hands. Rome, after 167 BC was able to abolish the tributum civium Romanorum and gradually to complete the conversion.
of conditional or communal, into private land tenure, without causing an insurrection among its despoiled and impoverished citizens, whom it fed and amused gratuitously. Only a small re-distributions of land occurred under Caesar, NerVA and Septimius Severus, while the last remains of cultivated public lands in Italy were sold to be given away by the Flavian Emperors.

Likewise, England, thanks to the enormous development of her industries and wealth, began to be able, after the sixteenth century, to support a huge and increasing population of dispossessed people without too much material hardship, or, at any rate, without enough of it to cause an upheaval. With the decay of feudalism, the system of responsible proprietary rights, which received so important an impetus from Henry VIII and has lasted to the present day, was firmly resisted by Elizabeth and Charles I each of whom took firm steps to control capital, to prevent it accumulating in a few hands, and to impose upon the new, independent rich, certain duties towards the community. Ludovici believed Charles I had sacrificed his head in the prosecution of these collectivist aims. However, the party in favour of laissez-faire won the day:

...with rapid strides, the foundations of the present capitalistic system were completed, and in the few years that separated the Long Parliament struggle with Charles I for a free hand, and the passing of one or two statutes in Charles II's reign, which extended the capitalists policy to the land, the new era was successfully launched.

Ludovici concludes from his survey of the history of proprietary rights that great civilisations have without exception been observers of the right of private property. But, that:

"everywhere this right has been to some extent limited,
particularly in regard to the land. He believed that capitalism or the irresponsible administration of wealth combined with large accumulations of it in a few hands, when accompanied with a vast multitude of disinherited or destitute people, led to recurrent abuses and errors.

Charles I and his supporters fell, and he ultimately died in the struggle with the factions who were ultimately responsible for laissez-faire. Though Charles I died as a self-professed "martyr of the people", those of his prominent and influential supporters who survived him, attempted the continuation of his beneficent policies, and in so doing became known as the party associated with the Crown: "Thus began the Tory tradition of supporting the Crown and championing the popular cause."

Indeed, Ludovici proclaimed, can we wonder at the anger of venal shopkeepers, merchants and tradesman, and the more unscrupulous among the governing classes, when all the measures of Charles I's patriarchal rule are reviewed - his opposition to the rapacious lords and the country gentry, his intolerance of the theft of the Church and poor funds by provincial magnates, his firm resolve to sustain the spirit of the working masses against those who wished to depress and oppress them, and his determination to administer justice irrespective of rank and power: "For it was persons of the highest quality who were daily cited to the High Commission Court 'for incontinence', or some other misdemeanour in their lives."

Mr. Thomas Sefton-Smith, in Poet's Trumpeter, finally succeeds in the commercialised literary world after a life of obscurity. He soon becomes negligent of his duties to his family and domestic servant, Mary Barker. One night, when stricken with worry about
his neglect of Mary Barker, he accidentally disturbs an oil lamp and perishes amidst his unpublished poetry.\textsuperscript{149} An obituary appears in the *Meteor*, a liberal evening newspaper, written by Sebastian Squeeze, a supercilious, untalented and jealous rival of Mr. Sefton-Smith. It was a hurriedly written production, consisting of faint abuse of the poet and veiled abuse of his supporters. It hinted at his lack of education, suggested that the enthusiasm over his work would prove to have been exaggerated, and acknowledged his merits only in guarded terms.\textsuperscript{150} However, Mary Barker had memorised all Sefton-Smith's destroyed poems. The BBC sends her a letter offering her money for broadcast recitations. But, Ivy, Mr. Sefton-Smith's daughter, had destroyed it through her greed. Subsequently, it transpires that as Mr. Sefton-Smith's poems were unpublished Mary Barker has sole right to their copyright.\textsuperscript{151} Through her extreme kindliness she gives eighty seven per cent of the royalties from the publication of her deceased master's poetry, and twelve and a half per cent from her recitations and broadcasts to Mr. Sefton-Smith's family.\textsuperscript{152} Ivy Sefton-Smith receives her nemesis:

Meanwhile, Ivy chastened by all that had happened since the night of the fire, and having somehow learnt that a policy of rigid individualism and a keen eye to the main chance did not in the long run pay among civilised mortals, had passed through a long period of shame and confusion, from which she had at last emerged a saner and wiser person.\textsuperscript{153}

When Mr. Sefton-Smith had suddenly risen to fame Professor Bevington, a scientist and long-standing admirer of his, and the members of the poet's family, who deserved no commendation, were all mentioned as among those who had long known of the high quality of Mr. Sefton-Smith's poetry. Mary Barker, the dutiful servant who was the first and most energetic admirer of Mr. Sefton-Smith's
poetry and had been responsible for his recognition, received no credit. Just before his master had "perished in a conflagration fed by his own life work," Professor Bovington had dismissed his feckless housekeeper, Mrs. Wright, and appointed Mary Barker, who had been neglected during the period of her master's "success," as her replacement. Ludovici comments: "How important it is for human beings to be treated as if they mattered!"

Ludovici was aggrieved that work for the vast majority of Westerners meant doing not only what they dislike, but activities that were an affront to dignity and a menace to health. From its origins, Western civilisation had acted on the presupposition that no matter how many disagreeable new or old fatigues its many complications might require to be done, the necessary personnel to do them could always be found on threat of starvation. Ludovici advocated a way of life in which forced labour would not be part of its arrangements.

Fundamentally, as Ludovici believed that English history, since the Grand Rebellion, bore no trace of the ethic of noblesse oblige what could he be conserving? His works comprise a tirade against the record of the Conservative Party in English history. He wrote in his *A Defense of Aristocracy*, a text-book for Tories that during the nineteenth century and after the Tories had great opportunities to take the place of the Crown in England as the patriarchal rulers of the community, and vindicate Disraeli's promise that: "power has but one duty: to secure the social welfare of the people." They failed the people.
But they missed their opportunity. Probably they did not even see it. For there are some of them even today who will be found to declare that such statements as I have just quoted from Disraeli are Radical, and not susceptible of adoption by Tories in any way whatsoever. Thus they allowed things to go their own way, and obeyed the stupid indolent behest "laissez-faire." 161

Ludovici recounted an experience of his in 1915, when the journal Land and Water which contained a review of his A Defence of Aristocracy, a text book for Tories came into the hands of his colonel. Ludovici claimed that he would not easily forget the indignant and suspicious manner in which his colonel questioned Ludovici on that subject:

"In his thinly veiled reprimand, there was all the idealism and romantic allusions of the first decade of the century and yet he regarded himself as an out-and-out Conservative." 162

Ludovici severely reprimanded Conservative leaders in the early months of 1922 for their acquiescence in the Coalition Government led by David Lloyd-George. Their disinclination to break with the Coalition Government indicated their "utter bankruptcy." 163 The Conservative Party had shown it was incapable of leading. 164 It lacked momentum because it had no programme. 164 If Lord Balfour, Lord Birkenhead, and Mr. Austen Chamberlain were in the least inspired by a strong conservative faith, they could not have thus abandoned their party; "We may therefore conclude that the official Conservative Party, as represented by its old figure-heads is as dead as the Liberal Party which used to oppose it." 165 He believed the field of conservative ideas, and conservative solutions to modern problems, "lay practically unexplored." 166 Ludovici reiterated this claim in his A Defense of Conservatism and cited it as one of his reasons for believing that conservatism had failed in England. 167 The Conservative Party had been ignorant of
conservative principles throughout its history. Here journalists had filled the vacuum that had been created by the absence of any conservative political thought in England. The failure of Conservative statesmen and thinkers to maintain the high standard of realism requisite for sustaining conservatism as a practical and sound political policy, had led to much confusion and to the framing of much unconservative legislation on the part of Conservatives themselves. Ludovici thought the Tory reader of history, like himself, could only be astonished to find his party committing themselves to programmes and policies extremely remote from the tenets of his political creed. Significantly, Chapter III of his A Defense of Aristocracy. A text book for Tories is entitled: "The English Aristocrat as a Failure in the Tutorship of Ruling." Whilst Chapter IV of his A Defense of Conservatism is entitled: "A Criticism of the Conservative in Practice." In the latter book he asserts that the Tories did nothing to shield the nation from the worst consequences of the Industrial Revolution. Never was there a better opportunity for applying the fundamental principles of Toryism, but:

The misery of the people ultimately compelled the people to seek their salvation in self-government. That is the best comment on the way in which Toryism availed itself of the chance it had been given towards the close of the eighteenth and during the first decades of the nineteenth century (his italics).

The fact that that public health was virtually unrecognised by the legislature when Victoria ascended the throne, Ludovici thought adequately demonstrated the neglect by Tories of their sacred duties. The Tories never understood one of their most elementary duties - the care of the body and of health among the people - and paved the way for popular discontent and revolt. Only in 1860, after the
inspiring example of private individuals like Sir Edwin Chadwick and Sir John Simon, did a Conservative government, led by Lord Derby, pass the Sanitary Act. Ludovici thought its belatedness indicated that the concept of sound Conservative government had deteriorated. With regard to factory legislation, Ludovici thought it was notorious that, despite the enormous changes which had taken place in the social condition of the people, since the accession of George III, and which demanded the wise interference of the legislature, no Tory administration took any effective steps to mitigate the evils created by the Industrial Revolution. Conservatives have, according to Ludovici, concerned themselves too little with ideas of any sort whatsoever, and have taken pride in distrusting intellectualism as such, when they had neither taste nor character to fall back upon. Indeed, Ludovici thought the charge of stupidity which he believed was so often and so frivolously levelled against the Conservative Party of the nineteenth century, represented a certain portion of the truth. For: when it is said that Conservatives have suffered for many generations, either from ignorance or a total lack of doctrinal guidance, we have a good deal of evidence to substantiate our claim. In the vital department of government concerning public health, so essential to a sound Conservative administration, Ludovici thought England might well have been without any Tory or Conservative administration until the late nineteenth century. He thought it impossible to absolve the Tory Party of the chief blame for social strife, because they are the only party whose principles might have enabled them to save the situation. The fact that the Tory Party failed to see itself as the national and popular party, and failed to see this task as necessary: "is probably the best evidence we have of its universally alleged lack of intelligence and ideas." The threat of Mr. Asquith to the House of Lords, that they either pass the Parliament Bill or he would create peers
wholesale, was actually in pursuance of a Tory precedent, first used by Hazley's Tory administration in 1711. But, this was not the only respect in which Ludovici thought Conservatives were implicated in the "crime" of 1911. They were also implicated:

...through their lack of political acumen and historical knowledge, which allowed them to look on more or less cowed and helpless while they were being identified with the Gradgrinds of the Liberal Party and the Whig chauffeurs of the Capitalistic Juggernaut whose car had flattened the working classes in the nineteenth century.

Ludovici wrote of the arrogance of Conservative leaders which induced them to omit to organise a thinking body of conservatism. In consequence, they were devoid of sound ideas and policies. Owing to their indolence and self-confidence, the Conservatives under Lord Derby had already set the precedent for adopting the ideas of other parties, by cutting the ground under Gladstone's foot and introducing a Reform Bill:

How the policy of trying to defeat your opponents and rivals by imitating and filching their ideas, might be justified as between manufacturers, retailers, or even caterers, but when it is pursued by allegedly opposed political parties, one of which pretended to stand for the conservation of all that was institutionally precious in the nation, it is catastrophic. For, in the end, it can only culminate in driving the more radical and more socialistic party to ever greater extremes of Leftish policy, in order still to have something fresh to offer its supporters, which its opponents, the Conservatives, had not yet filched.

Ludovici believed that in this way, through their indolence and ideological bankruptcy, Conservatives had been the instigators of extremes in the Labour Party's plans and outlook, which they deplore. The Conservatives were at best a body of indolent opportunists who are only capable of imitating the actions and
performances of their more alert and better equipped competitors. Indeed, for Ludovici, conservatism had been absent from modern British politics for over a century. He hoped that staunch conservatives, like he claimed to be, would doubt the credentials of modern Conservative governments to be in any respect the exponent of conservatism. He thought one of the Conservative Party's inveterate and fundamental shortcomings was that in the social levels from which its leading recruits, and administrative officers had been drawn, the distinguishing vices had always been sloth and ignorance:

Too comfortable to see any urgency about enhancing their reputation in the country; Too well fed, housed and clothed to be driven by misery to scan the horizon anxiously for competent pilots and navigators of the ship of State, and to uncritically loyal to the old school, college and Parliamentary associates to exercise stern discipline over their friends in Office, or to extract from them a minimum standard of brain-power, efficiency and even information. Conservative administrations have for generations been so lacking in political wisdom, prescience and ability, and so defective in their grasp of their Party's history, doctrine and function that had a large section of the population in the commercial, industrial and propertied classes, not believed that their bank balances and other assets were better safeguarded by a Party ostensibly hostile to Socialism than by one properly wedded to it, they would have been swept from the political scene long ago.

This is why Ludovici believed Conservatives had drawn 'their' policies from anywhere. Even their most famous nineteenth century leader, Disraeli, was reckoned by Ludovici to be guilty of plagiarism. He recounted a personal experience of his at a luncheon party at which he, and others, were advocating a return of A. J. Balfour to power; "God forbid!" he exclaimed with great feeling, "that would mean my hunting". Ludovici thought this accorded with their tradition of ignorance. The elder Pitt, amongst other Conservatives, admitted the only history of England
he had ever read was Shakespeare. Whilst, just to select
a few of the severe criticisms of Conservatives that Ludovici
accepted, he agreed with both Beatrice Webb's and Lord Morley's
verdicts that both A. J. Balfour and the Duke of Northumberland
were of deficient intellect. Ludovici concludes his survey
of the talents of modern British Conservative statesmen:

...from Lord Brougham, who in 1835 said of the English
ruling caste, "The want of sense and reason, which
prevails in these circles is wholly inexcusable", to
Mr. T. C. Worsley who 105 years later, speaking of
the Public Schools that rear the bulk of the recruits
to the Conservative Party, said: "the result has been
to saddle the nation with a body of leaders whose
understanding of the world they live in is wholly
inadequate", and who added that the same body
of men "have landed us in the present mess"
(meaning of the state of England just before World
War II), the verdict is always the same. Nor can
it be said that Mr. Worsley's treatise (Barbarians
and Phillistines, London, 1940) where these strictures
appear is unduly biased. Ludovici's "great frankness" in indicating the defects of
the Conservative Party that he alleged, was recognised by his
contemporaries. In What Woman Wishes, A. M. Landrassy, addressing
the 1900 Club, explained why the Conservative Party had grown so
appallingly weak. He explained that it was due in the first
place to the arrogant incompetence of its ideological mentors,
the Cecils; but secondly, and chiefly, to the fact that for
years they had no constructive principles or programmes. Again
in his Mon An Indictment, Ludovici reiterates his claim that
the Conservative Party is bankrupt of ideas.

As Ludovici expounded the Conservative Party for their
corruption his task was to forgo a new conservatism. His
attempt to transform the meaning of conservatism is mainly
to be found in his A Defense of Aristocracy. A text book for Tories.
and his *A Defence of Conservatism*, in which he defines his task as the elucidation of "a Conservative philosophy of the future."\textsuperscript{197}

He made no attempt to conceal the fact that his was a novel conservatism:

...although the philosophic attitude of Conservatism is at bottom quite unassailable and, when soundly understood and wisely implemented, its principles can defy all scrutiny and criticism, let us not make the fatal mistake of confounding it with what for generations has passed as "Conservative" in England.\textsuperscript{198}

In Ludovicis novel of 1921, *What Woman Wishes*, a "Tory" movement is founded by its aristocratic heroes called the Friends of Order. Its headquarters in Pall Hall is described thus:

In the outer office there was a small square writing table for a clerk, and another large and heavy round table, on which lay the current Tory periodicals, a few books on political subjects, and one or two works of reference. In the inner office, on the other hand, there was a long leather covered table, with leather covered chairs all around it, and a blotting pad to each chair; the walls were concealed from cornice to skirting by bookshelves containing almost all the literature of the counter-revolution from the nervous and forcible writings of the Syndicalist-Royalist Georges Sorel, to the cold and austere treatises of the post-Mistescheans. There was even a corner for the poets, and one whole bookshelf over the mantelpiece was allotted to the modern Chinese and Japanese school of reactionaries; Ku-Hung-Ming, Okakura-Kakuzo, etc.\textsuperscript{199}

The first notable event connected with the Friends of Order was the publication of *A Handbook for Anti-Bolshevikists*.\textsuperscript{200}

At the beginning of the novel the hero, Lord Chiddingingly, who lashed the Lower House with ill-concealed contempt, is arising young Tory. But, after having lost his seat in East St. Patricks to a Liberal in the General Election of 1918, he was endeavouring with the help of his father, Lord Firle, and Arthur Maximilian Landrassy,
to reconstitute the Conservative Party. In the War Parliament, to which he had been elected in 1915, he had attempted to teach the House the habits of thinking and acting on aristocratic lines, and to defend and protect the masses. He had just begun to earn the title of Lord George Bentinck Redivivus when the 1918 election had interrupted his Parliamentary career. He had failed to discern any possible "cure" for the condition of the classes in England, until late in 1919 he had come across a book by Arthur Maximilliam Landrassy called *A Vindication of the Rule of the Best*. He learned from Landrassy that his recognition had been the first that he had received: "I have been waiting for years. My misfortune had been the stupidity of the Tory Party." And then he added with a sigh: "it is also their misfortune." Thereafter, Lord Chiddingly saw to it that Landrassy wanted for nothing, and that his fame spread. Lord Chiddingly, with the help of Landrassy, begins to become regarded as promising a constructive Tory Party. They confer, and agree, that the Cecils' 'Brain Trust' has too long dominated English conservatism for the worse. Lord Firle, the father of Lord Chiddingly, agrees to Landrassy's plan to form a society called the Friends of Order, and gives his pledge to Landrassy that he will be its President. It was on November 11, 1920, just as the bustle and crush of the Armistice Anniversary was beginning to subside that Landrassy rose in the large and crowded dining room of the 1900 Club to address the members on his scheme for combating modern disorder. The Marquis of Firle introduced Landrassy to the well known Unionist and Tory peers who were present, and the large number of Unionists M.P.s, and he proclaimed that the author of *The Vindication of the Rule of the Best* was at last getting a hearing from the people whom he could teach something. Landrassy then declared to those assembled
that while the chief aim of The Society of the Friends of Order would be to create a comprehensive programme which could stem the spread of socialism, its national object would consist in solving current problems on Conservative lines and in giving a policy to the Tory Party. Later in the novel, when the Society of the Friends of Order gains momentum, Lord Chiddingly, its leader, found himself becoming one of the most prominent and most talked about young politicians on the Tory side. And the more alert among the Conservative Party were beginning to look to him as one of their most important figures, if not as their future leader:

...Broken, discredited and impoverished as they were, thanks to the very much enervated family, whose leading member is Mr. A.J. Balfour, it was naturally with some excitement and self-congratulation that the Tories saw returning to them in the persons of young men of the type of the future Marquis of Firle, Aubrey St. Maur of Too Old for Dolls, (London: Hutchinson, 1920), Captain Biggadyke of French Beans, (London: Hutchinson, 1923), etc., a kind of strength which had not been theirs for nearly two generations. Indeed, so accustomed had they become to the overweening importance of the Cecils, that it was almost with incredulous wonder that they rubbed their eyes to descry the virile and magnetic group of young men that was beginning to take the place of these giants of high falutin' blandishments.

Ludovici wrote that the field of conservative ideas and 'solutions' to modern problems lay practically unexplored. He suggested that an "unofficial" elite of thinkers should evolve a new conservatism and constitute a centre from which all public indoctrination in conservative ideas would have to emanate. Ludovici believed that without the evolution of a new conservatism, that he proposed, the Conservative Party would be discredited and its only fate that of political extinction. As Dr. Hale, in The Taming of Don Juan, says to his protege, Gilbert Milburn, after succeeding in getting him adopted as unofficial Conservative candidate for the Northern
division of Wessex. "as your party is absolutely bankrupt both in ideas and good leaders, now is your chance to outline a new Conservative policy." It will comprise the subject of the ensuing chapters to describe the radical changes that Ludovici desired in conservatism. It will be maintained that Ludovici rendered conservatism commensurable with fascism.


45. W. B. Honning, "The Emergence of Fascism", Great Britain Daily, Volume 41, October 1939, p. 29.


66. [Text not legible]

67. [Text not legible]

68. [Text not legible]

69. [Text not legible]

70. [Text not legible]

71. [Text not legible]

72. [Text not legible]

73. [Text not legible]

74. [Text not legible]

75. [Text not legible]

76. [Text not legible]

77. [Text not legible]

78. [Text not legible]

79. [Text not legible]

80. [Text not legible]

81. [Text not legible]

82. [Text not legible]

83. [Text not legible]

84. [Text not legible]


104. Ibid., p. 50.

105. Ibid., p. 51.

106. Ibid., p. 51.

107. Ibid., p. 83.
Notes to Chapter 2


109. ibid., p.131.

110. ibid., p.151.

111. ibid., p.155.

112. ibid., p.161.

113. ibid., p.234.

114. ibid., p.101.

115. ibid., p.105.

116. ibid., p.288.


119. ibid., pp.161-162.


123. Anthony Mario Ludovici ibid.


126. Anthony Mario Ludovici, ibid., p.59.

127. ibid., pp.75-76.

128. ibid., p.80.

129. ibid., p.128.

130. ibid., p.132.

131. ibid., p.213.

132. ibid., p.214.

133. ibid., p.216.


137. *ibid., p.17.*

138. *ibid., p.18.*

139. *ibid., p.19.*

140. *ibid., p.20.*

141. *ibid., p.22.*

142. *ibid., p.23.*

143. *ibid., p.24.*

144. *ibid., p.28.*

145. *ibid., p.30.*

146. *ibid., p.31.*


148. *ibid., p.21.*


150. *ibid., p.260.*

151. *ibid., pp.275-276.*

152. *ibid., p.282.*


154. *ibid., p.192.*

155. *ibid., p.263.*

156. *ibid., p.249.*


158. *ibid., p.31.*

159. *ibid., p.34.*


164. *ibid.*, p.49.


166. *ibid.*, p.969.


169. *ibid.*, p.35.

170. *ibid.*, p.75.


174. *ibid.*, p.94.

175. *ibid.*, p.97.

176. *ibid.*, p.98.


182. *ibid.*, p.139.

183. *ibid.*, p.166.


188. *ibid.*

189. *ibid.*


192. ibid.

193. ibid., p. 6.


199. idem., What Woman Wishes (London: Hutchinson, 1921), pp. 94-95.

200. ibid., p. 108.

201. ibid., p. 23.


203. ibid., pp. 24-25.

204. ibid., p. 26.

205. ibid., p. 79.

206. ibid., p. 81.

207. ibid., p. 82.

208. ibid., p. 133.


210. ibid., pp. 961-962.

211. idem., The Taming of Don Juan (London: Hutchinson, 1924), p. 297.
For one whose father and grandfather were both famous artists, not surprisingly Anthony Mario Ludovici’s initial concerns were artistic. His grandfather, Albert Ludovici, who had emigrated to England from Italy, was a painter in London of domestic subjects and became a member of the Royal Society of British Artists in 1867. He was a pupil of Monsieur Droiling in Paris during the eighteen-forties, and fellow student of the celebrated painter Henner. He exhibited a total of 323 pictures in London between 1848 and 1891, one of his works being bought by Napoleon III, from the Salon des Refuses in 1863. He died in Verney, Switzerland on September 10, 1894, after being a member of the Royal British Academy for the greater part of his life.

Anthony Mario Ludovici’s father, Albert Ludovici Jnr. (1852-1932), was born in Prague on July 10, 1852. He was educated in London and Geneva, and was a landscape and genre painter, he was elected a member of the Society of British Artists in 1878, and exhibited at the Royal Academy from 1880. He came under the complete hypnotism of Whistler, and was Whistler’s "most orthodox and uncompromising henchman" in Britain. He lived mainly in Paris, but also in London. Anthony Mario Ludovici’s mother, Maria Cals, whom his father married in Paris in August 1875, was also associated with the world of art and culture.

Anthony Mario Ludovici started life as an artist, illustrated various books, and was Auguste Rodin’s private secretary for part of 1906, a post which he secured through his father’s personal influence, to whom he had already expressed his wish to become a writer. Due to
his rejection of contemporary art, he left graphic arts to pursue a vocation as a writer. As a young man he was disturbed by the bewildering inconsistency and contradictariness of the opinions on his work he was able to elicit from the artists whose judgement he valued—his father, Rodin, Sauter and Whistler. He decried the absence of all of authority, or at least of unanimity among authorities:

This was roughly about 1898. Ever since then, on and off, my thoughts have turned upon the why and wherefore of this confusion and lack of standards and upon its disastrous consequences. More especially have I always felt the danger of a pervasive charlatanism in a sphere where, owing to the absence of established canons and standards, everything is allowed. It was this anarchic subjectivity and lack of unifying style and canon in the arts that constituted the chief objection Ludovici raised to his parents and others, to the adoption of the graphic art as a calling.

From his dissatisfaction with modern art he attempted to discover the cause of its degeneration and to overcome the subjectivity which he thought had destroyed over a century of art. He turned to Nietzscheanism as an authority that could give art a real and vital justification. In the only place where he provides his reasons for his early repudiation of art as a vocation, Ludovici claimed that the absence of standards in art arose from our loss of a homogeneous culture, which he thought: "the only culture worthy of the name according to Nietzsche."

However, Ludovici did not merely adopt Nietzscheanism in his views on art and culture. Above all others, Nietzsche was the thinker to whom Ludovici owed most of the ideas in his social and political thought. Although it is not the purpose of this thesis to compare Nietzsche's and Ludovici's social and political thought, throughout
this thesis, I shall allude to the ideas they share. It is extremely important to recognise Ludovici’s eulogy of the philosophy and personality of Friedrich Nietzsche. Ludovici wrote three major commentaries on the philosophy of Friedrich Nietzsche, and was one of the most significant disciples of Nietzsche in Britain from the first decade of this century.

We know that Ludovici joined the New Age, in 1911, and collaborated with its two brilliant Nietzscheans, J.M. Kennedy and Dr. Oscar Levy. Ludovici first met Dr. Oscar Levy, perhaps the leading Nietzschean in England at the time, in the late summer of 1906. Dr. Oscar Levy was already contributing to the New Age by that time, with J.M. Kennedy and it was probably he who recommended Ludovici to A.R. Orage, who, with Holbrook Jackson, had acquired joint ownership and editorship of the New Age in the spring of 1907. Ludovici had met and was very impressed with A.R. Orage when he was preparing his lectures on Nietzsche at University College, London, over two years.

Before the first evidence of his actually contributing to the New Age. Ludovici was the prolific ‘art’ critic of the New Age between 1912 and 1914. However, he contributed very little to New Age during World War I because of his active service, much to A.R. Orage’s dismay. Indeed, he did not contribute anything to the New Age after the mid-1920s, which may have been due to the fact that in October 1922, A.R. Orage renounced the editorship of the New Age, or that Ludovici was too preoccupied with the writing of his books, it was his most prolific period. Anyway, when A.R. Orage returned to England in 1931, after a most bizarre hiatus spent in exploring mysticism, he founded the New English Weekly in April of 1932, and Ludovici became a regular writer of reviews for that journal. Although A.R. Orage died on November 5, 1934, Ludovici continued as an occasional contributor to the New English Weekly. A review of public affairs, literature and the arts, through its merger with the old New Age. A weekly record of Christian culture, social service and literary life, to form the hybrid New English Weekly and New Age, etc., in January 1939 its reversion of name to the New English Weekly, etc., in April 1947, and the latter’s final demise in September 1949.

Nevertheless, although Ludovici was one of the New Age Nietzscheans and it is true that the New Age reacted against liberalism and romanticism during and after World War I, it was a predominantly socialist journal. It advocated guild socialism and later became a mouthpiece for the social credit schemes of Major Douglas, from which Ludovici always kept aloof. It is possible that Ludovici

---

imbibed the guild socialism that the New Age was advocating and adopted it in his advocacy of corporatism, and feudal ideal of totalitarianism, which is discussed later in this thesis. However, in his contributions to the New Age, he never displayed any sympathy with the guild socialism it advocated.

The importance of the New Age to Ludovici was that it helped to establish him in the literary world. He also gained a great deal of notoriety in his dissemination of Nietzscheism in the New Age. He earned some unflattering comments for his outspokenness. The following is from Wyndham Lewis: "He is obviously a fool it is worth no-one's while to notice...his dismal shoddy rubbish is not even amusingly ridiculous." Whilst T.E. Hulme called Ludovici a charlatan of Nietzscheism, "a little cockney intellect which would have been more suitably employed indexing in a lawyer's office". And for maliciously denigrating the art of Jacob Epstein he suggested a little personal violence would be appropriate: "But the unworthy sentiment of pity for the weak, which, in spite of Nietzsche, still moves us, prevents us dealing drastically, with this rather light-weight superman."  

We know that before Ludovici translated six volumes of Nietzsche he had spent some time in Germany, and there got acquainted with the writings of Schopenhauer and Nietzsche, who were his inspiration for the rest of his life. Undoubtedly, Ludovici adopted a good deal of his anti-feminism from Schopenhauer. Whilst Nietzscheism is profuse throughout Ludovici's A Defence of Aristocracy, A Text Book for Tories. In the latter Ludovici claims that Nietzsche's recognition of the need

---

for a transvaluation of values was prophetic, for only then would the people be able and willing to recognise the claim of superior life. Only an elite of "taste and discrimination" is able to save Western civilisation from unrelieved degeneracy by a transvaluation of values:

...the modern world has in Nietzsche's stupendously courageous enquiry into the broad question of sick and healthy values, an outline of its task, and a signpost as to the direction it should pursue, which it can ignore only at its own hurt and peril.

In Ludovici's *A Defence of Conservatism* we are told that the conservative is a definite type.

Ludovici eulogised Nietzsche for his healthy realism which wrenched the mask from the dangerous face of romance. He had realised that it is not traditional institutions that are degenerative but values, hence the dire need for a transvaluation of values.

Just as Nietzsche philosophised the real and the vital so did Ludovici, indeed, it underpinned his social and political thought. The pre-Platonic Greeks, according to Nietzsche, "had before themselves Life in a luxuriant perfection", unlike us who are "muddled with the disunion engendered by the wish for freedom, beauty, fulness of life, and the love of truth that only asks: What is the good of life at all?" Nietzsche, for Ludovici, overcame Schopenhauer's pessimism by discovering an object in life, the elevation of man and society.

The question of life-promoting 'taste' plays an important part in Nietzsche's writings, as it does in Ludovici's. But, Ludovici was to make his own application of Nietzscheism. Interestingly, Dr. Oscar Levy warned Ludovici not to make Nietzscheism popular when it ought to be esoteric: "Why not act up to your Machiavellian principles, and rather lecture on the drama, socialism, folklore, the sins of the upper classes, or the sanitation of Mayfair?" And that Ludovici should be propogating Nietzscheism, not a race.
Ludovici thought that just as Schopenhauer had turned in horror from man's blind will to live in the midst of Life, and as life reached self-consciousness in man it is for man to neutralise it, so Nietzsche had turned in horror from Schopenhauer. He had realised that man may attain to superman, improve his race, and play a bold part in the game of life. Hitherto the pre-requisite to be 'philosophical' had been "tediousness, long-windedness, dryness - anaemia", with our Kants, J.S. Mills and Sidgwick: "Now Nietzsche is a man who wrote with his blood, who made philosophy as palpatatingly interesting as the most thrilling romance." It was to Nietzsche's credit to have seen that "active, creativo, Dionysiac" values belonged to the 'master morality', whilst the 'slave morality' is passive and defensive. Nietzsche deliberately spoke coldly and deliberately on matters on which the multitude spoke with tearful voices, to give the impression of benevolence. For Ludovici, Nietzsche was an exception who escaped from the general degeneracy of Europe, its unscrupulous praise of 'progress' and volgar levity in the face of effeminacy and decay, and voiced the hope of a real world, regenerated and reorganised on a sounder, more virile and more orderly basis, "if only the stupendous revolution of a transvaluation of all values were made possible." Ludovici reckoned that Nietzscheism must avoid becoming a "merely intellectual movement", and that Nietzsche's followers must build upon his "taste in Sociology." Nietzsche was eulogised by Ludovici as the greatest thinker of the nineteenth century. We should call our history a triumph of man, face life with positiveness, and not shrink from life, as Schopenhauer suggested that we should. In 1941, Ludovici proclaimed that he was:

...a veteran of the aristocratic and soldier academy of Nietzsche, who for 30 years has been quietly prosecuting the great thinker's works, and, without pronouncing his name at every breath, has nevertheless been performing the unprofitable and unpopular task, wherever possible, of combating degeneracy, and promoting the elevation of the type Man.
For Ludovici, values are entirely matters of taste and prejudice, not of truth.\textsuperscript{47} It was Nietzsche who had discerned the truth that human taste, or values, could be either lethal or life-promoting, and that valuing life was among the most vital of human functions.\textsuperscript{48} Ludovici reckoned the task of "philosophy" is to apply what is known to an intelligent conduct of the affairs of human life. However, instead of pursuing and searching for wisdom, "philosophy has become bogged in the quagmire of epistemology." It was to Nietzsche's credit to claim "a more vital, a more flesh-and-blood function for the philosopher... and to interpret knowing along biological lines."\textsuperscript{49}

Ludovici only claimed to diverge from Nietzsche on two matters. Firstly, Ludovici regarded Socrates as the greatest transvaluer of all time; by substituting humanism for man's old healthy monism. Once monism had been contradicted by Socrates, every sort of degeneracy, and apology for degeneracy, became possible.\textsuperscript{50} Thus, four hundred years before Nietzsche's Jewish-Christian transvaluation every essential principle which made it possible had been established by Socrates. Ludovici thought that in this matter he was justified in charging Nietzsche with "confusion and a lack of consistency."\textsuperscript{51} Secondly, Ludovici thought that in failing to see how and why the conduct prompted by pity could be and often is ignominious, Nietzsche had not reached Schopenhauer's degree of clarity about it.\textsuperscript{52} Ludovici believed pity provided a relief from envy, and reckoned of all modern thinkers, Schopenhauer, "probably the greatest psychologist, if not the greatest philosopher Europe has produced,"\textsuperscript{53} got nearest to the truth in this matter, although he never elaborated this truth. Schopenhauer maintained: "Pity is the opposite of Envy."\textsuperscript{54} According to Ludovici, Nietzsche's failure to discover the relationship between pity and envy, together with his equally serious oversight concerning Socrates, "constitute the two major blemishes which in my
Although there are traits of Nietzscheism in most of Ludovici's writings I reiterate that it is not the object of this thesis to demonstrate it. Nevertheless, it is a matter of importance and I think it essential to allude to some of the copious evidence that could be adduced to demonstrate this. In Ludovici's novel of 1918, *Mansel Fellowes*, we are told that the Nietzschean Dr. Mel Hado said an intellectual "'Yes to Life', ...wholesale acceptance of Life's most cruel and most beautiful behests", and was but the spiritual counterpart to Mansel Fellowes's physical fight to achieve the consumation of her vital female destiny - marriage to Richard Latimer. When Richard Latimer is converted to Catholicism by Father Jevington and renounces Mansel Fellowes's Dr. Mel Hado, was to essentially a "philosopher of the open air and of Life" to ignore the appalling tragedy of it. In Ludovici's *Mans Descent from the Gods* or, the complete case against prohibition, of 1921, the struggle is between 'Dionysians' and 'Prometheans'. Similarly, in Ludovici's novel of 1919, *Catherine Doyle; the romance of a thrice-married lady*, we are told that the hero, James Gordon, was busy in a very profound exposition of the Nietzschean doctrine of 'eternal recurrence'. Although the latter are just a few of the innumerable instances where Ludovici obviously refers to Nietzscheism, in the remainder of this thesis, where space and relevance permits, I shall indicate where the ideas of Ludovici and Nietzsche are contiguous.

Above all, however, the most obvious adoption of Nietzscheism by Ludovici is to be found in his views on the vital role of art and culture. He reckoned Van Gogh and Gaugin, received no help from philosophy in regenerating art and culture, and bringing it closer to Life, except from Nietzsche. It was not until Nietzsche's intensely
vital doctrine of "art for life's sake" was formulated that "the cause of art actually found a philosophical talker who thoroughly understood what he was talking about." Nietzsche had prosaged a rejuvenated and purified culture that would promote life and not pedantic knowledge. Art is but a weapon in the service of man's 'will to power.' Mans joy or pain in life is determined by the artist who values life and the world for the "acclimatised herd." Nietzsche would have us believe that the Dionysian artist "cannot look out upon life without transfiguring it, hallowing it, blessing it, and making it appear better, bigger, and more beautiful." For Ludovici, Nietzsche saw the truth that art is not distinct from the values and conditions prevailing in the culture in which it arises. It was Nietzsche's ambition, throughout his life, to regenerate European culture, and initially in Wagner he thought he had found the man to do it. However, he realised that the regeneration of German culture, of European culture, and the transvaluation of values which would be necessary for regeneration, lay off the track of Wagnerism. Ludovici reckoned that Nietzsche's disavowal of Wagner was due to his realisation of the truth that:

...the principles of art are inextricably bound up with the laws of life, that anaesthetic dogma may therefore promote or depress all vital force, and that a picture, a symphony, a poem or a statue, is just as capable of being pessimistic, anarchic, Christian or revolutionary, as a philosophy or a science is.

To speak of a certain class of music as being compatible with the decline of culture, therefore, was to Nietzsche a perfectly warrantable association of ideas, and that is why, throughout his 'philosophy', and Ludovici's, so much stress is laid upon vital aesthetic considerations. Hence Nietzsche's dismissal of Wagnerian music. In Wagner's music, Nietzsche saw the promotion of decadence and degeneration. Ludovici agreed with Nietzsche that Wagner had supplied the "hashish and morphia" to conceal the dull ugliness of our civilisation.
classical artists of the nineteenth century, such as Heine, Goethe, Stendhal and Gobineau, were conscious of what was wrong with them, and possessed the will and the strength to overcome their illness. Wagner's romanticism just like Gothic architecture was the outcome of inner discord and weakness. He was a "splendid romanticist" because of his inner discipline, and his success was due to the craving of the modern world for romanticists able to conceal the degeneracy that prevailed. In a romanticist like Wagner "life-theory and life-practice" could not co-incide, whereas in a great leader like Nietzsche they must.

Ludovici's most obvious avowal of Nietzsche's vital 'aesthetic' is to be found in his Nietzsche and Art, published by Constable in 1911. In the latter Ludovici claims that he strictly confines himself to Nietzsche's aesthetic, and adopts it as the basis for a new, and vital, valuation of art. He reckoned Nietzsche's works are full of the evidence of an artistic temperament that laid great stress upon the creative act as an alleviation of life: "Who could have been an atheist out of his lust to create?" In attacking Wagner as the embodiment of romanticism, Nietzsche merely personified the movement to which he felt himself so fundamentally opposed. Ludovici conceived himself as continuing Nietzsche's task of assailing romanticism. In Ludovici's novel of 1919, Catherine Doyle: the romance of a thrice-married lady, Gerald Swynnerton recalls that James Gordon, Nietzschean and Egyptologist, pointed out the granite sculptures of the Egyptian gallery in the British Museum, and they agreed that if the artists who

"It consisted of lectures which he delivered in a condensed form at University College, London, during November and December, 1910; where two years previously he had the honour of addressing an audience on Nietzsche's moral and evolutionary views, and which formed his first book, Who is to be Master of the World? An introduction to the philosophy of Friedrich Nietzsche, with an introduction by Dr. Oscar Levy, published by T.N. Foulis in 1909."
carved these classical masterpieces were to recur they would think it worthwhile again. 79

For both Ludovici and Nietzsche the only criterion of good art is that which promotes life. The Nation received Ludovici's interpretation of Nietzsche's vital 'aesthetic' with unconcealed hostility, for confusing art with politics and life: "When Nietzsche, and Mr. Ludovici after him, speak of the danger that may come to life through art, they speak as philosophers and moralists, not as artists." 80

Ludovici's adoption of Nietzsche's aesthetic vitalism provided the basis for his critic of modern art. He derided the democratic inclination of modern art. 81 Contemporary European art was just "the taste of the masses" and the artists themselves actually confirmed and submitted to this mob rule. 82 Their pursuit of truth was indicative of the paralysis of will that had overtaken art. 83 They were absolutely democratic and vulgar; 84 like scientists they merely ascertained facts. 85 Ludovici thought that just as the Grand Rebellion in England was a matter of Roundheads and Cavaliers, of people who were Puritan and negative to life, against those who were Pagan and positive to life, the "Hundred Years' Rebellion in Art" also had its Roundheads and Cavaliers. Before the Counter-Reformation, Ludovici thought art was always understood to possess a vital meaning: "to mean practically life expressing herself, or a certain kind of life expressing its view of all life." The artist was the advocate of life. He received his brief direct from life, and his pleading had some direct relationship to life. The effect of the Reformation and Protestantism was to separate art from life:

... For who doubts that the Impressionists, the Neo-Impressionists, the Post-Impressionists, the Futurists, the Cubists, the Synthetists, the Pointillistes, and their ancestors the Transcriptists, Naturalists, Pre-Raphaelites, etc., are anything else than the Puritanical Baptists and Ama-Baptists, Methodists, Wesleyan Methodists, Plymouth Brethen, Quakers, Unitarians, Presbyterian, and Congregationalists of a Grand Rebellion in art? 86

Beneath all these anaemic artists' concentration on mere technique only impoverished life spoke. 87 The artistic world concentrated
its attention upon the palette and nature when it was human life that was crying out for a cure. They regarded art from the craftsman standpoint, "the proletariat of the studio", as a mere matter of technique, and continued along that line only in the discovery of ever newer conventions for the rendering of impressions. The examples of the post-impressionists became a canon for a legion of mediocre people who merely imitated. Pot-boilers came into ascendancy who heralded the dissolution of art, "and their colour is the colour of decomposed tissues and of putrefying corpses." The people of taste, the artists, had abetted the triumph of ugliness by their inaction: "How many painters, sculptures, or Architects, have ever started even a militant movement against the abuses of a capitalistic, industrial, and commercial State?" The Eugenics movement was not one composed of artists, alarmed at the uglification of the race. Indeed, artists did less than silently acquiesce in the tasteless innovations of industrialists and exploiters of mankind, they became commercial men themselves.

Ludovici believed the impressionists were quite mistaken in supposing that because high finish happened to be connected with the sterile painters of the Graeco-Roman school, that it was therefore a quality to be wholly condemned. It was this mistake of the impressionists that Ludovici believed opened the sanctuary of art to all. But, the cure was not to abolish finish as the impressionists had done. Rather: "The cure was to correct their scheme of life, or the scheme of life of their nation." Ludovici thought the mistake of making slight attention to finish had also been perpetrated in music, literature, and in architecture. Above all, Ludovici thought that rather than censure the anarchy of the cubists and futurists, condemnation would be much better spent on something much vaster - the 'system', and of which the section of pictorial art was only a small and neglected part.
The role allotted to the artist in modern society was reprehensible. The sincere and vital artist who undertook to probe the deep mystery of that particular part of life to which he was attracted by his individual taste and abilities was virtually foredoomed to dementia by the circumstances of his occupation: "amid the racket and thunder of the crowded thoroughfare of modern life." Not only did the artist have no place allotted to him but the very position he tried to conquer for himself was hedged round with petty obstacles and minor personalities. History did not necessarily "place" a man, or even a whole age, and give to them their proper level. Time frequently passed over those in silence who ought to have had a lasting claim upon the respect and appreciation of their fellows. Ludovici thought this was especially likely to happen today when the world is largely governed by the commercial principle which places quantity before quality.

For Ludovici, the revolution in art of the nineteenth century had been the cause and consequence of this corruption in art, which culminated in impressionism. The purpose of art was tacitly assumed to be to obtain as faithful a transcript of nature and reality as they were felt to be by anybody and everybody. Peasants, 'innocent' and 'unsophisticated', seemingly belonging to nature and not to town or 'artificial' life, were included in the category nature, from which it was legitimate to make a transcript. Whilst, in the category reality, cafe scenes, scenes of town life, glimpses 'behind the scenes' provided their 'artificiality' and 'unnaturalness' were mitigated by a certain 'character', were deemed as legitimate sources for transcription. All of this was done not because the peasant or scenes of town life were linked up with any definite scheme of life; but, because, all life passions, "all life schemes were at an end", and anything was good enough for these artists, whose scepticism drove them to technique as their only refuge. These preoccupations usurped the place of the
rapidly vanishing *subject* in pictures. It was the last vestige of an historical period in which men had been inspired to express their relationship to life by something higher and greater than both themselves and their arts.

*...In fact, it had always flourished in periods when humanity had known of a general direction, a general purpose in life, and of a scheme of life which gave their heartbeats and their breath some deeper meaning than they have at present.*

The impressionists completely overlooked the truth that the deficiency of their academical contemporaries was of a scheme of life, and faith in life, and not of technique. Their 'artistic instincts' were not strong enough to make them see that the uninspired subject picture was the most poignant proof that could be found of the fact that mankind no longer possessed, to any passionate degree, that which made the subject picture possible — a profound faith in something greater and more vital either than the artists themselves or their art, something which gave not only art, but also life, a purpose. In abusing the degenerate subject picture, these innovators were simply inveighing against a pathological symptom. Mere matters of technique had usurped the place of higher and more vital aims. The academic school was bankrupt, lifeless, and exhausted. It no longer consisted of artists with an exalted ideal and the fire of creation in their hearts, but of slavish imitators of the classic painters and sculptors. Ludovici thought the impressionists were typical of both modern opportunism and democracy which had torn down every institution which is discredited, not through any fault inherent in its nature, but through those who mismanage it, whether it be aristocracy, monarchy, or religion, instead of reconstituting and constructively restoring it. He spoke of the "scattered and heterogeneous heaps of refuse" which constituted Western aesthetics and the place of aesthetics in its civilisation. No art-canons existed, and modern art-criticism rested on no accepted rules and principles.
The moment in history when the first fundamental blunder was made in art was about 1860 in France, the advent of the first impressionists. The opportunity to effect desirable reforms was obviously favourable: "for the classic conventions of the Academicians had certainly lost touch with Life, and they included many time-serving mercenaries destitute of genius." But the impressionists could not effect a cure as they had not made a correct diagnosis. They mistook a symptom for a cause and imagined that the shortcomings of the Academicians' technique were the sole root of the trouble. Here changes in technique could neither improve inspiration nor create artistic passion where both were defective. Admittedly, the first impressionists gave the artist the technical equipment to be more arresting and convincing than theretofore, "better able to pass on to the beholder at least some of the vital spark received by his closer touch with Nature." But, there gradually developed a fanaticism, in connection with technical changes alone, which superceded all vital considerations. These changes were foolishly expected to regenerate art overnight:

...whether the human material to hand were or were not more gifted than that which had produced the Academicians of the classic convention, or whether or not our present world, Life, Faith in Life, and the Love of Humanity, still had the potency to procure adequate inspiration for the artist.

The impressionist doctrine that the subject did not matter gave a permanent licence to subjectivity in art - for no ultimate reference existed. This ill considered dismissal of the 'subject' in art culminated in modern abstract art.

Ludovici thought Kant's reckless statement in his *Kritik Der Urteilskraft* that the subject should be disregarded in assessing a work of art, and only its design or composition should be considered, was of supreme importance in the genesis of abstract art.
Unfortunately, Kant was followed by Hegel and Schopenhauer, who were responsible for a grossly exaggerated valuation of music.\textsuperscript{109} Hegel emphasised that music was "wholly abstract" and more "intellectual" means of approach to human feeling.\textsuperscript{110} Whilst Schopenhauer claimed that music "represented the very essence of Life."\textsuperscript{111} Ludovici thought the regrettable effect of the above was to fill all aesthetes' minds with a veneration for art of a non-representational and romantic kind. Whereas, the artist should contemplate some aspect of life and represent it.\textsuperscript{112}

Ludovici thought the early origins of the movement which culminated in the acceptance of abstract art in England, are to be sought in the peculiarities and careers of Walter Pater, Oscar Wilde, and James MacNeill Whistler. Walter Pater exhorted graphic artists to try in their works to approximate their methods and manner to those of music and emphasise the total negligibility of the subject, and the supreme importance of the composition and arrangement.\textsuperscript{113} There was only one man in England, courageous and aesthetically erudite enough to expose the "Puritan aesthetics" of Pater, Wilde and Whistler, and that was Ruskin. However, he failed the cause of vital art.\textsuperscript{114} According to Ludovici, we have only to read Whistler's \textit{Ten O'Clock} in order to see how he slavishly repeated all Walter Pater's aesthetic doctrine to a startled audience, which included Ludovici's "poor infatuated father".\textsuperscript{115}

Ludovici's reaction to the collection of Whistler's paintings at the Tate Gallery in 1912 was one of depression and fatigue to their "sordid lack of life, health, and colour; by their black and white austerity, like the garb of Charles the First's murderers." Whistler's greys poured from his palette with all the profusion of a "tropical Puritanism". If Kant had finished what Luther had begun then, for Ludovici, Whistler had put the coping stone upon the morbid edifice.
of Puritanical art. One did not require to have read Mr. Whistler's
*Ten O'Clock*, in which he proscribes art from life, but just a little
vitality and one hour in Room No. 5 at the Tate Gallery, to reach the
same conclusion as Ludovici about Whistler's impressionism:

The breath and blood that issue from these grey
abysses is the foetid breath of impoverished life, the
weak blood of the anaemic patient. The love that is
revealed in these pictures is the only love that is
left to the Puritan - the love of things that can be
contemplated without desire or interest (of the senses),
the love of things that lure one neither to life nor
to any form of love.

In lifting pictorial art into the undefiled realm of symphonic music
Whistler discovered the picture for Puritanism. He would have been
better advised to have explained his Kantian aesthetic to Puritans
rather than to artists.\textsuperscript{116} Whistler, like the earlier impressionists
and secessionists from the Academy, far from seeing that the chaos
of values and the decline of man had led to the decline of art,
proceeded not only to concentrate upon technique, but proclaimed that
the subject in a picture or sculpture did not matter. Ludovici was
not surprised that among the secessionists of the impressionist
period there should have been found Whistler, an American, whose
Puritanical traditions inclined him wholeheartedly to embrace the
new negative art creed. He exalted variegated schemes of blacks and
greys to the rank of subjects in his pictures.\textsuperscript{117} Just as the
impressionists in France of the latter half of the nineteenth century
and Schopenhauer, triumphed due to the pessimism which no longer
wished to be reminded of man and life, so the success of Whistler in
England was due to the latent Puritanism of his outlook, and the
Puritanism of those to whom he appealed.\textsuperscript{118} As it was unlikely that
Whistler, the American Puritan, had ever read Kant, the German
Puritan Ludovici attributed their common aesthetic doctrines to their
"Scottish blood".\textsuperscript{119} Their reckless flais opened the way to the
extravagances of post-impressionism, cubism, futurism, and the defiant
obscurities of abstract painting.\textsuperscript{120}
Ludovici's tirade against the artistic establishment is most evident in his pseudonymous novel of 1939, *Poet's Trumpeter*. In the latter, the Society for the Study of English Verse, to which Mr. Thomas Sefton-Smith, the hero, submits his poetry, is led by a Mr. Danethorpe. He is described as a successfully retired businessman, who, because he was raised to a position of safety, opulence and power by the age, believed in its every taste and judgement. Also in the Society is a journalist, Sebastion Squeeze, who had learnt prosody at University and mocked Sefton-Smith for his lack of scholarship. Sefton-Smith had been no more than a postman, and his wilful ignorance of prosody compounded the jealousy of his rivals, who thought his chances of success should be nil.

Professor Bevington, an admirer of Sefton-Smith, attributes the latter's dismissal by the artistic establishment to its liberalism and romanticism:

'For the last three centuries we have been building up an authority for science', he replied, 'and have built up none for art! It has been left to the charlatans and astrologers, just as science was, when three centuries ago we rescued her, and that is why in art today no-one can say this is so and that is so, or why nobody is believed when he says such things.'

The aspiring poet's son and daughter, Ivy and Jack, could barely be civil to him, whilst his sister-in-law nad her husband, Mr. Edward Rivett, who had acquired great wealth and was utterly unintellectual, pitied Mr. Sefton-Smith. Mr. Danethorpe, a prominent member of The Society for the Study of English Verse, despite his condemnation of socialism and favour of wholly uncontrolled individualism, of which he imagined himself a prime product, was one of the most humble puppets of mass suggestion. Drawing largely upon his friends eminent and scholarly criticism, Dr. Lanyard-Whistler of Oxford, he conceded that there was something in Sefton-Smith's poetry - "some feeling for Nature, some deeper consciousness of the power behind phenomena." However, he was afraid that the frequency of strained rhymes, the
absence of enjambments, the heavy rhythm, and the constant use of everyday phraseology, made the whole read little better than rhymed prose. He expressed his, or rather Landyard-Whistler's, disapproval of the lack of romanticism in Sefton-Smith's poetry. To which Mr. Sefton-Smith timidly inquired if whether or not Mr. Druc thorpe's romantic aesthetic would exclude Poe and Baudelaire. He replied that Poe and Baudelaire raise us to "those lofty altitudes where the joy over existence assumes a pure, ethereal form not to be confounded with a grosser emotion of a lower plane." Sefton-Smith, on the other hand, relied on feeling rather than rules, when criticising another's poetry.

Ludovici confused his artistic, political and moral categories. He traced the deterioration of art to the degeneracy of man:

"...owing to the prevalence of sickness, debility and nervous exhaustion, there is no longer any lofty criterion concerning what is, and what is not, necessary, inevitable and desirable in art production. Traceability, as I pointed out 15 years ago [Anthony Mario Ludovici, Nietzsche and Art, (London: Constable, 1911)], but which only recently I have learnt to ascribe to faulty bodily coordination, by giving the modern generation a sense of injury and a general lack of well being, causes everyone to feel that he has 'something to express'."

From its inception his diagnosis of the condition of art was Nietzschean. He believed that if everybody had a right to every judgment and every joy; if a certain slavish truthfulness to nature and reality had wrecked higher aspirations; it was because the fundamental principles of Christianity were no longer latent but active and potent in our midst. For Protestantism was neither more no less than a general rebellion against all authority. The Holy Catholic Church, by its rigorous discipline and firm establishment upon hierarchical principles, suppressed for a while the overwhelming temper of Christianity, and all claims of individual thought and judgement. However, according to Ludovici three doctrines detrimental to art and culture were to
burst forth through the impact of Martin Luther and the Reformation, which Nietzsche had identified as the cause of the paralysis of will in Europe.\textsuperscript{134} They were equality, the general depravity of human nature, an absolute truth which could be made common to all.\textsuperscript{135} They were fatal to the artist who demanded obedience and procured reverence. Art should have waged the most forcible opposition to liberalism.\textsuperscript{137} However, once the spirit of individual liberty and judgement had invaded that department of life which heretofore had been most sacred, religion, it was bound to enter and defile less sacred sanctuaries.\textsuperscript{138} The insignificant majority got more freedom than was good for them, whilst the noble minority, the artists, were deprived of their birth right.\textsuperscript{139} The attitude of the Christian ideal to Life, to the body, and the world was an entirely negative one. The classic feature and form of body surely and permanently vanished from the wall decorations of the fourth, fifth and sixth centuries A.D., and the Christian 'type' asserted itself with ever greater assurance.\textsuperscript{140} For Ludovici, beauty and voluptuousness, smoothness and charm were very naturally regarded with suspicion by the promoters of the Christian ideals: "for beauty, voluptuousness and shapeliness lure back to Life, lure back to the flesh, and ultimately back to the body."\textsuperscript{141} He thought the ugliness of Gothic style lay in its contempt of the body and of Life.\textsuperscript{142}

In Ludovici’s novel of 1922, \textit{The Goddess that Grew Up}, Cyril Bashfield Streeter prefers the Latin to the German school of music. The melody of the Latin school of music, is the symbolic musical representation of one voice above the many, the crowd.\textsuperscript{143} whilst the German school of music is recognised by the rule of harmony, which is the overholding of the one voice by the crowd. Modern music, which is chiefly German music, rises historically with the Protestant Reformation, the proclamation of the principle of democratic controls. However, Latin music, reaches back to the unique reign of authority in Europe - to purely
Catholic times.

The graphic arts are, for Ludovici, dependent art. Today, the artist can turn nowhere to find the 'type' worthy of his pictorial advocacy. In Ludovici's novel of 1919, Catherine Doyle, The Romance of a thrice-married lady, Gerald Swynnerton recounts to Knowles a conversation he had with James Gordon, Egyptologist, in the British Museum. James Gordon had inquired if whether or not Gerald Swynnerton had realised that museums are confessions of weakness. They are but the signs of our present incompetence and impotence. He felt weak and insignificant as he walked through the Elgin room. If modern men were not degenerate they would have pounded these relics into a pulp, and used it as a mortar for braver things, for masterpieces of their own. But they did not have the requisite confidence in themselves. The Renaissance artists destroyed the monuments of old Rome, Mehenet Ali robbed the pyramids to build his magnificent mosques, but:

"...we must have museums, because, although we are over 500 millions of living creatures in Europe today, our culture is as dead as these stones, and can create nothing: because in our heart of hearts we are convinced that we are a pack of incompetent fools!"  

Gerald Swynnerton further recounts to Knowles his agreement with James Gordon's adverse opinion of the Gothic, but he still felt it superior to anything his age could produce.

For Ludovici, art products reveal the condition of the Society in which they are produced. He thought there were two explanations of the stultification of academic art from 1860: "(a) The fact that the modern men of Europe had ceased to be inspiring, and (b) the chaos of values." Man's expression in art is always the externalisation of what is in him. The prohibitive ugliness of modern poetry, graphic and plastic arts, was..."due to the scarecrow ugliness of our
poets, artists, sculptors and musicians." We cannot hope to
repeat what happened in art, literature, architecture, interior
decoration and furniture design in the century or more that followed
the birth of Thomas Hood's grandfather, who was an agricultural
labourer. It is idle to expect anything like that brief English
Renaissance to spring again from England's 'proletariat', which was
so well bred that the Spaniards were aghast at the dentition of
Wellington's soldiers:

In vain can we hope for any feats remotely equivalent
to the Architectural and Architectural Work of the
Adams Brothers, the Furniture of artists like Sheraton
and Chippendale, and the poetry of such labourers
grandsons as Burns and Thomas Hood.

This, for Ludovici, was the oversight of the impressionists. They
mistrueed the nature of the plague of the Academicians, which was
really the degeneracy of man. From arts bankruptcy we may infer the
degeneracy of men, they had ceased to be inspiring. At a time when
the chaos of values and the degeneracy of the modern European made a
lofty art tendency impossible, impressionists, who thought themselves
the only hope of the art world, concentrated upon problems of technique.

They did not graze the surface of the actual cause of the trouble,
which was still operating: "We still have the chaos of values, only
intensified; and we still have degenerate manhood, but more degenerate."

Their exaltation of light, atmosphere, colour harmonies and mere
patterns to the rank of subjects in their pictures pleased the
Puritan and pessimist, but revolted those who wanted life. They did
not realise the truth that the salvation of art and the salvation of
humanity are identical as problems.

Another cause of the degeneration of art that Ludovici, and Nietzsche,
denegreatated, was science and rationalism which, they believed, pursued
the same ideals as Christianity: Universal liberty and equality;
devotion to the truth that can be made common to all; the depression
of the value and dignity of man. The empiricists, Francis Bacon, Hobbes and Locke, were among the first by their teaching, to level a decisive blow at the man who knows and who is the measure of all things, the artist; they reduced all knowledge to that which can be made immediately the experience of all. Liberals, from Benthan to John Stuart Mill and Sidgwick, by taking the greatest number as their norm, ably reflected the Christian principle of the equality of souls in their works, and drew their values from mediocrity, which is constantly in need of values drawn from supermediocrity, for its love of life and reconciliation with drabby reality. Ludovici saw in the rise of science the collapse of human wisdom. For it is humanity's artists, the most sensitive men of the community, whose art is the crystalised harbinger of facts that will become patent to all in the concrete world of politics and national life. Ludovici lamented that when suffering and grave physical degeneration arise in the 'Art of Life' it is the scientist who is called upon to advise in our 'Promethean civilisation', who has to take the place of the artist, of the man who knows. The scientist, by aiming at a general truth for all, depresses Life; if the world grows ugly, and Life loses her bloom; if all winds are ill winds, and the sunshine grows sickly and pale; if we turn our eyes dubiously about us, and begin to question the justification of our existence, we may be quite certain that this man, the realist, and his type, are in the ascendancy, and that he it is who is stamping his fist upon our millenium. The devotee of truth deprecates Life. There are necessary "grey studies" to be made, necessary uglinesses to be described, but they should be kept within the four walls of a laboratory, until the time comes when, by their collective means, man can be raised and not depressed by them. Science should work behind the scenes of Life, it should not promulgate the values concerning life, but be the modest hand maiden of art.
Following Nietzsche, Ludovici thought Christianity and science reached their zenith in the last half of the nineteenth century, and culminated in a discovery which infected the whole atmosphere of Europe: The evolutionary hypothesis of Darwin and Spencer.\footnote{167} A more depressing conception could not have been conceived.\footnote{168} It could become the common possession of everybody.\footnote{169} In its description of the prime motor of life as a struggle for existence, and above all in its unprincipled optimism, it bore the indelible stamp of shallowness and vulgarity.\footnote{170} If becoming were a reliable hypothesis, it must be supported by different principles from those of the Darwinian school, and Nietzsche was the first to sketch these different principles.\footnote{171} Ludovici thought that when we try to discover the influence of Christianity and science upon the world, "we wonder not so much why Art is bad, but why Art has survived at all."\footnote{172}

All Ludovici's denigration of contemporary art is underpinned by the conviction that it has become divorced from life, romantic. Modern art is remote from experience, fantastic, unpractical, dreamy. Grandeur or picturesqueness, or passion, or irregular beauty have been preferred to finish and proportion. It is unreal, subjective, and fabricated. Under the term 'abstract art' we are invited to expect and accept pictorial productions quite devoid of any specific content, meaningless in their message, and consisting simply of arrangements of arbitrary and unintelligible forms presented in a riot of colours having no relevance to the form in question. Modern artists are independent of rules for the execution of their works, whether of observation, draughtsmanship, or colour technique, and are free to produce wholly indecipherable dispositions of forms and colours, which have no greater significance than those to be found in carpets, wall-papers, tartans, and the like.\footnote{173} Modern art romantically banished all representation of such natural products as
bore Nietzsche's 'will to power', and in fact every aspect of life. Indeed, abstract art threatened to eliminate all trace of life.\textsuperscript{174}

Ludovici believed the delight which the Englishman feels at the sight of an uncouth landscape, tangled brushwood, bracken, brambles and rocks, has a moral and not an aesthetic valuation behind it: "It is a delight in the presence of chaos, of anarchy, or over a lack of restraint, design or purpose." A delight in the very reverse of the pillars of culture and civilisation - authority.\textsuperscript{175} Following Nietzsche closely, Ludovici thought he knew of the conditions associated with romanticism, that which is "fantastically different from reality". These conditions are to be found in democracy which is conducive to their cultivation, they are: The right of self-assertion granted to everybody, and the consequent deterioration of the interpretation of life owing to the fact that the function of interpretation is claimed by mediocrity; the belief in a general truth which can be made common to all; a democratic dislike of recognising the mark or stamp of any particular human power in the things interpreted.\textsuperscript{176} If art is created by "hunger" it is likely to be either true to nature, uglier than nature, or absurdly unnatural. The first is the product of the ordinary man, the second the product of that man below mediocrity and the third the outcome of the sufferers:

...who wishes to wreak his revenge on all that thrives, and is beautiful and happy, and which bids him weave fantastic worlds of his own away from this one, where people of his calibre can forget their wretched ailments and evil humours and wallow in their own feverish nightmares of overstrained, palpitating and neurasthenic yearnings.

Ludovici, again following Nietzsche, called the first "poverty realism or Police Art"; the second, pessimism and incompetent art; the third, romanticism.\textsuperscript{177} Romanticism's fundamental features are its worship of the abstract principle of liberty, anarchy and the absence of culture.
which rude nature exemplifies on all sides; and it was a moral or liberal spirit that animated it, whether in Rousseau or his followers. Modern romanticism could not bear the "fierce light of an art that is intimate with Life and inseparable from Life." It was not an artist who first said that mountains and rugged scenery were beautiful. It was Rousseau. Ludovici associated romanticism with "vagueness, looseness of thought, a tendency to a non-tragic super-mundane outlook, sentimentality and liberalism."

To the romanticism of modern art Ludovici contrasted the classically real. He desired fidelity of representation, truth of nature, insistence upon details; the showing of life as it is without glossing over what is ugly or beautiful. Art and culture should be life like, realistic, true to nature. He maintained that the graphic arts, from the beginning of civilisation and even before it in late barbaric times, had always been representative. Their very raison d'être, their aim and function, had been to register and perpetuate the real. In Ludovici's novel of 1918, Hansel Fellowes, Richard Latimer, after divesting most of his didactic in the writing of text books, turns his hand to fiction, and determines to conquer the stage-loving public with realist plays, "unmarred by the psychological and scientific excrescences of a self-conscious school of neurasthenics."

Dr. Melhado, Richard Latimer's Nietzschean mentor, complements him on his choice. Realist drama is the medium of expression that demands the most restraints, "'the most tyrannical laws'", and does not attract female aspirants. Later in the novel, when in France, Richard Latimer discerns his classical ideal in French histrionic art, which uplifts him. He felt that, like the language of France, with its lack of the tonic accent and its dependency on quantity for emphasis and rhythm, the French drama was the only classical thing the world had seen since the decline of Hellas: "He used to point out to
Frenchmen that their language was the only guide we now possess
to the pronunciation of classical language." 185

Ludovici claimed to adhere with Nietzsche in regarding classical
realism as the means of luring men to life. 186 He thought, in
Nietzsche's, and his own view, that romanticism could have no
place in art, it suggests something that is not real. The artist's
view of the world should be "extremely real", it should depict life
in all its horrors and beauties. Only the classical artist can face
and place tragedy whereas the non-classical mind flees from life
in all its powerful manifestations to "the romantic and the wildly
fantastic". 187

The impressionists, instead of pursuing art for art's sake, should
have agitated for a closer relationship to life, and formed "the
nucleus of a new party wishing earnestly to regenerate and
re-vitalise art by connecting it once more with the highest form
of life — man himself." 188 Quality art is that which seeks its
subjects more living and nearer to life, than those of romanticism. 189
It should be the constant endeavour of the classic artist to make his
expression of life as adequate as possible to life itself. He should
be forever striving to attain to a high degree of finish which will
yield the closest approximation to the vigour of his original
conception. 190

In Ludovici's novel of 1923, French Beans, the hero, Andre de Loudon
could not read modern novels; they struck him as being too romantic.
Reading Montesquieu's Lettres Persanes, however, he was transported
back again into the atmosphere he loved most — "the masculine atmosphere
of pre-Rousseau's Europe." 191 In Ludovici's pseudonymous novel of
1939, Poets Trumpeter, we are told that Sefton-Smith's poetry was not
"all bubbling brooks, warbling birds and smiling valleys", but incorporated all the features of life.¹⁹²

Most importantly it is the principles of classical realism which are most life-like and should, therefore, according to Ludovici, be the principles of conservatism. This is found most explicitly in Ludovici's *A Defense of Conservatism* the second chapter of which is called "Conservatism and Realism."¹⁹³ Classic craftsmen set about their work on the elementary principle that nothing lasting can be produced if those who produce it have no sense for quality. Permanence, which was the aim of Greece and Rome, was achieved to the extent to which this principle was observed.¹⁹⁴ For Conservatives it is of importance to observe the productions of the classical world, whether in thought or material things as they are concerned with permanence. Ludovici defines the classic as that which is real, in the sense that it is based on eternal laws. That which survives must be real as it depends on nothing transitory or fantastic. Thus, in material productions, the building which depends, as the classic building does, wholly upon the eternal law of gravity, is real in the sense that the principle on which it is constructed is true for all time.¹⁹⁵ Likewise, in the grandfather clock man has discovered a time piece which, for relative permanence, must excel the bracket clock for all time. Because the grandfather clock depends on two eternal laws, gravity and the pendulum, for which it can depend for its durability; whereas the bracket clock depends on only one eternal law - that of the pendulum. In the bracket clock, in which the action of gravitation is supplanted by a spring whose resilience is ephemeral, "man has discovered something less permanent, less real, less classic than the grandfather clock."¹⁹⁶ Ludovici also claimed to be able to trace the same classic principle in the history of thought. Classic or realist thought is that which survives because it is in harmony with
some eternal law of the human mind. He thought Aesop's fables are eternally valid; some of Plato's and Aristotle's writings, especially the eighth book of The Republic; and the same might be said of much that Homer, Aristophanes, Horace, and Tacitus, said and wrote. Similarly, Aristotle's poetics contain a canon for dramatic poetry which can never be surpassed for its psychological analysis. In that which is classic we may expect to discover the reality that has secured its permanence, and that reality will be the eternal law which it exemplifies and applies; "Classicism is thus realism - the profoundest realism (with quality of matter, expression, material and treatment always understood in its concrete examples)." Since Conservatists are concerned about the problem of permanence, they must be both classicists and realists.\footnote{197}

Ludovici, in his A Defence of Conservatism, opposes classical realism to romanticism, the creation of the Middle Ages and Christianity, when man was trying to achieve an impossible compromise between life and a religion which might have been addressed to disembodied spirits. The Roman world, during the first four centuries of our era, in attempting to carry out these feats, "had gone almost mad". The Holy Catholic Church, by reinterpreting her doctrine less ascetically, could only assuage and not eliminate the radical conflict between the Christian ideal and "the life of this world".\footnote{198} The expression of the civilisation created by this conflict between the Church and Life was romanticism.\footnote{199} Its romanticism consisted in the fantastic flights to which the attempt to reconcile the life of the real world and the 'life' indicated by the ideals of the Church necessarily led.\footnote{200} Even though it was superceded and died, its influence, and the elements which gave rise to it have not disappeared from our midst:

\ldots Strained, unreal, fantastic psychology is still a factor in our midst; it still colours the speculations of politicians and sociologists; and even in its modern garb this Romanticism can be recognised for what it is - that is to say, something unreal, the antithesis of Classicism or realism.\footnote{207}
In the graphic arts, as Ludovici had shown elsewhere, he thought it possible to trace all through the early and later Middle Ages, the influence of the same fantastic conflict. The body of man was transformed by degrees into the eccentric 'type' that seemed compatible with the unworldly ideal of asceticism. The Gothic figure became ever more and more tenuous, more emaciated, and ever more morbid. The ephemeralness of this non-vital 'type' expresses a fantastic conflict between the permanent and the impermanent, the real and the unreal. It was, however, in the architecture of the period that Ludovici thought the equation "Unreal - Romantic - Impermanent", finds its most convincing expression. Romanticism, and its fantastic ideal, were crystalised in the 'fantastic architectural feats' of the Gothic edifice. Liberalism could also be traced in the history of thought, according to Ludovici, to the influence of the romantic mentality. It is the unreality, the ultimate impracticability of the fundamental principles of liberalism, their ignorance of eternal laws, that makes liberalism romantic.

The conservative, on the other hand, according to Ludovici, is a realist in thought and action, he finds the only truth to be that of life. The classical truth of life is hierarchy, which cannot be squared with any unreal notions about human equality. Thus, the conservative is a supporter of order, subordination, authority and discipline. He believes in time and its relation to quality, and vice versa. He does not build on the romantic idea that greatness of any sort is independent of causation. He organises society on lines in which time and quality can work their reciprocal effects.

in human beings and in things.\textsuperscript{204} And, being a realist, the conservative is averse to popular control, because he cannot believe that everybody is endowed with the necessary judgement to decide what is in his best interest.\textsuperscript{205}

Ludovici desired a "militant realism\textsuperscript{206} which would overcome anarchy and chaos by simplification, adjustment, and transfiguration.\textsuperscript{207} It would be of a kind which is forced upon the powerful classical artist who, in a world upholding values other than his own, is obliged to bring forward his ideals with such a preponderance of characteristic features as would seem almost to represent a transcript of reality.\textsuperscript{208}

In Ludovici's novel of 1919, \textit{Catherine Doyle: the romance of a thrice-married lady}, we are informed that the Egyptologist, James Gordon, lived for a revival of Egyptian classicism.\textsuperscript{209} Whilst, in Ludovici's novel of 1920, \textit{Too Old for Dolls}, Lord Henry Highbarn asserts to the company he is addressing that they should disabuse their minds of the idea that poetry is romantic.\textsuperscript{210} Poetry's most important characteristic is that it adopts a mnemonic form, which conduces to remembering "important, vital things\textsuperscript{211} A man who casts his thoughts or his emotions into a poetical or mnemonic form, implies that he is dealing with thoughts or emotions that are important or vital enough to be remembered. Only romanticists have neglected this truth:

\begin{displayquote}
'The works of your Wordsworths, your Tennysons, your Brownings, your Matthew Arnolds,' cried Lord Henry above the noise, 'might be distilled down to one quarter of their bulk and nothing would be lost.'\textsuperscript{212}
\end{displayquote}

Ludovici desired that art be entirely unassailable from the strictest realism, in order to make it quite plausible and true to life.\textsuperscript{213}
However, Ludovici did not merely desire a realism that would be true to life - it was to be of vital importance in life. In his Nietzsche and Art, he says art should raise the value of Life for man. The soul of man rises or falls according to the nobility or baseness of the meaning which he himself puts into Life: "And, just as, in this matter, he may be his own regenerator, so, also, may he be his own assassin." Ludovici thought that Nietzsche's realisation that Life must be valued was the recognition of a "biological need". All humanity, in the pell-mell of becoming, cried out for a meaning, interpretation, and scheme, that would make Life their property. Life could only be made possible when it had been vitally ordered and arranged. It was humanity's artists who gave Life a human meaning in order to subordinate it to man's power. The vital artist snatches a corner of Life from the eternal flux and torrent of all things into decay or death, and carves it in an unchanging form for the layman, in spite of a world of becoming. Just as the musician cries 'Time!' to the cacophonous medley of natural sounds that pour into his own, and assembles them rhythmically, so the graphic artist cries 'Time!' to the incessant and kaleidoscopic procession of things from birth to death, and places in the layman's arms the eternalised image of Life. "Aesthetics" for Ludovici, finds its place in Life itself. There is no absolute in subject beauty, it is merely the means to an end of a 'type' of man. Absolute beauty exists only in the confines of a particular race: "the moment we begin to share the Chinaman's or the negro's view of beauty, we run the risk of cutting ourselves adrift from our own people." Only when values are beginning to get mixed, owing to an influx of foreigners, according to Ludovici, does the vital biological idea of absolute beauty tend to disappear, to be replaced by the weak and liberal belief that beauty is relative.
Thus, in Attica of the fifth century BC, where many foreign slaves were to be counted among the population, the idea that beauty was a relative term first occurred to the 'talker' Socrates. The vital artist should depict life, his people, their regularity of form and feature, which is indicative of a certain regular mode of life, and in so doing affirm the vital values of his people. But, before art for the sake of Life can be discovered, man, the highest object of art must be regenerated.

Art, according to Ludovici and Nietzsche, had only been divorced from Life during the Christian era. In the early Christian paintings of the catacombs the Saviour was depicted with all the beauties and charms of the classical god or hero, whether as a Hermes, an Apollo, or an Orpheus. But, by the seventh century, the greatest paradox the world had ever seen, a god on a cross in his death agony, was portrayed for man's eyes to behold. Such, for Ludovici is the vital reaction of art on Life, that as Western Europe received its religion and its ideal 'type' from Christian-Roman art, we should not be surprised:

...if today, in our ball-rooms and drawing-rooms we are often confronted with tenuous, flame-like, swan-neck creatures, that recall Burne-Jones, Botticelli, Duccio and Segna to our minds, we know to which values these slender people owe their slender, heaven-aspiring stature, and their long sensitive fingers.

The clustered pillars of Gothic churches and cathedrals volatilize mass and volume, as though they have been spiritualised and dissipated. They are the 'germ' of Protestantism in stone. Gothic architecture's ugliness lies in its contempt of Life and the body. We should not even expect too much of the Renaissance, which was nothing more nor less than man's convalescence, after an illness that had lasted centuries: "To expect the recovering invalids
to impart something of themselves to Life, to enrich her and to transfigure her, would be to expect the impossible."²³²

By contrast, the Greeks' classical conception of beauty acknowledged that life was a blessing to which it was worthwhile to be seduced and lured.²³³ Ludovici reckoned that he could trace two 'art-wills' in the bloom of Hellenic art, from the sixth century BC, to two distinct races of men who strove for mastership in Greece.²³⁴ He attributed the fall of Greece to the triumph of that race with the lethal 'art-will'.²³⁵ Ludovici also attributed the perfection of Egyptian classicism to the fact that in the days of King Khophren they were racially pure, thanks to their isolated position on the Delta of the Nile.²³⁶ He interpreted the statue of King Khophren as the apotheosis of a 'type' which was the product of the vital values of his people.²³⁷ Similarly, adopting Nietzsche's 'aesthetic' vitalism, Ludovici reckoned that modern art could not be restored until the race had been purified²³⁸ A man's 'taste' is in the roots of his constitution.²³⁹

Claiming to have followed the principles of Nietzsche's aesthetic exclusively, Ludovici reckoned the great need was for a definite canon and statement as to the vital purpose of art in Life: "the establishment of an order of rank among tastes". The latter would permit the opportunity of exercising some choice in Life: A choice of 'type' in manhood; a choice of vital values.²⁴⁰

Art and life react upon each other.²⁴¹ A picture, like a sonnet, like a sonata, and like a statue, should claim the attention of those who are most vitally concerned with Life and humanity; "every breath of Art comes from the lungs of Life herself, and is full of indications as to her condition."²⁴² This notion of the inter-
dependence of art and Life, which Ludovici adopted from Nietzsche, is to be found throughout his works. In his A Defense of Aristocracy, A text book for Tories he says beauty is essentially the regularity, symmetry and grace of figure which is gradually acquired by a stock pursuing for generations a regular, symmetrical existence, under the guidance of the particular vital values of the race. In the final chapter, "What is Culture?", he suggests that the object of disillusioned conservatives should be a culture that will rear a racial elite. It is a Nietzscheian culture, not "idealistic and romantic", but one that would allow conservatives to face all the good and evil of their choice, provided they get what they regard as good - life. Adherence to this vital culture would restore beauty as a constant quality in the external world, and in the internal world of the emotions, as all one-sided rearing of "squeamish ideals" could only eliminate all greatness and character. Only a Nietzscheian culture could make life possible and desirable.

The greatest possible virtue of art is for it to be positive to life and particularly to human life. The artist is the most intense manifestation of life: "He knows what life, human life, wants in order to flourish, because he himself is a flourishing specimen of life, and his taste is life's taste." If all the artists painters were able to exercise their vital taste and power of selection among a population the size of modern England, England would have a periodical and authoritative statement from the men of vital taste in their country, as to who are the elite. An important work of art is something in the nature of an amputation, a loss of blood from the artists life. For Ludovici a beautiful poem is only that which can be linked, "consciously or unconsciously", with things which are desirable in humanity, or in a certain kind or part of humanity. All beauty, then, leads back to life, to human beauty, all ugliness is human ugliness.
No healthy people, according to Ludovici, has ever considered youth as ugly; because youth is the vital promise of human life and of a multiplication of human life. Conversely, no healthy people has ever considered gangrenous limbs, or decay in any form, as beautiful; because decay is the death of human life and the reduction of it. If it were not for the lethal notions of the 'beautiful consumptive' and the 'captivating cripple' which are to be found in the works of romantic English writers, who hail from the over-Christianised north-west of Europe, the Eugenics Society would have been superfluous.  

Art is of such vital importance to Ludovici that it is life herself looking upon her soul and her forms. It is life pronouncing her judgment upon herself: 

...Where life is sick and impoverished, her voice, speaking through the inferior man condemns herself, and paints herself bloodless and dreary, probably with the sky above depicted in a lurid and mysteriously fascinating fashion, calculated to make the earth seem grey and gloomy in comparison. Where life is sound and exuberant, her voice, speaking through the sound man, extolls herself and paints herself in bright, brave colours; which include even bright and brave colours for pain and the like. 

The vital artist looks about him for that thing in life on which he can expend his passion to speak of life itself, and life in its highest manifestation — man. The 'type' most adequate for pictorial advocacy is that which promises the most life, the biologically sound. 

Aesthetic values find their place in life and the race. In Ludovici's novel of 1919, Catherine Doyle: the romance of a thrice-married lady, Gerald Swynnerton describes the heroine, Catherine Doyle, as neither the woman of a picture by Rubens, nor the woman of a Botticelli: "The first is the taste of the Jew, the second of the Englishman." Rather, she was more like the woman of a picture by Van Dyck, the
ideal English woman of the Stuart period. Indeed, so closely entwined is art with Life that Ludovici speaks, in his The False Assumptions of "Democracy", of aesthetic survival values which he prefers to mere survival values. They would have made a higher and more lasting civilisation possible. This notion recurs in Ludovici's Man's Descent from the Gods; or, the complete case against prohibition. In the latter, Ludovici maintains that each race of men must answer not merely the question of how it is to survive, vital-survival-values, but how it is to survive in a desirable form, aesthetic-survival-values. The degeneracy of the population of industrial Europe was due, according to Ludovici, to their exclusive observation of vital-survival-values. The only check on the 'Prometheans' who led mankind downhill to degeneration and death with their 'progress' was the number of Nietzschean 'Dionysians' to oppose them. 'Dionysians' would have carefully observed aesthetic survival values.

In Ludovici's novel of 1922, The Goddess that Grew Up, Peter Oliver was aghast at the novels and literary pictures of the day. They did not reflect the degenerate state of society as he knew it. If they had been true to life they might have afforded him some vital guidance in life as to the desirable wife:

"...It is true that, here and there, he lighted upon a novel in which illness was mentioned; but when this was so, it was always treated in a spirit so romantic and unreal, as to be represented as ennobling, uplifting and purifying, -- in fact, to judge from the influence it was alleged to exert, as something almost desirable."

For Ludovici, the possession and expression of beauty should be made a part of national life. Beauty should be cultivated in the human body as a factor in a happy life. The national life is so sensitive to culture that Ludovici claimed to be able to trace
Christianities bias in favour of abnormality in history of art to its influence on popular values and dysgenic mating.

Culture, insofar as it is harmony & order, is the product of the race that is pure. Ludovici cited as evidence for this thesis that all earlier cultures arose in naturally or artifically confined areas: in islands like Crete, and Japan, peninsulas like India, Greece, and Italy, naturally enclosed areas like Peru, Mesopotamia and Egypt, and more or less artifically enclosed areas like China and Palestine. In the only cultures that have left a permanent mark upon the world we find not only inbreeding but a conscious tendency to segregate.

So inextricably does Ludovici see the valuations of art as bound to the processes of life that he reckoned they influenced human mating. Every healthy race should postulate its elite as its vital standard of absolute beauty and pronounce the word 'ugly' in regard to all other racial standards of beauty, otherwise its vital mating judgement would amount to the evanescence of its own life. He desired a racial aesthetic to check civilised man's tendency to extend his notion of beauty outside racial or national ideas.

Perhaps Ludovici's most bizarre illustration of his thesis of the vital interdependency of art and life is to be found in the third chapter of the second part of his The Choice of a Mate, "The Female Leg and the Influence of Dress on Morphology and Temperament." In the latter he argues that our Christian civilisation had imbibed a lethal culture that was peculiar to the Greeks in the period of their decadence.

'Taste' is healthy—or unhealthy according to whether it tends to an ascent or a descent in the line of life. The Greeks, in their decadent male-homosexual bias, did not depict the normal female trunk-leg ratio in their art. Ludovici then proceeds to discuss how this ideal, by having been acquired and followed by Europe, especially since the Renaissance, has affected our choice in mating and influenced the morphology of women. Especially in Protestant countries, with their more ascetic and primitive form of Christianity, there was nothing to resist this cult. Indeed, the early Christian ascetic ideal of human form in general, could only have exacerbated the "late Greek, wholly male-homosexual ideal of human form." Ludovici attributed the recurrent feminism of Europe since the decline of ancient Greece to a morphological anomaly that had been created in life through Greek decadent art assimilating the male form to the female form:

... the conscious or unconscious admiration of the leptosomatic or even asthenic female—long or male-leg, broad-shouldered, narrow-hipped and athletic—by most Europeans since the days of male-homosexual Greece (with its marvelously persuasive plastic art) and the acceptance by Christian art of the leptosomatic ideal has probably done much to effect a change in female morphology, and to produce (maybe in periodical waves) a large percentage of masculinoid, eunuchoid and... also infantile adult females in certain generations.

The lethal 'taste' which Greek male homosexuality generated in regard to the female figure, by influencing mating, had been responsible for the creation of viragoes. Ludovici desired that the ancient Greek ideals of female beauty and form be rooted out from our "life-habits" by the development of an aesthetic cult freed from Hellenic bias.

The criterion of beauty, for Ludovici, is that which is a life-promoting force. In Ludovici's pseudonymous novel of 1939, Poet's Trumpeter, Professor Bevington says to Thomas Sefton-Smith, that he hopes that out of all the chaos of modern literary criticism a
sane humanity will eventually emerge. Posterity should destroy all literary criticism which deals only with petty problems about manner, and develop a vital canon for art that promotes life, and asks of an artist's creations: "Was it vital? Was it consonant with menkinds continuing as a pleasing phenomenon on earth? Was it consonant with menkinds wishing to continue?" Professor Bevington then proceeds to complement Sefton-Smith on the vitality of his poetry. It made him wish to see humanity continue in a pleasing form. Sefton-Smith opines that good art should be a lofty expression of Life.

Ludovici thought culture sustained a race. He reckoned all that was needed for the death of a particular race was not necessarily the disease or violence introduced by another race, but merely the dependency introduced by the imposition of a new culture, which undermines their will to live. He reckoned that Indian culture by resisting Western culture and not allowing it to deflect them from the paths of their racial ancestors promised to regenerate even the social usages of the Indian people:

...Above all, it promises to resuscitate their arts and crafts - the 'material' aspects of their civilisation - by repairing the damage suffered from their impact with a civilisation like that of Europe which long ago divorced arts and crafts from any metaphysical source and made mass-production not only possible but indicated.

Democracy, Ludovici believed, could only arise in a people that had lost the "instinct of workmanship", with its sense of quality. Only these 'types', artists and poets, who possess a sense of vital quality, can regenerate a race. But, reciprocally, their art can only flourish in a common culture where racial values are absolute. In an atomised society like the West, with conflicting values, artists can only add to existing confusion and anarchy. The art which integrates a race, which harmonises with the values governing a
race's taste, conduct and outlook, is not the product of the artist or poet. It is the work of great creators who first established the homogeneity of racial values which, expressed in their vital art, "makes it as much a part of the whole as a flower is of the plant on which it grows." Only then does the distinction objective and subjective disappear and the artist speaks to those of his race serenely under the influence of the same vital values, "which all observe in every choice of their active life." High culture and art can only be the outcome of the man of racial purity in whom there are no bodily parts independently inherited from disparate parents. Ludovici claimed that this is why all great cultures were the outcome of inbred and segregated groups and who, in addition, possessed 'culture potential'. The "tasteful and sanitary administration" initiated in ancient Greece by Solon in the early sixth century BC required over a century to build up in the nation all the virtues and gifts which came to flower in the architecture of the Parthenon, the sculpture of Pheidias, the creation of Euripides, and, a decade or two later, in the works of Polycleitus and the plays of Aristophanes. It took over a century before: "the Way of Life established by the new regime had succeeded in producing a people almost uniformly sturdy and well-constituted, and able to supply its artists with types of surpassing beauty." Interestingly, if I may digress here, it is extremely important to appreciate the importance which Ludovici ascribed to art and craft. He desired a vital culture that would vivify, quicken, and vitalise men through creative generation. Ludovici claimed to agree with Bergson that life, organic life, is creative. The whole joy of living is epitomised in creation. Indeed, the whole of life is an act of creation, the greater the number of active adaptations the
higher the life. The "lust of creation" is behind the very organs of sight, hearing, and touch. Reflecting a typically anti-rational fascist argument Ludovici reckoned that the enjoyment of life is largely a question of aesthetics: "Is not our emotional nature competent to decide upon a question of taste or pleasure?" It is our emotional and aesthetic sense that decide which road to lead in Life's many possibilities. Liberalism and science merely mean us from our love of life and the value of life. They merely succeed in making both life and the body vile, whereas "life is very largely an aesthetic phenomenon." Ludovici's most important writings on life as a creative experience are to be found in his Creation or Recreation, written for the English Mystery in 1934. In the latter he spoke of a conflict of unprecedented gravity and magnitude between the forces of creation, or life, and those of recreation. The 'solution' of mass unemployment created by automation through the further intensive application of machinery was to be rejected as it enforced no reciprocal duties from the idle and also enabled them to fill their otherwise unoccupied lives with cheap amusements. The notion of 'colleges' of leisure crafty financed at great public expense, would merely enable the unemployed to be idle in an innocent and decorous manner. Similarly, communism is no answer as it still accepts the most romantic ideals of nineteenth century liberalism in believing in the unmixed blessings of machinery, the desirability of intensive production, and the ideal of increasing leisure for all. Likewise, Major Douglas's 'social credit' scheme accepted the increasing application of machinery to industry and its consequence, mass leisure, and argued that the unmixed blessings of these have been denied to the masses by the present system of wealth distribution. Ludovici proceeds to elaborate a solution to mass unemployment. He suggests that our
notions of work and leisure are corrupt, derived too exclusively from the spectacle of the urban wage earner on the one hand, and of the 'Mayfair loafer', on the other. Ludovici thought that what characterised all this work is that it is uncreative. Because no higher impulse can be enlisted, as either nothing at all is produced, or nothing is produced in its entirety. Conversely, we have come to connect leisure, the peculiar possession of the privileged classes, not with creative impulses or creation, or with recuperation following the latter, but with recreation pursued as a vocation. Ludovici thought we should rid our minds of these corrupt notions of work and leisure, and appreciate that a vital human being has no natural inclination for perpetual recreation, "but a native and irrepressible inclination to be constantly creative." These higher impulses of creativity are the heritage which man has inherited from his differences from the animals, through man having for thousands of years developed the habits of productive labour. We turn to creative activities not merely instinctively as a bird adopts a form of nest building, but as a gregarious act which gives us our raison d'etre in the community. Our advance from the bestial state is the history of the creative impulse, which every man possesses. The discontent of the working classes in all countries, where it has not proceeded from gross oppression, and the "restlessness, neurotic pursuits, and
sickness of the privileged classes", is due to their common divorce from their higher creative impulses. Ludovici cites as further evidence for his thesis that if any healthy man finds a task that appeals to him and stimulates his particular endowments he will be active. Secondly, that intellectual power is a development of muscular sense and that the connection between hand and brain in man may be regarded as the source of a large proportion of what we know as the higher mental faculties. Thirdly, as the universal spring of human action is Nietzsche's 'will to power', the conscious extension of individuality through creativity is one of the most profoundly satisfying activities of the human species. Fourthly, every healthy man engaged in some non-creative activity tries to redeem his self-esteem and to indulge his higher impulses by pursuing some creative activity as a pastime. Finally, no man can survive in happiness and contentment unless he is productive and creative: "that your life is enriching Life." Thus, for Ludovici, the real problem of the eight million he expected to be unemployed through technological innovation by 1940, was whether they were to be forcibly prevented from adopting productive pastimes. As more of those who would be deprived of employment by mechanised industry indulge their "lust for productive pastimes" and further glut markets, it is questionable whether any law would be able to prevent them from doing so. And, once the world had renewed its acquaintance with hand made goods it would not be easily persuaded to accept goods produced by machinery. Nor would it be likely that the home artisans themselves, "having once again tasted of the joys of handicraft", would ever wish to relinquish it for machine minding. Ludovici deduced from this projected tendency the inception of a wholly unprecedented necessity, the liquidation of whole classes of mechanical plants. Excepting those industries no amenable to handicraft — smelting, foundry-work.
certain classes of machine manufacture, haulage, and the like—a liquidation of mechanical equipment would be inaugurated. Even the "lingering death" which would be vouched safed to large masses of factory equipment as long as the export of shoddy goods was continued to uncivilised peoples not yet aware of the undesirability of such products and of the form of their production, would be brief. And the stage in history would be reached when the majority of mankind would do deliberately and with a clean conscience what the Luddites were executed for doing in 1812. Ludovici thought that some of the "more wise and independent of European rulers" had already paved the way for the forced of popular creativity. Hitler with his Ehstands Darleh (State Loans for Young Proletarians Wishing to Marry), had arranged that advances of State money to prospective bridgrooms should consist partly of small cheques payable only to home-craft workers, so that, wherever possible, mass-produced home-ware and articles of domestic use would not be purchased by the poorer newly-wedded couples of Nazi Germany. Ludovici hoped that the creative "instincts of the English masses", always opposed to machinery, would be similarly confirmed, and that the wisdom of rulers like Edward VI, Elizabeth, James I, Charles I, and of thinkers like Cobbett, Ruskin and Samuel Butler, would ultimately be vindicated. However, he thought before this ideal could be reached, great and bitter wars would have to be waged between the two belligerant 'types' of humanity, the 'Creationists' and the 'Recreationists'. Behind the former would be found the elite of the working masses who would be resolved to legalise their position as home producers, artists, and the more enlightened and human of the economists, philosophers, and psychologists. Behind the 'Recreationists', however, would be found 'vested interests', financial and otherwise, representing established mechanical industries, who saw their power menaced by the paid unemployed; and those elements of the masses and middle classes who had been
totally demoralised and deteriorated by two centuries of industrialism and commercialism, who had none of those higher impulses which insist on creation as the sine qua non of existence. The ensuing struggle would rage over several decades, but the 'Creationists' would win, provided they possessed a sufficiently large body of leaders who were convinced of the existence in all normal and healthy men of their impulse to create.

Similarly, as Ludovici addressed the English Mystery in the following year, 1935, he stressed that they were engaged in creation and should, like the blacksmith, and the builder, reapply the level, the square and the plumb-rule to their creation. The fact that they should find it necessary to apply the plumb-line and the rule in order to make sure that they had not departed from their original design should convince them that they had under their hands something living, creative, "and that is growing."

Now, as can be seen from the preceding discussion, for Ludovici art and culture had degenerated because the life of the race had degenerated, and art and culture could be regenerated only by increasing the vitality of the race; Conversely, and idealistically, life can decline or ascend according to art's valuation of life. Therefore, for Ludovici, art and life are interdependent. From these premisses he proceeds to derive a rationale for a totalitarian culture. Of course, it may appear that the importance that Ludovici assigns to art is explicable in terms of his being a conservative, as it is not unusual for conservatives to make analogies between the practice of art and politics. Conservatives regard politics as a craft, the practice of which is peculiar to the historical experience of each society. Successive generations are apprenticed to a tradition which embodies the political wisdom.
of that which has been tried and found to be viable.

Statesmanship is a skill acquired through the experience of attending to the traditional arrangements of a society; not a corpus of 'scientific' laws which can be acquired independently of a practice the nature of whose application is always and everywhere the same. However, Ludovici's notion of the 'art of politics' is quite extraordinary for somebody who claimed to be a conservative. Indeed, I consider his confusion of his political and aesthetic categories to be evidence for the substantiation of my thesis that Ludovici is a fascist. It is one of the primary characteristics of fascists to conceive of no limitations to the sphere of politics. They politicize all aspects of life. As Ludovici says in his *A Defense of Aristocracy*, a text book for Tories it is not only in the matter of establishing order that good government excels. He calls this the "simple 'craft' of governing". He appends to this what he calls the vital second quality of good rulership:

"...that virtue which sets the tone of the people, gives it a criterion of choice, and guides its passions. And this second virtue of good rulership might be called the 'tutorship' of governing, as opposed to the 'craft' aboe-mentioned."

The elite must find a willing medium for their 'art', fulfill the roles of both the craft and tutorship of governing, and establish a certain vital 'taste' or 'art of life' in the race. The "artists legislator" dictates the type of 'flourishing life' to which the character of the nation or race must approximate, which constitutes the sound and stable basis upon which a permanent creation may be built by the aristocrat if he chooses. He writes of how deeply "higher art" and social order and conservation are related through beauty in the human body alone, which brings about the conservative desire for permanence.
According to Ludovici's aesthetic vitalism one cannot be an anarchist in the matter of pictures, or the matter of one's taste in scenery, without involving oneself in wishing to subvert society. A romantic or liberal attitude which condones anarchy and chaos in scenery, or in art cannot but bear “on our attitude towards life.” One cannot with impunity foster and cultivate vulgarity in one's architecture, one's sculpture, one's paintings, one's music and literature: "without paying very dearly for these luxuries in our respective national politics, in our family institutions, and even in our physique." Only a vital culture and taste can achieve anything great in every aspect of life, including politics, morality, and law. However, he declines to connect all these things together, and to show their inevitable interdependency, although he thinks this "perfectly possible though arduous undertaking."

Ludovici believed that an important aspect of politics, that had been neglected by most political philosophers after Aristotle, is the creation and the control, or 'wardshep' as he preferred to call it, of culture: "Surely, the imponderabilia, the unwritten laws governing a peoples choice in all things, in furniture, architecture, mates, even in sentiments, ideas and opinions, should form a part of government and, therefore, of the philosophy of politics." Only one prominent recent political thinker had, according to Ludovici, not been guilty of this omission, Coleridge. Coleridge argued that even the Royal Society should be a department of the Church, as well as every branch of science, including all the sages and professions, whether in philosophy or law. Coleridge spoke, according to Ludovici, of the members of a Church thus constituted as resident guides and guardians and instructors, distributed all over the land. Coleridge had seen,
although Ludovici did not agree with his 'solution', the vital need of restoring to the idea of government the function of safeguarding and developing a people's, or race's, culture. Ludovici thought Coleridge would only have conceded to the contention that his ideal for culture is totalitarian, which it is, if only it could be proved that the sentiments, ideas, opinions and criterion of taste, of the masses, were not dictated to them by wholly irresponsible and incompetent parties; and if the masses in any nation could evolve their own culture and do so admirably. Only then would Coleridge have conceded that the culture of a people should not be created and controlled by government.³¹⁹

Ludovici desired an authoritarian direction of culture. The terms and grammar of art should not be matters of individual choice, but of general convention. Only when the 'scheme of life' is at an end, as it is today, is there a state of anarchy in the vital direction of art. Although, anarchy of form is a lesser kind of anarchy than that of direction, because it is not concerned with such vital things as direction, but with the means of expressing direction.³²⁰ This is the reason for Ludovici's hostility to the futurists, he thought they were anarchists of direction, the most vital issue, besides being anarchists of form. Their direction as well as their attitude to direction was utterly opposed to the vital direction and attitudes towards form of the elite principle which is the only means of attaining to any permanence of sound flourishing life: "because sound flourishing life is a process of selecting and rejecting correctly, and only very few can set the canons for this process."³²¹

Ludovici reckoned the Holy Catholic Church succeeded in establishing one of the conditions necessary to all "great Art", which is: "unity and solidarity lasting over a long period of time, and forming
men according to a definite and severe scheme of values.\textsuperscript{322} His ideal of a common culture is most clearly found in his introduction to \textit{The False Assumptions of "Democracy"}, entitled "The Confusion of Language and its relation to Revolution."\textsuperscript{323} In the latter he proclaims that a common language is contingent for its vital potential as a unifying factor on a common culture that provides a design of life into which every word of the language fits like a piece of vital mosaic. Vital abstract or general terms, with which Ludovici thought we guide our lives, should stand for very precise ideas, and should mean the same things to all men of the same race or nation.\textsuperscript{324} What perturbed Ludovici most about a confusion of language, in which words of an abstract and general nature have fallen out of place in the desire of life, is that it did not only mislead, but made it no longer possible to lead.\textsuperscript{325} Ludovici thought a national art is only possible under the control of national values. An integrated culture, in which the same values invade and pervade every sphere of life, has immense advantages over a chaotic culture according to Ludovici: there is no division of vital opinion concerning what is good, beautiful, or right.\textsuperscript{326} What the mass needs for leadership are "objective realists" prepared to establish uniform values and a language that would have a common vital meaning for all—a homogeneous culture.\textsuperscript{327} Predictably, from his totalitarian notion of culture and art, Ludovici generated prescriptions about the order of society appropriate to the vital culture he desired. The route of all beauty, he thought, is power in some form. It is the power of a long, uninterrupted tradition, or accumulated effort which gives rise to something beautiful in life, a particular and orderly set of features, pleasing to that race to whom that particular tradition is familiar.\textsuperscript{328} He found the ideal
authoritarian conditions for the perfection of a racial aesthetic
to prevail in India, where:

...The excellence of the body at least was well
provided for, while the system of casts and guilds
(sreni) tended to emphasise and preserve whatever
good was derived from the more or less hereditary
system of blood occupations.329

This, evidently, is a notion that confirms Nietzsche's influence on
Ludovici. The former wrote:

...we must accept the cruel sounding truth, that slavery
is the essence of culture, which leaves no doubt as to the
absolute value of Existence. This truth is the
vulture, that gnaws at the liver of the Promethean
promotor of Culture. The misery of toiling men must
still increase in order to make the production of the
world of art possible to a small number of Olympian men.330

In his commentary on Nietzsche's aesthetic, **Nietzsche and Art** of 1911,
Ludovici attempts to demonstrate that to bestow admiration on a work
of 'democratic painting' and at the same time to be convinced of the
value of an aristocratic order of society, is to be guilty of a
confusion of ideas which, ultimately, can lead only to disastrous
results in practical life.331 He identifies 'Ruler Art' as the art of
plenitude and claims its production to be dependent upon four conditions
which are quite inseparable from an aristocratic order of society,
"and which I therefore associate, without any hesitation as Nietzsche
does, with Higher Man." These conditions are: Long tradition under
the sway of noble and inviolable values, resulting in an accumula-
tion of will power; leisure which allows of meditation; the
disbelief in freedom for freedom's sake, without a purpose or an aim;
and, an order of rank according to which each is given a place in
keeping with his value, and authority and reverence are upheld.332

In the following I intend to demonstrate what Ludovici meant by
'Ruler Art', and his vital purpose for art in life. In Ludovici's
**Nietzsche and Art**, where he claims to confine himself strictly to
Nietzsche's aesthetic, Ludovici attempts to show that the highest art,
'Ruler Art', in which culture is opposed to natural rudeness, selection to natural chaos, and simplicity to natural complexity, can be the product only of an aristocratic society which observes in its traditions and active life the three aristocratic principles - culture, selection, and simplicity. Only the 'Ruler Artist', according to Ludovici's and Nietzsche's philosophical idealism, can make the world and Life full of form and attractions, as a valuation, and make it possible for man to become master of the world. It was the 'will to power' of the powerful that organised, ordered and schematized the world, and it was their will to prevail which made them proclaim their order and scheme of life as that which must be regarded as creation itself. Once reality had been vitally interpreted by the artist's mind, creating and naming actually became the same thing: "For to put a meaning into things was clearly to create them afresh - in fact, to create them literally." Thus, the world became man's work of art and nature was reduced to his chattel. It was man's 'will to power', which became creative in his highest specimen, the artist, which transfigured reality by means of human valuations and overcame becoming by falsifying it as being. And, to create a thing in the minds of the people was to create that people to: "for it is to have values in common that constitutes the people." The artist, following his divine inspiration to subdue the earth and to make it his, became the greatest stimulus to Life itself. It matters who interprets life as only the few can make a people think that life is really worth living. It is not a question of truth in the Christian and scientific sense, but of finding that belief, whether true or false, which most conduces to an exalted form of Life. A people become the creation of the artist whose greatest delight is to feel that his eyes, his ears, and his touch have become their eyes, and their ears,
and their touch. Their elation consists in seeing the world through his vital "artistic prisms", and in allowing "their higher man, to establish their type." The artist justifies his life by raising the community to its highest power: "by binding it to Life with the glories which he alone can see, and by luring it to the heights which he is the first to scale and to explore." The 'Dionysian artist', the prototype of all gods, exalts life, puts ugly reality into an art form, and makes life desirable for humanity. The function of art is the function of the ruler as it lures a people to a certain kind of Life. The vital values we hold concerning Life are either determined by art, or art lays stress upon certain vital values already established. The values beautiful and ugly, which the graphic arts either determine or accentuate, are but the outcome of other more fundamental values "which have ruled and moulded a race for centuries." As the artist accentuates or determines the qualities beautiful and ugly, he bears an intimate relation to the past and possible life of his people. Spurred by anarchy, his inspiration is government - to make things reflect him. But his will to stamp the nature of stability on becoming is a feeling of gratitude towards Life, "which makes him desire to rescue one beautiful body from the river of Becoming, and fix its image in the world." It is not the desire for being of Christianity which is based upon a loathing for Life and a weariness of it. The artist finds his greatest attraction in ugliness, by which Ludovici means disorder, and by converting it into beauty, or order, reaches the zenith of his power. In the graphic arts, which either determine or accentuates the vital values 'ugly' and 'beautiful', every artist who establishes his notion of what is subject-beauty, like every lover about to marry, either assails or confirms and consolidates the vital values of his race or people. The beauty of a person is the outcome of a long observance through
generations of the vital values peculiar to a race or people. Ugliness in the subject of art is the decadence of a 'type':

...It is the sign that certain features belonging to other people (hitherto called ugly according to the absolute biological standard of beauty of a race), are beginning to be introduced into their type. Or it may mean that the subject to be represented does not reveal that harmony and lack of contrast which the values of a people are capable of producing.

Beauty, in any person, being the result of a long and severe observance by his ancestors of a particular set of vital values, always denotes some definite attitude towards Life. The 'ruler artist' is he who, elevated by his love of Life, says 'yes' to his own 'type' and, in so doing, determines or accentuates the vital values of that type. His power lies in his vitally intimate association with a particular people. Art of any importance, must be based upon a race's or peoples particular group of vital values, otherwise, it is divorced from life. The 'Dionysian artist' cannot look at Life without enriching her. He periodically smashes Being in order to endure Becoming for the "joy and destruction of creation." A Superhuman spirit, he apotheosizes the 'type' of a people and stimulates them to a higher mode of life.

Ludovici found his ideal of 'ruler art', the bondage of art with Life, in Egyptian classicism. Not because he regarded a return to the 'type' of ancient Egypt as the only possible salvation of the graphic arts, which he dismissed as sheer romanticism, but because he saw in the spirit which led to Egyptian classicism, which he regarded as necessary to all great achievements, either in politics, art, or religion, that which we ought to prize and cherish, and which we now possess in only a decadent form. It is the spirit which will establish order at all costs, whose manner of exploiting 'higher man' is to look upon Life through their transfiguring vision. In ancient Egypt
we find the belief that restraint is necessary, and part of the art of life, and in order to have one group of advantages, another group must be sacrificed. This principle, sacrifice, is that which goes to rear a great people as all vital values, all art, and all life are dependent on it: "it is the principle of all great art, - and it is the principle of all great life." The people this principle of sacrifice reared, the ancient Egyptians, who bonded this life-principle in their art, communicate little to the modern age through their vital art. But, according to Ludovici, as every great artist and legislature should know, it is precisely upon the principle of sacrifice, that all great art and life repose. The symbolic representation of this life-principle, sacrifice, and its bondage in art, was achieved by the ancient Egyptians in the pyramid. Even their realistic portrait statues, which appear anomalous in the vital art of Egypt, can be explained. They were never intended to be works of 'Ruler Art', established to underline and emphasise the vital values of a race of people. They had a definite purpose, but quite foreign to that of vital art, - death: "with underground tombs and sarcophagi." Otherwise, Egyptian art is the apotheosis of a particular 'type'. They are what all art should be, a stimulus, and a spur to a life based upon a definite set of vital values. Ludovici saw the Egyptians' "wedlock of Art and Sociology" symbolised in the pyramid, the greatest artistic achievement that had been achieved, which in its form embodied all the highest qualities of great art, and all the highest principles of life. With all its six thousand years of age it stands on the threshold of the desert, on the threshold of chaos and disorder, where none but the wind attempts to shape and to form, "and reminds us of a master will that once existed and set its eternal stamp upon the face of the world in Egypt, so that mankind might learn whither mankind had risen or declined." In its synthesis of the three main canons, simplicity,
repetition and variety, nothing has ever excelled it in its 'mystic utterance' of the condition of the ideal state, in which every member takes his place and ultimately succeeds in holding 'higher man' uppermost; and in its revelation that man can attain to some height if he chooses.\textsuperscript{362} Ludovici thought Egyptian classicism was the product of a people reared by a definite set of inviolable vital values. Although, Ludovici did not think it could be revived in our democracy he did think it was the best example of 'Ruler Art' in man's history, and that the vital culture of Egypt at least afforded a criterion according to which contemporary art was putrescent.\textsuperscript{363}

However, the contemporary art critic's duties were useless as a practical pathology. It is the role of some greater pathologist, 'ruler artist' to discover what is wrong with life itself. Art is the bloom of life. If one objects to the bloom it is no use correcting that alone; one must correct the root - life. The task of correcting the root of art, life, belongs to the "artist legislator." The art critic, or minor pathologist, ought to write his report and send it up to a higher pathologist, a pathologist not of art, but of life. We all grow on a particular social tree whose arts whose "blooms" are the inevitable outcome of the tree's nature. It is futile to fulminate against the wrong blooms because they are the inevitable outcome of the tree, or living thing, from which the critic himself draws his sap.\textsuperscript{364} It was industry and commerce, the vulgar despotism, that had led to the spurning of all that constituted flourishing and desirable life. The last 'ruler artist' in England was Charles I, who opposed the uncontrolled movement of lethal taste that flouted all that made for desirable humanity. Artists, since the death of Charles I, should have formed themselves into a select aristocracy "in a population of hogs," and refused all intercourse.
with the hawkers and chapmen of the market place. However, the
tendency among artists had been to abet rather than to oppose the
grand movement of vulgarization, exploitation, and degeneracy which
reached its zenith in the last fifty years of the nineteenth century,
and became businessmen themselves.365 But, in essence, the artists
were only partly to blame. The graphic artist, does not create an
order of existence, "a scheme of life", which is the role of the
"poet - or artist legislator." The graphic artist is impelled to
his work through his exuberant joy over the order of life that the
vital 'artist-legislator' creates, and over the spirit which animates
it. Therefore, in an age without the 'artist-legislator' there is
neither architecture, sculpture or painting. In such a plight the
artist literally does not know what to express. When, in 1860, the
subject picture was proclaimed to be dead it was not the artists who
were at fault. It was, rather, due to the absence of a really exalted
equal 'artist-legislator' in Europe.366 And the remedy sought by
the graphic artist of the time, the regalvanisation of the graphic
arts by awakening a feverish interest in a new technique, was feeble
and futile; because it did not go to the root of Life, the real root
of the trouble. Divorced from a general ruling scheme of Life, the
graphic artist, drifted upon the seas of life like a rudderless
derelict. They should have laid down their palettes and declared
art to be impossible, unless a vital 'artist-legislator' arose
to give a fresh faith to a purposeless humanity.367 When the graphic
artist is not animated by a great scheme of life, graphic art loses
its vitality, the subject picture dies, and painting becomes merely
a means of expressing the ideosyncracies of individuals divorced from
any great vital arrangement or scheme.368

Life is a process of choosing and discarding correctly. To choose
and discard correctly leads to a permanence of flourishing life,
whereas, to choose and discard wrongly leads to death. Men choose and reject correctly only when they are guided by men of vital taste. Indeed, Ludovici regarded all great religions as sacerdotal attempts at perpetuating and preserving the vital taste of a few great men. Societies are established systems guided by the vital selections and rejectings of a few founders. The members of such societies see in their vital-taste' the only hope of conservation:

...and where the selections and rejectings, which constitute a scheme of life, have through the centuries proved their value as preservers of sound life, there is naturally a tendency in the people observing them to be intensely and obstinately conservative.

Only when the 'taste' of a founder has through the centuries failed to prove its value as a preserver of sound life are the people who have observed it revolutionary. The graphic artist is not, however, and never has been, responsible for the foundation of a scheme of life. Therefore, the graphic artist is essentially a dependent of the 'artist-legislator'. The graphic artist is no more than a civic arrangement, or a scheme of life become or becoming self-conscious. The graphic artist simply expresses the will behind it, he is not the will behind it. The minor artists (architects, sculptors, painters, musicians) are inspired by the vital 'artist legislator', whose scheme of life gives the minor artists their direction, their vital 'taste' for selection and the spirit of the interpretation of the life about them. The content of their work consists of the portion and kind of life chosen, and its interpretation in terms of the great living order to which the artist belongs.

Ludovici hoped for the awakening to the truth that the artist, the architect, the painter, and the poet are bankrupt unless some vital aim and aspiration, animate their eye, inspire them in their work, and kindle in them the passion for a particular 'type' of man.
on which they may lavish their eloquence, their chromatic, musical and architectural rhetoric, with conviction and power.  
The direst need of modern times is the artist legislator: "For, in order that fresh life and fresh type can be given to art, fresh vigour and a fresh type must first be given to life itself."  

Ludovici placed his hope for the regeneration of society and art in the promise of Nietzschean 'ruler artists', able to integrate and vitalise the nation through their culture. Subsequent generations, he hoped, would realise that the present plethora of social reform had one curious and universal trait - great unhappiness. But, for Ludovici, it is not a question of the quality of happiness failing anywhere, but its quality. Quality is quite as scarce above as it is below, although, it first began to leave the superior stratum, who had been scouting it for two hundred and fifty years with the advent of uncontrolled commerce and industry. Their favoured child had been quantity which could not provide joy or happiness in life. The power that discriminates between quality and quantity is taste - the vital power of the artist. By artist Ludovici does not mean "the commercial gang who now dub themselves artists", but the man who naturally knows and is the measure of all things. For two centuries and a half he had been deprived of power by those who usurped his place at the top. The true artist is the loving guardian of vital quality: "He rejoices in it, thrives on it, knows it, detects it, represents it, sings for it, dies for it." Until the martyrdom of Charles I, those at the top were guided by the dictates of vital taste. They, and their colleagues, the artists, were the depositories of quality through the ages and invoked its high authority at every moment of choice. This was the "most vital" function of aristocracy, and when it ceased the aristocrate themselves ceased to be. And, when
it did cease their damned in England an epoch in which no qualitative tradition, no qualitative example, any longer descended from the leaders to the followers in society. Ludovici’s remedy lay in regenerating the elite as ‘ruler-artists’.

It is most evident in his _A Defense of Aristocracy_. A text book for Tories. He wrote that human life, like any other kind of life, produces some flourishing and some less flourishing specimens. And, in order that flourishing life may be prolonged, multiplied, and enhanced on earth, the vital wants of flourishing life, its optimum of conditions, "must be made known and authoritatively imposed upon men by its representatives." Ludovici reckons the true representative of flourishing life are the artists, the men of vital taste. No committees or deliberative assemblies can form a substitute for him in this vital function.

If one's choice of ways and means, or one's 'taste', is such that when they become general tastes they lead to an ascent in Life, then 'unconsciously' one's body which is a specimen of flourishing life, is uttering the credo of flourishing life. But, if one's tastes are such that when they become general they lead to a descent in Life, then one's body is a specimen of impoverished life, and pronounces the lethal doctrine of decline. By artist, Ludovici does not mean a painter or a musician or an actor, but a man of vital taste who unhesitatingly knows what is right and wrong, and whose vital type only occurs two or three times in every generation of minor artists.

The people can only flourish if it is given a sound taste for discerning good from bad, that which is beneficial from that which is harmful, and healthy, vital conduct from sick, degenerate conduct. It is through the neglect of these principles of Life that lethal taste prevails today. Real beauty is impossible without regular and stable living, lasting over generations.
real Art is impossible without surplus health and energy, the outcome of generations of careful storing and garnering of vital forces, and without that direction and purpose which the supreme artist – the tasteful legislator – alone can give to the minor artists, be they painters, architects, or musicians within his realm.\[381\]

For the unbroken tradition, on which these things depend, to be established, there must be great stability and permanence in the institutions of a race, and it is the direction of flourishing life alone, that can reveal the vital taste and judgement necessary for the preservation of such stability and permanence: "For stability and permanence are desired only when beauty is present." When a people have achieved real beauty, and caught a glimpse of this beauty in all departments of their social life, they must cry for conservation rather than change.\[382\] It is only then that change is dreaded; for change threatens to rob the beauty from the face, the limbs and trunk of their civilisation.\[383\] The 'tutorship of ruling' involves the responsibility of establishing a great and vital culture that is sufficiently powerful to integrate a whole people, and ensure the inevitability of its expansion over the face of the earth.\[384\]

'Ruler artists' like Manu, Moses and Mohammed, "arch-geniuses in the art of pia fraus", thoroughly and subtly contrived to weave a vital religion into the hygiene and food of a people so as to build up a fresh human physique that might be called either a true Brahmin, a true Israelite, or a true Mohammedan.\[385\] They effected a deep racial act of consolidation through their vital art,\[386\] and bound the race or people by an internal relationship, based upon the most elaborate prescriptions of general conduct, hygiene, and spiritual occupation, until ultimately this internal relationship was stamped upon the faces and bodies of the people.\[387\] Life, the process of living, is a matter of constantly choosing and rejecting.\[388\] This choosing and rejecting in life is a matter of life and death. There can be only one opinion that is right, and another that is wrong. For some mens'
opinions on vital questions, by being erroneous, must lead to death. Therefore, 'taste', which is the power of discerning the right from the wrong in vital matters is the greatest power of life as it leads to permanence of life, in those who possess it and can exercise it.

Therefore, 'taste', which is the power of discerning the right from the wrong in vital matters is the greatest power of life as it leads to permanence of life, in those who possess it and can exercise it. The elite that Ludovici says possesses vital 'taste' in his A Defence of Aristocracy. A textbook for Tories are the 'ruler artists', the exemplars of flourishing life. The only source to which we can turn for the needs, the desires, the likes and dislikes of flourishing life, is not the mass, but the exemplar of flourishing life: "His voice utters the taste of flourishing life; it is the canon and criterion of all that leads to permanence and resistance in life - it is Taste." The art and culture of the minor artists without direction from the 'ruler artists', from above, without a grand scheme of life providing the vital taste for the minor artists' "interpretation of life - such art is mere make believe, mere affected fooling (his italics)." For the architect, the sculptor, the painter, the poet, the musician and the actor are essentially dependants - "dependants on the superior man who is the artist legislator," If the ruler artist, or "artist legislator", is non-existent, as Ludovici thinks he is today, his dependants no longer have that momentum, direction and guidance in vital taste which their function requires to promote life:

...That is why their function becomes meaningless and erratic, and their aims become anarchical, unless there be that in their life and their nation which gives their art a meaning, a deep necessity and an inspiration.

Democracy means death because it does not take into account the vital element of 'taste'. It meant inviting Life's adversary to the council-board for 'taste' is a power of life. Ludovici reckoned that the healthy regimen of the Catholic, with his fast days and lenten abstinence, and his festivals of dionysian indulgence, is following
the canonised vital 'taste' of some of the greatest specimens of flourishing life that arose during the Middle Ages. Ludovici reckoned that artists are the only kindred spirits to the aristocrat in the whole of a nation, because of their common recognition of the vital importance of 'taste'. He lamented what he regarded as the growing breach between aristocracy and culture, the first signs of which were visible from the eighteenth century.

Ludovici's notion of vital 'ruler artists' is also found in his A Defence of Conservatism. In the latter he claims that the phenomenon of a 'culture potential' explains the fundamental divergence between the men who incline instinctively to vital qualitative values, and those who incline instinctively to lethal quantitative values, and the social form which each evolves. A nation divided between these two 'types' cannot find a compromise, a complete fusion of the two social forms is never possible, and the result is internecine warfare. The body of people inclining to quantitative values, tend to instability and futile change, because it never perceives the necessary relation between time and quality. Its conservatism will be largely self-interest; and if it possesses nothing, its conservatism will be feeble. On the conservative side, the members of this body will be unreliable, and on the non-conservative side, anarchical. Their culture potential will reach its limits in commercial work. The body of people inclining to qualitative values, which will also draw its recruits from every social class, will, on the other hand, tend to stability and preservation, "not only of things but also of family traits and strains". Its conservatism will not be merely self-interest, it will consist of a wish to retain a stable
environment, often against self-interest, for the maturing of its seeds of quality. On the merely conservative side, the members of this body will be principled, and on the aristocratic side they will be patrons, selectors, and cultivators of lasting and beautiful things, whether in the personal or chattels of the nation. The culture potential of these qualitativists will reach its limits in perfection of social organisation, and in the beauty of the people and of their environmental conditions. The relatively small concern about material success which characterises the latter body, the concern which is largely swamped by the primary impulse to quality and beauty, would lead to their death at the hands of the 'quantitativists'. And, then that part of the nation which supplies it with its most valuable vital quality, and therefore its chief equipment for conservation, would tend to die. It is only through the rule of vital qualitativists, the elite, that a nation's conservation can be ensured. Ludovici demonstrates the latter by the following simple parable:

Beauty contemplating her features in a mirror knows but one devil, which with all her might she wishes to cast out, and that is Change. To the skilful beautifying surgeon who offers to improve the line of her face by an operation, however slight, she promptly shows the door. And she is right (his italics).

Ludovici thought only a few contemporary artists approached his vital ideal of art. They were the following:

Van Gogh and Gaugin.

Ludovici reckoned that in the works of Van Gogh and Gaugin something much more vital was on view than a mere collection of modern works of art. At last the Cavalier element was beginning to recover some of its former strength and he thought it but a forecast of future
events in the concrete-world of politics and national life. Or,
at least when Ludovici left the Sonderbund Ausstellung in the middle
of July 1912, he reckoned that amidst the smell of gunpowder and
above the scrimmage he saw Van Gogh and Gaugin, like two gallant
veterans, directing the cause of flourishing life. For they were
deserters from the other side, and knew their opponents weakest points.
But, it was not victory that Ludovici saw, rather it was a very
slight change in the fortunes of battle: "a mere wave of enthusiasm
and trust on the Cavalier side - a mere wave of depression and
greater exhaustion among the Roundheads." 402

Those who persisted in their negative attitude to life, the 'Roundheads'
and the Puritans, lost heavily in the post-impressionist movement.
It was in this movement that the world of art first realised the
great vital need, a closer relationship to life. The technique of
the post-impressionist revealed a tendency to sacrifice values to
colour. Apart from the fact that pure colour and line-technique is
associated with Egyptian and Greek classicism, Ludovici thought it
compels a painter to practice three desirable virtues: A pure colour
technique forces the painter to a more masterly expression of reality;
it deprives him of compromise and of 'democratic' blending, and leaves
bravery, the ability to face and control contrasts, as the only
alternative; In as much as it betrays a love of brightness, it is a
sign of a more positive attitude towards life.

The manner in which Van Gogh and Gaugin replied to the question of
what was the good of impressionist technique without the sublime
inspiration of a worthy object and purpose constituted them deserters
from the ranks of their old fellows - "the insurrectionists, the
Roundheads." But, in claiming that man was the only fit subject for
pictorial rhetoric they realised the great deficiency of their age: "How where was the man or the race of men in their day who could inspire the artist with a passion for man?" Gauguin, in despair, actually migrated to the Marquesas Isles and to Tahiti, and there not only painted negresses, but, to his cost, also fought Western culture whenever and wherever he could.

Van Gogh's art, for Ludovici, was a bridge leading out of the "negative revolution" of the latter half of the nineteenth century — impressionism. His fame is all the greater as he lived in a degenerate age. The principle figures in the "Grand-Rebellion drama" of art, in the preceding century, were themselves innovators, renovators and subvertors. But, they revolted against sickness in an age of sickness, and assumed the title of rebel with both pride and dignity. Ludovici then proceeds to locate Van Gogh in the 'revolutionary drama' of the preceding century. He concedes that though Van Gogh was an impressionist, Van Gogh strove to surpass Manet, Monet, Renoir, Degas and Whistler. Though the latter's art procedure may have been superior, Van Gogh's aims were higher and more vital, he realised more keenly what was wrong and what was desirable. Van Gogh was an instinctive artist, absorbed in nature, and thoroughly at ease as her interpreter.

Ludovici selected Van Gogh, and a little before him his friend Gaugin, as the only two artists in the impressionistic and post-impressionistic movements of the late nineteenth century, that he approved. Both Van Gogh and Gaugin were artists of 'sound instincts' as they had recognised the lack of the "great legislator". They realised that beauty can only be traced to man; and without man beauty could not exist on earth.
The beauty of Van Gogh's technique and the characteristic that Ludovici chiefly admired in his works is the glorification of colour and neglect of values. He admired colour more than values because technique should be important only as a means of betraying how a man approaches and deals with reality. All the virtues of a good technique are traceable to vital human standards and virtues. He reckoned that if one compares Van Gogh's pictures with the funereal work produced by the Glasgow school:

...you will be convinced of the difference between the bright, laughing, yea-saying attitude to life and the dark, gloomy, negative, churlish, Puritanical, and, in many respects, essentially British attitude to life. 412

Van Gogh turned his back on the negative love of landscape, in which man or the hand of man in entirely absent, inspired by romantics like Rousseau and Schiller. 413 After much tribulation, and the gravest and most depressing doubts, Van Gogh realised the fundamental truth that art can find its meaning only in life, "and in its function as a life force." Therefore, the highest art must be that which seeks its meaning in the highest form of life, and Van Gogh again realised the truth that the highest form of life is man. 414 He realised that art was an expression of life itself. 415 From a negative impressionist, Van Gogh became more positive to life, and this healthy development led him to the inevitable - man himself. 416 But, Van Gogh, was desperate, he was doubtful of the existence of man with the greatest promise of life. Van Gogh turned to the peasant as he could find no other 'type' worthy of his vital pictorial advocacy. 417 His splendid tribute to Christ as a marvelous artist, a modeller and creator of men, was, according to Ludovici, the half-realised longing that all true vital artists must feel for that sublime figure, the ruler-artist:

...the artist-legislator who is able to throw the scum and dross of decadent civilisation back into the crucible of life, in order to make men afresh according to a more healthy and more vigorous measure. 418
Besides Van Gogh, Gaugin knew that there was something nobler than the peasant, but did not know where to find him. And, in doing this they were only doing what the whole of Europe would soon be doing, as art and life are intimately related, the former indicating the direction life is taking. Gaugin was a man who felt more keenly than any other European of his day, according to Ludovici, the impossibility of consecrating his powers to the exaltation of the modern white man with whom he was contemporaneous. Comparatively early in life he faced the truth that the modern European, could not and must not, be the 'type' of the future. His parched thirst for a more positive 'type' drove him like a haunted explorer all over the world. His influence was deep and lasting on Van Gogh. Since Gaugin perceived the degeneracy of the highest subject of art, the civilised white man, he was really a vital artist without employment. Nevertheless, Gaugin and Van Gogh had probed deeply enough to see that the wrongness of man had something to do with the wrongness of art itself.

But, for Ludovici, although these two exceptions, Van Gogh and Gaugin, saw the root of the cause of the degeneracy of art, impoverished life, they, and the impressionists, secessionists, and post-impressionists, had come and gone, without modifying the chaos of values and degenerate manhood. This could only be remedied by 'ruler-artists' – which only Van Gogh and Gaugin saw the need of.

Auguste Rodin

Ludovici’s great admiration for Van Gogh and Gaugin was, perhaps, overshadowed by his even greater admiration for the heroic personality and aesthetic vitalism of Auguste Rodin. His encomium of Auguste Rodin
is chiefly to be found in Ludovici's *Personal Reminiscences of Auguste Rodin*, published by John Murray in 1926. Chapters two to six of the latter were previously published by the *Cornhill Magazine* in July and August of 1923, December of 1925, and January and February of 1926.  

For Ludovici, Auguste Rodin's art was distinguished by its closeness to life. The Salon Committee were so puzzled by the extreme realism of the treatment and the perfection of Rodin's "The Age of Bronze", that some expressed the suspicion that the statue had been made from casts taken direct from life. His "Balzac" statue cleaves the air like a living thing naturally springing from the soil. Ludovici writes of Rodin's "Thinker" statue as massive, powerful, and vital. The big upper limbs hang heavily from the shoulders as if they were really of flesh and bone, "the whole effect is one of prodigious though restrained vitality."  

Ludovici also admired Rodin personally. Especially, as his nature was one of "a peculiar mixture of apparently irreconcilible extremes." On the one hand, Rodin had strong monarchical sympathies, and on the other hand he revealed the most tender concern for the character and
welfare of the common folk, rather like William Cobbett, and socialists, according to Ludovici. In regard to modern democratic assemblies, Rodin was as ruthless in his criticism as the "most hide-bound Tory", but appalled at the conditions of the working classes. Rodin maintained that 'progress' is society's worst form of cant, according to Ludovici's recollections of him. Sometimes, according to Ludovici, Rodin's views would recall those of Cobbett, Ruskin, William Morris, or Samuel Butler. Particularly, when he spoke of the influence of machinery upon the masses of all modern industrial communities. Rodin possessed a "cold and logical realism".

Critics might have accused Rodin of not achieving a fidelity to nature, but Rodin would have told them that he saw nature more vital, more highly energetic, than they did: "He saw it as it is - that is to say alive, with the sap of life running through its form (his italics)." In his "La Pensee", Rodin had left the marble block on which the head reposes in a rough state, to see whether he could make the head so exuberantly alive, that it imparted vitality even to the inert mass of marble beneath it. In order to make his busts quiver with life, as though blood were pulsating beneath them, Rodin deliberately added little nodules to them. Ludovici joined Rodin, as his private secretary, when Rodin was sixty six years of age and yet he still possessed the capacity to feel and to respond freshly and powerfully, in spite of advancing years, to the harmony of life and art. Rodin, like Ludovici, found his ideal in Greek classicism. He was also an earnest and enthusiastic admirer of the Gothic. Ludovici reckoned that the evolution of sculpture from the ancient Greeks, via the Romans, to our own time, had revealed, except for periods of decline, an ever-increasing fluidity and nervousness of form. Rigidity and vigour gradually diminished, until with Donatello a more delicate
and supple form was attained: "It is—as if Christian civilisation had multiplied and rarified the soul of humanity and enabled man to see certain things more sympathetically and less simply."

Ludovici reckoned that although Rodin appreciated this truth and aspired to the Greek classicism of Pheidias in many of his pieces, his natural vein lay in the direction of the Gothic. In Rodin's sculpture there is a movement, a swing, a freedom which is more Gothic than classic. In Gothic sculpture, according to Ludovici, there is an intensity of animation and expression, a restlessness of form and line, which is never encountered in the Greek or Roman. They, and the growth of natural science, represent part of the asceticism of man's grasp of life and nature for which the soul-searching creed of Christianity was responsible. The quality of repose in the sculpture of the ancient Greeks was a manifestation of the serenity which belongs to a people not yet disturbed by self-doubt and self-contempt. Everything that had appeared in Europe since the fall of the Roman Empire was more disturbing and nervous. Ludovici, thought Rodin was a supremely gifted exponent of this "strange accretion" received by the mind of man after the age of classic Greece.

However, Rodin saw life more piercingly than his predecessors. He discovered through hard manual toil and the incessant study of nature, a "magic means" whereby what he saw could be adequately communicated. The first of these requires the understanding that sculpture has been produced by a process the exact converse of nature. Nature, works from within, outwards. This fact, recognised by Rodin, taught him where the pitfalls in sculpture lay. Sculpture is the production of a form by peripheral processes, and is therefore the converse of nature's method. A sculpture of a man is an object which has acquired shape from the outside, as if by corrugations of its periphery, whereas...
"A man is a conglomeration of cells; that have grown and pushed the air aside from an inner necessity." Rodin reckoned that all ordinary sculpture retains the signs of having been formed from the outside, rather than of having cleaved the air in expanding. Rodin's object consisted in manipulating the medium of expression so as to produce by art a form that seemed to be created by natural laws. Rodin informed Ludovici that it was only when he had succeeded in appreciating the difference between life and sculpture that he had begun to produce living sculpture:

"Look at every part of a given form", he would say, "as the limit of a thickness rather than a surface in length; and every point in that form as the extremity of a diameter directed at you, rather than as a slope or plain stretching across your line of vision, and you will have grasped my method of seeing what I am modelling.

According to Rodin's criterion, Ludovici claimed to be able to distinguish between the flat sculpture of a poor sculptor and the work that breathed life, that conveys vitality cubically - in thicknesses. Rodin had not merely discovered a successful technique, but wrested a secret from life itself.

Ludovici reckoned that superimposed on Rodin's first "vital principle", that the sculptured form should have the qualities of natural form which consists in having grown outward from a centre, of having invaded space from an inner necessity, which he achieved by disciplining himself "to feel and understand all the surfaces of a form, not as planes in length, but as extremities of diameters pointing at him, as thicknesses vibrating with life through their whole form", was a second life principle - that of movement. His figures, already vital as the outcome of the first principle, are given the additional semblance of animation by being represented as carrying through a bodily movement. The sculptor seems doomed to
represent only immobility; because apparently he can seize only one movement in progression, and has to give the anatomical conditions of that one movement. And, if this is so, one of the principal characteristics of life is wholly beyond the reach of the graphic arts. But, Rodin had resolved it by realising that any attempt to seize one movement alone in progression was fatal to the illusion of movement.\textsuperscript{452} The method of the photograph is the wrong one if the object is to give the illusion of life and movement by a single image. The eye differs from the camera in being able to record without confusion the merging of one movement into another, the blending of one movement in progression with another movement. Two positions, therefore, conceived as one, give the impression of movement even in the static sculpture or in the drawn outline.\textsuperscript{453}

With these vital artistic formulae Rodin could not fail to achieve extremely real representations of life.\textsuperscript{454} Despite the extreme mobility of the features of Rodin's statue, "Victor Hugo", Ludovici writes, that at every point on its surface one is conscious of the diameter directed at one and receding backwards through living matter; the periphery of it appears to press outwards from an inner necessity, and gives the illusion of life, although it has been formed from outside.\textsuperscript{455}

However, Rodin did more than study life sedulously and apply its principles to his art and wrest from the living form the secret of its vital make-up, he worshipped human beauty.\textsuperscript{456} Never does he present us with anything sick or degenerate, the exhausted 'type' of the modern world, which is freely chosen quite uncritically by less vigilant modern sculptors. All of his figures are patterns of health and vigour.\textsuperscript{456} They breathe youth and unspent energy. His 'taste' was healthy as he preferred gross splendour in human stature, rather
than delicate and morbid refinement. Ludovici eulogised the "power and quivering vitality of Rodin's art." He reckoned that it must be obvious to the student of Rodin's works that a disparity exists between the style of his plasters and bronzes and that of his marbles. This is due to the fact that the marbles are chiselled interpretations by other artists, and do not come direct from Rodin's own hands: "The latter [marbles] are always smoother, bristle less with life, and show a shade less vigour than the former [plasters and bronzes]. They retain his quivering vitality as through a veil."

Ludovici reckoned that as an artist Rodin ranked as the most thoughtful performer of his century. His naturally robust constitution drove all his native gifts to the limit of their development. Rodin became an "engine of such formidable power" that he easily towered above the greatest of his contemporaries. As a sculptor Ludovici thought Rodin was certainly the greatest product of the purely Gothic tradition. And his works the finest example, in his century, of the successful attempt to free the plastic medium from the limitations inherent in it. He portrayed the living form as no other sculptor of his century succeeded in portraying it.

Ludovici cautioned us not to confound Rodin's opposition to official art with that of the impressionist painters. Rodin was much too earnest an admirer of Greek classicism, to be able to desire the impressionists' prescription. He was, however, an avowed enemy of the pseudo-Greek classicism of his day. Whilst technical reforms took a very valuable and important place with Rodin, unlike the impressionists' they were used for the purpose of attaining to greater fidelity in the representation of the living form: "They aimed at rescuing the living form from people who had become mere
caricaturists in marble and stone." Rodin never dignified technical innovations with the status of ultimate desiderata. They were always subordinated to his greatest object, which was the artistic representation of life itself. Rodin did not mock the academicians who had made the subject picture and the subject sculpture an absurdly inadequate representation by banishing the subject altogether, as the impressionists had, but showed how the subject picture could be so reverently treated as to be honourably restored to its proper place in the plastic arts. He rescued the discredited subject from the ignominy into which it had fallen, and in so doing ultimately triumphed in teaching the 'Graeco-Latin' academicians what true Greek classicism was. He embodied in his sculpture the "principles which made not only Greek but also Gothic sculpture the living thing that it is." He embodied in his sculpture the "principles which made not only Greek but also Gothic sculpture the living thing that it is." The impressionists were typical of their age, opportunists and democrats, who sacrificed every institution that is discredited not through any fault inherent in its nature, but through those who mismanage it, rather than reconstituting it and constructively restoring it. In contrast, Rodin never claimed that he had introduced anything fresh, but that he had rediscovered what the Greeks and the Goths had possessed, and what his contemporaries entirely lacked: "He read the secret of the life that animated the antique." Rodin had played the most valuable and important part in the great movement which, beginning about the year 1860, continued until the advent of the cubists and futurists, because it led back to life and humanity, and, above all, to a healthy view of both. Rather than call Rodin the sculptor of impressionism, Ludovici preferred to class Rodin as a mediaevalistic reactionary: ...who, with all the thoroughness and ardour of the mediaeval artist in his constitution, strove to
Emile Zola

Ludovici reckoned Emile Zola, with his "robust realism", had long before the twentieth century supplied the clue to the solution of the role of the subject in art when, in 1866, he had said: "Une oeuvre d'art est un coin de la creation va a travers un temperament."

Ludovici claimed that Zola had described the first essential stage in every artistic inspiration. A part of life as seen through an artist's temperament is indeed the detonator of the whole concatenation of events culminating in the completed work and giving art its validity.

Augustus John and Frederick Catchpole

Ludovici liked the art of Augustus John because he sought for representation the finest and healthiest 'type' of men or women, and found joy only in the expression of that 'type'. He declared his vital 'taste' in humanity. Similarly, Ludovici thought Frederick Catchpole particularly good because of the vitality of his art: "He has a great command of his medium and his people are all breathing and alive."

Now, as I hope to have demonstrated in this chapter, Ludovici adopted his vital aesthetic from Nietzsche, and it formed the basis for his critique of modern art. He confused his political with his 'aesthetic' categories in a totalitarian conception of culture and art which is fascist. He believed that culture and
art are peculiar to different races and of vital significance to their life. The latter comprises Ludovici's rationale for an authoritarian direction of national culture and art. He intended that his fascist conception of culture and art be regarded as conservative.

I shall conclude this chapter by demonstrating that Ludovici believed his desiderata of culture and art were fulfilled in National Socialist Germany. Ludovici thought that one of the elements in national socialism which owe their inspiration to Nietzsche, "and bear in mind not only Adolf Hitler's sincere and earnest admiration of Nietzsche's philosophy and his great friendship with Frau Forster-Nietzsche, Nietzsche's sister, but also Alfred Rosenberg's strong sympathy with the Nietzschean outlook", was its ideal of culture. Ludovici believed that in the National Socialist view of culture we are left in no doubt regarding the profound influence Nietzsche was exerting over his native country. At the Nuremberg Opera House on September 9, 1936, Ludovici thought Hitler had made it quite clear that he could not regard art as an international affair:

"all this chatter of internationalism in Art is as idiotic as it is dangerous". He argued that since Art is the expression of a people's life and the bloom on the tree of their values, and that "no man can bear any intimate relation to any cultural achievement which does not have its roots in his own origins and soil", it is as ridiculous to expect a national Art-product to have international validity or to make the same appeal everywhere, as to suppose that a German or an English national can feel the same emotions when reading another nation's history as when reading his own.

Hitler concluded that culture is invariably the product of discipline and authority within a particular national unit. Ludovici thought that Hitler, in upholding that culture invariably springs from the work of the legislator who first establishes the vital values of a
people, that culture is the "civilised product of political leadership" and "just as a Christian Age could have only a Christian Art, so a National-Socialist Age could have only a National-Socialist art", was a perfectly consistent Nietzschean. \(^{476}\) Ludovici believed that Hitler, in explaining the truth that any art which is independent of the vital values of the people among which it finds its being is of minor importance, was following Nietzsche:

"No people could live", said Nietzsche, "that did not in the first place value. If it would maintain itself, however, it must not value as its neighbour doth... values did man stamp upon things only that he might preserve himself."

To have the same art as everybody else, therefore, would be to value as everybody else values, and this to a people means their death. The idea of an international art in present day conditions is erroneous; homogeneity of 'type' and values is still remote: "What does all art do?" Nietzsche asks. "Does it not praise? Does it not glorify? Does it not select? Does it not bring into prominence? In each of these cases it weakens or strengthens certain valuations?".\(^{477}\) According to Ludovici, Hitler had made it plain that his own and his colleagues' efforts were concentrated on restoring to the German people the traditions of their nation, their characteristic institutions and values, out of which a National-Socialist art would necessarily grow, as did a Judaeo-Graeco-Christian art out of a Europe made homogeneous in spirit by the Hellenistic, Jewish and other values spread by the early Church. Here again, Ludovici thought Hitler and the National-Socialists were fulfilling Nietzsche's promise, and quoted Nietzsche to reinforce his claims:

"The essential thing in heaven and earth", said Nietzsche, "is apparently that there should be long obedience in the same direction; that there comes about and has always come about in the long run something which has made life worth living - for instance, virtue, art, music, dancing, ..., spirituality, etc..., ... Even the beauty of a race
or family, the pleasantness and kindness of their whole demeanour, is acquired by effort; like genius it is the final result of the accumulated labour of generations.\textsuperscript{478}

Again, in Hitler's insistence on beauty in his same address of September 9, 1936, at the Opera House in Nuremberg, Ludovici thought Hitler revealed the Nietzschean influence in his vital outlook:

"We of the National-Socialist Party love health", he declared, "The best of our nation's stock, in body and soul gives us our standard, and all we demand from our art is the glorification of this standard. The first precepts of our beauty will always be health."\textsuperscript{479}

Ludovici thought Nietzsche was writing the same as the above as early as 1888:

From the physiological standpoint, everything ugly weakens and depresses man. It reminds him of danger, decay, impotence... Ugliness is understood to signify a hint and a symptom of degeneration; that which reminds us however remotely of degeneracy, impels us to the judgement 'ugly'... A certain hatred expresses itself here. What is it that man hates? - Without a doubt it is the decline of his type. In this respect his hatred springs from the deepest instincts of the race. There is, however, caution, profundity and far-reaching vision in this hatred - it is the most profound hatred that exists. On its account alone Art is profound.\textsuperscript{480}

Ludovici thought that the emphasis Hitler made on this prerequisite – beauty, the way he linked it up with the demands he made of a vital national art, and his idea that the best of his nation's stock should be the vital standard glorified by the national art, warranted his acceptance as a Nietzschean:

...all the elements in his memorable address, down to the very notion of a national Art as the glorifier of a type, reveal him and his associates not merely as a new and potent force for the sanitation of European humanity (a force which is even now inspiring our own people), but also certainly as followers of Nietzsche, or, to put it moderately, as influenced by the poet-philosophers teachings.\textsuperscript{481}


6. Albert Ludovici Jnr., op.cit., p.70.


8. Grant M. Walters, op.cit.


11. ibid., p.152.


17. Wallace Martine, op. cit. p.213.


25. ibid., p.262.

26. ibid.


32. ibid., p.419.


34. ibid., p.xii.


36. ibid.,p.86.

37. ibid.,p.77.

38. ibid.,p.82.

39. ibid.,p.111.

41. ibid., pp.91-92.


43. ibid., p.xv.

44. idem., *Man's Descent from the Gods; or, the complete case against prohibition* (London: William Heinemann, 1921), p.224.


51. ibid., p.180.


57. ibid., p.269.

58. idem., *Man's Descent from the Gods; or, the complete case against prohibition* (London: William Heinemann, 1921), p.221.

59. idem., *Catherine Doyle; the romance of a thrice-married lady* (London: Hutchinson [1919]), p.16.


64. ibid., pp.xiv-xv.

65. ibid., p.xv.


67. ibid., p.xi.

68. ibid., p. xiii.

69. ibid., p. xiv.


71. ibid., p.xxiii.

72. ibid., p.xxiii.

73. ibid., p. xxxv.

74. ibid., p.xxv.


76. ibid. p.4.

77. ibid. p.5.

78. ibid. p.12.

Notes to Chapter 3.


82. ibid., p.21.

83. ibid., pp.99-100.

84. ibid. p.103.

85. ibid., p.119.


87. ibid.


94. ibid., p.xii.

95. ibid., p.xv.

96. ibid., p.xvi.

97. ibid., p.xviii.

98. ibid., p.xix.

99. ibid., p.xx.

100. ibid., p.xxxii.


102. ibid., pp.190-191.


105. ibid., p. 107.

106. ibid., p. 108.

107. ibid., p. 110.


110. George F.W. Hegel, Vorlesungen Neber Aesthetick, (Dritter Abschnitt); quoted in Anthony Mario Ludovici, ibid.


114. ibid., p.13.

115. ibid.,p.12.


118. ibid., p.81.

119. ibid., footnote to p.182.


122. ibid., pp.68-69.

123. ibid., pp. 76-77.

124. ibid., p.25.

125. ibid., p.27.

126. ibid., p.32.

127. ibid., p.33.

128. ibid., p.34.

129. ibid., p.63.
Notes to Chapter 3


132. ibid., p.47.

133. ibid., p.45-46.

134. ibid., p.37.

135. ibid., p.43.

136. ibid., p.45.

137. ibid., pp.46-47.

138. ibid., pp.49-50.

139. ibid., p.52.

140. ibid., p.176.

141. ibid., p.181.

142. ibid., p.187.


144. ibid., p.248.


147. ibid., p.222.


149. ibid, p.173.


153. ibid., p.13.


155. ibid., p.174.

156. ibid., pp.174-175.

158. ibid., p. 80.


160. ibid., p. 55.

161. ibid., p. 56.


163. idem., *Man's Descent from the Gods; or, the complete case against prohibition* (London: William Heinemann, 1921), p. 84.


165. ibid., pp. 94-95.

166. ibid., pp. 95-96.

167. ibid., p. 57.

168. ibid.

169. ibid., pp. 57-58.

170. ibid., p. 58.

171. ibid., p. 59.

172. ibid., p. 60.


177. ibid. p. 143.

178. ibid., p. 162.

179. ibid., p. 168.


183. Anthony Mario Ludovici, Mansel Fellowes, A novel (London: Grant Richards, 1918), p.44.

184. ibid., p.48.

185. ibid., p.159.


187. ibid., pp.454-455.


194. ibid., p.46.

195. ibid., p.47.

196. ibid., p.48.

197. ibid., p.49.

198. ibid., p.50.

199. ibid., p.51.

200. ibid., p.52.

201. ibid., pp.52-53.

202. ibid., p.53.


205. ibid., p.56ff.


207. ibid., p.125.

208. ibid., pp.144-145.
Notes to Chapter 3


211. ibid., pp. 200-201.

212. ibid., p.201.


215. ibid., p.66.

216. ibid., pp.69-70.

217. ibid., pp. 70-71.

218. ibid., pp.74-75.

219. ibid., p.120.

220. ibid., pp.120-121.

221. ibid., p.128.

222. ibid., pp. 128-129.

223. ibid., p.131.

224. ibid., p.32.

225. ibid., p.168ff.

226. ibid., p.177.

227. ibid., p.179.

228. ibid., pp.180-181.

229. ibid., p.186.

230. ibid., p.187.

231. ibid., p.190.

232. ibid., p.191.

233. ibid., p.199.


235. ibid., pp.211-212.

236. ibid., p.218.

237. ibid., p.219.

238. ibid., p.235.

240. ibid., p. 24.

241. ibid., footnote to p. 24.

242. ibid., p. 24.


244. ibid., p. 431.

245. ibid., pp. 430-431.

246. ibid., pp. 431-432.


252. ibid., p. xxxv.

253. ibid., pp. xliii - xlv.


256. idem, *Man's Descent from the Gods; or, the complete case against prohibition* (London: William Heinemann, 1921), p. 232.

257. ibid., p. 235ff.

258. ibid., p. 236.

259. ibid., p. 241.


261. ibid., p. 30.

262. idem., *Lysistrata; or, Woman's Future and Future Woman* (London: Kegan Paul, [1924]), p. 110.

Notes to Chapter 3


266. ibid., p.189.

267. ibid., pp.344-387.

268. ibid., p.348.

269. ibid., p.356.

270. ibid., p.362.

271. ibid., pp.365-366.

272. ibid., p.375.

273. ibid., pp.484-485.


276. ibid., p.105.


278. ibid., p.239.

279. ibid., p.240.

280. ibid., p.241.

281. ibid., p.242.


284. idem., The False Assumption of "Democracy"(London: Heath Cranton, [1921]), p.117.

285. idem., Lysistrata; or, Woman's Future and Future Woman (London: Kegan Paul, [1924]), p.25.


288. ibid., p.10.

290. ibid., p.12.


292. ibid., p.15.

293. ibid., p.16-17.

294. ibid., p.17.

295. ibid., p.20.

296. ibid., p.22.

297. ibid., pp22-23.

298. ibid., p.23.

299. ibid., p.24.

300. ibid., pp.26-27.

301. ibid., p.30.

302. ibid., p.31.

303. ibid., p.32.

304. ibid., p.34.

305. ibid., pp.34-35.

306. ibid., p.35.

307. ibid., p.36.


310. ibid., p.7.

311. ibid., pp.16-16.

312. ibid., p.17.

313. ibid., p.23.

314. ibid., p.181.


317. ibid., pp.9-10.
Notes to Chapter 3


334. *ibid.*, p.75.

335. *ibid.*, pp.75-76.

336. *ibid.*, p.76.

337. *ibid.*, p.77.

338. *ibid.*, p.79.


Notes to Chapter 3.


342. ibid., pp.89-90.

343. ibid., p.91.

344. ibid., p.96.


346. ibid., p.115.

347. ibid., p.118.

348. ibid., p.130.

349. ibid., pp.131-132.


351. ibid., p.135.

352. ibid., p.137.

353. ibid., p.140.

354. ibid., p.148.

355. ibid., p.169.

356. ibid., pp.ix-x.

357. ibid., p.223.

358. ibid., p.226.

359. ibid., p.228.

360. ibid., p.229.

361. ibid., p.232.

362. ibid., p.234.

363. ibid., pp.234-235.


367. ibid., p.153.


370. ibid., p.280.


372. ibid., p.xxxvii.


374. ibid., pp.8-9.

375. ibid., p.9.

376. ibid., p.10.


378. ibid., p.4.

379. ibid., footnote to p.4.

380. ibid., p.24.

381. ibid., pp.27-28.

382. ibid., p.28.

383. ibid., pp.29-30.

384. ibid., p.98.

385. ibid., p.169.

386. ibid., p.170.

387. ibid., p.171.

388. ibid., p.240.

389. ibid., p.241.

390. ibid., p.242.

391. ibid., pp.244-245.

392. ibid., p.248.

393. ibid., p.251.

394. ibid., p.254.

395. ibid., p257.

396. ibid., pp.395-396.

397. ibid., p.418.
Notes to Chapter 3


400. ibid., p.41.

401. ibid., pp.41-42.


406. ibid., p.xvii.

407. ibid., pp.xx-xxi.

408. ibid., p.xxvii.

409. ibid., p.xxi.

410. ibid., p.xxvii.

411. ibid., p.xxix.

412. ibid., pp.xxxi-xxxii.

413. ibid., p.xxxi,

414. ibid., p.xxxiii.

415. ibid., p.xxxiv.

416. ibid., p.xxxvi.

417. ibid., p.xxxv.

418. ibid., p.xxxvii.

419. ibid.

420. ibid., p.xli.

421. ibid., pp.xlii-xliii.


423. ibid., p.175.
Notes to Chapter 3


425. ibid., p.31.
426. ibid., p.38.
427. ibid., p.59.
428. ibid., p.59-60.
429. ibid., p.60.
430. ibid., pp.60-61.
431. ibid., p.61.
432. ibid., p.81.
433. ibid., pp.81-82.


436. ibid., pp.71-72.
437. ibid., p.89.
438. ibid., p.96.
439. ibid., p.144.
440. ibid., p.145.
441. ibid., p.146.
442. ibid., p.148.
443. ibid., pp.148-149.
444. ibid., pp.149-150.
445. ibid., p.150.
446. ibid., pp.150-151.
447. ibid., pp.151-152.
448. ibid., pp.152-153.
449. ibid., p.153.
450. ibid., pp.154-155.
451. ibid., p.155.
452. ibid., pp.156-157.
453. ibid., pp.157-158.

455. ibid., p.160.

456. ibid., pp.161-162.

457. ibid., pp.162-163.


459. ibid., p.259.


461. ibid., p.164.

462. ibid., p.164.

463. ibid., p.184.

464. ibid., p.185.

465. ibid., p.187.

466. ibid., p.188.

467. ibid., p.189.

468. ibid., p.190.

469. ibid., pp. 198-199.

470. ibid., p.199.


474. ibid., p.45.


476. Adolf Hitler, ibid., quoted in Anthony Mario Ludovici, ibid., p.46.

477. Friedrich Nietzsche, no source given; quoted in Anthony Mario Ludovici, ibid., p.47.
Notes to Chapter 3


479. Adolf Hitler op.cit.; quoted in Anthony Mario Ludovici ibid.

480. Friedrich Nietzsche, 1888; quoted in Anthony Mario Ludovici ibid., p. 49.

481. Anthony Mario Ludovici ibid.
CHAPTER 4, THE DEGENERATE WORLD

Fundamental to Ludovici's social and political thought, as with all fascists, is his conviction that the world is degenerate. As he writes in his *A Defence of Aristocracy, A text book for Tories:*

"Look about you now! observe the myriads of plain, ugly and asymmetrical faces in our streets; observe the illness and botched-ness about you!" ¹ England had degenerated from her former greatness.²

Even a Liberal, Mr. Lloyd-George, after his own perusal of the statistics of ill-health supplied by the Ministry of National Service, confessed that he was startled at the number of Grade II and Grade III men throughout England.³ In his *A Defence of Conservatism,* Ludovici warned those who gloried over the fact that the recent General Strike could be overcome without violence or bloodshed that it indicated silent decay.⁴

In his condemnation of degeneracy Ludovici was regarded by his contemporaries as "dressing up in smart modern clothes the old Manichean heresy."⁵ It is a conviction that he shares with his mentor, Nietzsche: "Paralysis of will; where do we not find this cripple sitting nowadays!"³ Manliness rotted and danger dwindled as sleep seemed to be the greatest accomplishment.⁷ Men had succumbed to a mood of utter despair and subscribed to Schopenhauer's horror and loathing of life and the world.⁸

In Ludovici's novel of 1918, *Mansel Fellowes,* the Nietzschean Dr. Melhado complains to Father Jevington that the union of Richard Latimer with Mansel Fellowes fits a vital and deeper age; it does not fit this one.⁹ Dr. Melhado detested the prevalent plainness of modern men and women, and even in acclaimed beauties
he was prone to discover but a memento, a pale reminiscence, of what he considered genuine, vital beauty: "For beauty to him always implied a specific modicum of intense vitality, or, to say the least - exuberance." In Mrs. Fellowes's lodging-house, the other two lodgers besides Richard Latimer, one male and one female, are described as lifeless-looking specimens of humanity. The male, a printer's manager by the name of Topple greatly admired Richard Latimer, as did the female, a typist by the name of Miss Carruthers, "all opal-grey from head to foot, even to her cheeks and faded hands." To their degeneracy is contrasted the vitality of Mansel Fellowes. But, the degenerate traditions of Richard Latimer's nation, family, and class, he was a barrister and successful writer, never led him to suppose that Mansel Fellowes was beautiful: For that she was little too vital and fiery. In all Ludovici's writings there figures the typical Manicheanism of fascism. It takes the familiar form of the eternal struggle between the forces of life and those of death or decay. We are informed that when Richard Latimer ignores Mansel Fellowes for Gladys Morrison, a great and mysterious force steadily and stealthily worked along its usual inevitable lines, to mould her destiny. It was a force that worked slowly and deliberately, "like rushing water in a hard soil." It is the force of death and decay. She felt certain becoming diffidence and modesty in acknowledging that Richard Latimer had vitalised something "deeply interwoven with the hidden actuating power of her life". Her Life had awakened at the time when Richard Latimer had first come into her life. His absence had begun to have a vital, life or death, meaning for her.

In Ludovici's novel of 1920, Too Old for Dolls, the hero, Lord Henry Highbarn, questions the desirability of his role as a healer of society's nervous wrecks. He thinks he can be doing no good by
relieving the principal victims of the disastrous mess Western civilisation had made of life. What Sir Joseph Bullion, a great 'success' of the system which is rotten and iniquitous to the core, lauded as 'progress' was really man's further receding from a true understanding of human life and its most vital needs. But, Lord Henry Highbarn is so perturbed by England's degeneracy that he contemplates quitting his country for China. It is too late to reform. He declines offers of money from Sir Joseph Bullion to remain in England and treat Mrs. Delarayne, their mutual friend. Later in the novel, Aubrey St. Maur, a friend of Lord Henry Highbarn, asks him why he is going to China. Lord Henry Highbarn gives his reasons as, firstly, curiosity to see how the Chinaman has escaped the degeneracy that is fast overtaking Europe, secondly, he could not bear to witness his country's decline, thirdly, and chiefly:

'...I feel that it is the duty of all enlightened Western Europeans, who have seen the madness of European civilisation, to hasten to the last healthy spot on earth and to preach the Gospel of Europhobia, - that is to say, to warn the wise East against our criminal errors, and to save it from being infected by our diseases. If the world is to be saved, a cordon sanitaire must be established round Europe; for Europe has now become a pestilence.'

Similarly, Lord Henry Highbarn's father, Lord Firle, says to the Vicar, Mr. Powers, in *What Woman Wishes*, that the word 'eccentric' can have no meaning nowadays as there is no centre from which to deviate.

Ludovici attributed most of the hostility towards established and traditional institutions, which he saw it as his role to conserve, not to any defect in the principles of the institutions themselves, but to the physical and nervous exhaustion of those who represent this hostility. We, according to Ludovici, who are but a faint membranie of life, a pale shadow of vitality, cannot but question
the value of life. In Ludovici's novel of 1923, *French Beans*, Sir Thomas Braintree, scientist and banker, immensely wealthy, learned, and having the air of one thoroughly disillusioned, would have given all his riches and property if he could have spent one hour in the company of his ancestors of the 'Golden Age'. Whilst, in Ludovici's novel of 1924, *The Taming of Don Juan*, Dr. Hale, the hero, says to Frances Yardgrove, the consumptive son of Sir Jonathan Yardgrove, a patent food manufacturer, that modern humanity is incapable of revolution as in revolution there is life and vigour. After succeeding in getting his protege, Gilbert Milburn, adopted as the unofficial Conservative candidate for the Northern division of Wessex, only to be defeated by 'vested interests' in the General Election, Dr. Hale's despair deepens:

'I'm afraid Sir Jonathan Yardgrove was right', he said, 'and if we substitute for the word evolution in his remarks, the word degeneration, we shall find that they apply exactly. There is certainly nothing more ludicrously pathetic than the figure of one insignificant individual trying at the present day to stem the irresistible tide of degenerative changes. The world seems to have made its fatal choice. The leading horses of civilisations chariot have their heads all turned towards the abyss, and nothing can now alter their direction. Poor old Wessex! Poor old England! How romantic have been my allusions and my long struggle.'

Ludovici called our era one of fourth-rate bodily joys and the people sub-human. Disillusioned, our ultimate discovery that Life has lost its value dogs the heels of our civilisation. Perhaps Ludovici's most trenchant criticism of national degeneracy is to be found in his *The Secret of Laughter*, which developed from a paper which Ludovici read to the English Mistery on December 8, 1931. As fast as the clamour for humour had swelled the quality of national achievement had depreciated. Modern degenerate mankind demanded laughter with "neurasthenic insistence". Ludovici supposed that laughter, or showing teeth, is the signal of superior
The over-indulgence in humour was compensated for the prevalent feeling of degeneration and inferiority. Even for the minority of the healthy and sound, life had become so complicated, that they took refuge in the sphere of nonsense. Ludovici adopted his theory of laughter from Nietzsche, although, he merely acknowledged that Nietzsche had anticipated it: "Perhaps I know why man is the only animal that laughs", said Nietzsche. And he added: "He alone suffers so excruciatingly that he was compelled to invent laughter."

The "neurotic fury" with which the average man and woman defended their sense of humour presupposed a decadent and inferior age. Laughter had become no more than one of the many anodynes with which modern men were rocking themselves into a state of drowsy insensibility.

Ludovici saw in modern man's reckless introduction of a violent factor into his life, the placing of "a lethal juggernaut like the internal combustion locomotive on our streets", thus restoring to his highly civilised towns and rural thoroughfares dangers far more terrific than those of any jungle or desert, a symptom of an epoch in history which was the most anarchical and inconsiderate of constructive values ever known on earth. In typically Manichean imagery, Ludovici reckoned that in England since the Great Rebellion of the seventeenth century: "It is as though God and the Devil had changed places by slow revolution." Life had been assailed by the force of death. In order to spare the sensibilities of those who came into contact with institutions for the degenerate, like reformatories, lunatic asylums and work houses, they were given euphemistic names. Urbanisation was called 'development' and incipient bolshevisation P. E. P. Physical degeneracy and increasing juvenile delinquency was called 'freedom'. No national cast of countenance united the English, pervasive sickness was their only bond. Ludovici even reckoned the high speeds attainable in
motor cars may have been a principal factor, not only in masking the prevailing morbidity, "but also in relieving the pullulating feelings of inferiority which naturally afflicts a people riddled with organic defects."43

Now, it is the purpose of this chapter to examine the causes that Ludovici cited for the degeneracy which he saw about him. I can think of no better way of introducing this study than to discuss the principle which underpins all Ludovici's political and social thought, and whose neglect he thought was the primary cause of modern degeneracy:

**Introduction:**

*Action and Struggle - the Principles of History and Life*

One of the principal notions to be found in the fabric of fascism is that of struggle. Now, it is often claimed that fascists were principally ex-servicemen. This is, in the main, true. However, I think the exaltation of militancy and combatancy in Ludovici's writings, who was a veteran of World War I, is also to be found before his martial experiences. It can only be claimed that Ludovici's martial experiences intensified the notion of struggle in his writings after World War I, when he was at his most prolific. Indeed, his commentaries and interpretations of Nietzsche are profuse with the exaltation of combatancy well before World War I. And Ludovici's *A Defence of Aristocracy, A text book for Tories* although first published by Constable in 1915, was written before World War I. Nevertheless, it is true that World War I served as a catalyst in crystalising what was later to be regarded as fascism. In this sense Ludovici's martial experiences were of immeasurable importance, as they were to most fascists, in strengthening already held convictions.
However, if it was not for the intervention of Anthony Mario Ludovici's father, he may not have had any martial experiences. Albert Ludovici Jr. reminded Lord Kitchener of his school days at the Geneva pensionnat, when inquiring as to why his sons had not heard from the War Office, although they had passed the necessary examinations as interpreters, and riding tests at Knightsbridge Barracks, regarding active service. They suspected this might be due to their foreign surname. Within twenty four hours of this inquiry Anthony Mario Ludovici was ordered to leave for the Front. Anthony Mario Ludovici arrived at Antwerp a few days before the Germans bombarded and took the town. Only when Ludovici was at Le Havre, in charge of the German prisoners, did the suspicion of his fellow officers at his foreign name evaporate when, from a Punch's Almanack circulating among them, they discovered he was an English author. Ludovici served as a field-gunner during World War I. Only when he was in hospital with trench fever, in the early part of 1917, did the Army Authorities belatedly take note of his command of French and German, and second him from the Artillery for service under Military Intelligence at the War Office in London. He was attached to the Intelligence Staff, War Office, in April 1917 and attained the rank of General Staff Officer, 3rd Grade, March 1919. According to Who's Who he was demobilised in October 1919. However, Ludovici frequently called himself 'Captain', and was addressed as such in publications. Indeed, according to his nephew, John Ludovici, he frequently donned military uniform and was a member of British Military Intelligence throughout the inter-war years and the early years of World War II, until Military Intelligence became, somewhat belatedly, suspicious of his political identity.

Although the first edition of Ludovici's A Defence of Aristocracy, a text book for Tories is fascist and addressed to youth, the typical
trait of fascist ex-servicemen, but was written before World
War I, in his preface to the second edition, in 1933, he
reckoned that most pre-war political beliefs were incompatible
with his and made the first edition seem fantastic to his
contemporaries. In the post-war era he thought the reception to
his ideas was more favourable as the Great War had effected a
transformation in political convictions. Typical of veteran
fascists was Ludovici's bitterness against the 'old-gang' and non-
combatants generally, who had cynically acquiesced in the bloody
sacrifice of young manhood. In Ludovici's novel of 1918, Mansel
Fellows, the young Richard Latimer, like Ludovici, deplored the
"cynicism of age all about him". He was especially disillusioned
with Paris, it was rather like meeting one's older brother; for that
was the relation of France to the rest of Europe. Paris tasted of
the morbid pessimism and scepticism of age. After World War I,
Ludovici spoke of the insolence, sterility and exhaustion of the old.
Ludovici could have no mercy for the "freakish stupidity of the
'brass hats'" and the "clamour made by our fattist and oiliest old
poultries for the war to go on 'until the last young man'". In
his preface to The False Assumptions of "Democracy" of 1921, he
proclaimed that the Great War had left Europe with its ideals and
respective liberal principles shattered and destroyed. The old era
he proclaimed was dead. He saw it as his task to develop the "ideology
of our new and brightly illuminated age" for those who had doffed
their khaki. Indeed, it was a task that Ludovici set himself for
the rest of his life - propagating fascism. He intended to punish
the politicians who were responsible for the disastrous peace and who
bungled the great task of reconstruction. Politicians like Lloyd-
George, during World War I, had not even scrupled to draw invidious
comparisons between male courage and women working in munitions
factories, to promote female suffrage. They forgot the "river of
blood that our young troupes were pouring over the ramparts of
the Western Front alone."

Ludovici's novel of 1924, *The Taming of Don Juan*, could be partly
autobiographical. It is profuse with his bitterness at World War I
and is introduced with a poem called "A Post-War Maiden" reflecting
the grief of post-war women who had lost all hope of a full life by
the sacrifice of husbands and young men in World War I. 59 In the novel
Gilbert Milburn, Dr. Hale's protege, volunteers as an artillary
observer. Dr. Hale is outraged and proclaims that English civilisation
could not justify the sacrifice of anything. The masses of old people
and spinster, who talked glibly and confidently about the necessary
and noble self-sacrifice of the youth of England, were not worthy of
the sacrifice of more than a single toad. 60 Gilbert Milburn writes
to Dr. Hale from the Front, and declares that in spite of the misery,
the discomfort, and the monotony of the trenches, war is to be exalted
as it brings out the 'natural man' in the combatance. Danger imparts
the capacity to go to extreme lengths and men appear more attractive,
fuller, and rounder. 61 After a few months at the Front Gilbert had
'hardened' where he was inclined to be soft, and where his nature had
consisted of good metal it was toughened and rendered unbreakable.
Nevertheless, the more sensitive chords in his nature inclined him to
feelings of revolt and loathing at the horrors and misery he witnessed,
he questioned whether any prize could justify the abject misery he saw
about him. 62 One of the lives wasted is that of Frances Yardgrove,
son of a patent food manufacturer, who, like Gilbert, volunteers for
active service, but is lost in an observation balloon and dies. Gilbert,
more fortunate, is captured and taken prisoner. Two years later Gilbert
returns to England and, whilst in a train going to London, with several
other officers, he engages in a conversation with a civilian of sleek
and opulent appearance:
The officers, who were all young men, looked somewhat pale and drawn, while the civilian, a man well past middle age, presented by his florid and bloated features, a striking contrast to his companions. He smiled constantly, and there was about his whole person the air of one thoroughly contented with his lot—nay, wildly jubilant about it.\textsuperscript{63}

The civilian explained, with a smile, that he had lost three sons during the war, and if he had had a dozen he would gladly have sacrificed them all. Gilbert replied that if he had had a father, he would have gladly sacrificed him.\textsuperscript{64} Gilbert, flushed and angry, "stared the old civilian out" as he made hastily away. Having been through the worst of the war and pierced through its "clumsy shams" Gilbert had acquired a cynical view of humanity.\textsuperscript{65} He complained to Almina Underhill, who was perturbed at the dearth of young men who survived the war and the frequently insipid character of the few that had survived\textsuperscript{66}, that privileged sections of the community like the old are immune to the principle of sacrifice that the troops had suffered.\textsuperscript{67}

Ludovici deplored the power of the old.\textsuperscript{68} He thought the mirage of internationalism that loomed in the sky for a few brief years in the early twentieth century, had been irrevocably shattered by the Great War.\textsuperscript{69} Clearly the cynical view of man that Ludovici had learned through his martial experiences coloured his view of life, as will be seen.

According to Ludovici struggle is at the root of all Life. In his \textit{A Defence of Aristocracy}, \textit{A text book for Tories}, Ludovici idealizes the militant elite of the samurai.\textsuperscript{70} Whilst, in his \textit{A Defence of Conservatism} he delineates Life as struggle, and proposes it as a conservative ideal. He says in national life, as in the life of nature, there are two forces which constantly conflict with the inclination of all creatures to prefer stability before instability in their environment. They are, first, the renewal of the whole of the nation's
personnel, or the redistribution of all national roles with each fresh generation; secondly, the chafing of certain sections of the nation under circumstances which make adaptation impossible.\textsuperscript{71} Ludovici refers to a third life force which conflicts with stability, but one which comes from beyond a nation's frontiers, which impels, or threatens to impel, change against the nation's will: "Examples of its action are to be seen in the sudden invasion of Peru and Mexico by the Spaniards, and in the appearance of the Boers and ourselves among the Bush men and the Zulus of Africa, etc."\textsuperscript{72} The first of these life forces tends to introduce change by means of peaceful invasion, because the new arrivals representing this force are either above or below the standard required by the stable environment; the second life force tends to introduce change by means of individual or group revolt, because the creatures representing this force are unhappy.\textsuperscript{73} As all flourishing life means not only growth, but through growth, expansion, the politics of a flourishing nation is not merely national preservation, but national expansion. To deny this is to deny that the life of a nation should continue.\textsuperscript{74} If expansion is the extending of a nation, conservatism will become part of the process of expansion.\textsuperscript{75} Ludovici reckoned that Charles II had realised the vital importance of this principle of identity in expansion, and had added a good deal of territory to the British possessions overseas.\textsuperscript{76} The one feature that distinguished the Tories from their political opponents, from the end of the eighteenth century and after, is that they became more imperialistic in their aims, "and thus expressed that essential aspect of Conservatism which consists in providing for national expansion."\textsuperscript{77} In a limited area like that of the globe, in which many different people wage a struggle for existence, and the nature of whose lives imposes expansion as a necessary consequence of health and vigour, invasion and expropriation of territory is inevitable.
As Ludovici supposes the principle of human equality, and of the equality of human races in particular, is fantastic, a superior race has a natural mandate to spread at the cost of an inferior race. In healthy conditions there is a natural tendency to sacrifice the inferior. An isolated community, with one thatcher and 20 ploughmen, selects the ploughman or less desirable creature to perform any acts which involve the risk of life, that are essential to the preservation of the community. Likewise, in the situation of a world shortage of vital food the reality of starvation would reveal the error of the notion of human equality, and one people would take the lead in a struggle for food. Life gives the mandate for such a procedure. Christian objectors to the identification of might with right must also object to democracy as it is the same principle. And the Christian who argues that the spread of England and of Christianity through might has been a blessing to the people whose territory has been invaded and expropriated is a hypocrite. The inhabitants of Canada, Australia and Tasmania were wiped out.

Ludovici's interpretation of life as struggle is certainly consistent with his advocacy of Nietzscheism. According to Nietzsche a living thing seeks to discharge its strength - "life itself is a Will to Power". To refrain mutually from exploitation and violence, and to make it the fundamental principle of society, is tantamount to a denial of life. Life itself is essentially appropriation, injury, conquest and suppression of the weak. Even in an organisation in which individuals treat each other as equal it must, "if it be a living and not a dying organisation", do all that towards other bodies, which the individuals within it refrain from doing to each other. Because it lives, and life is 'will to power', it
will endeavour to expand as 'will to power' belongs to the nature of the living being as a primary organic function. Will to Life is the fundamental fact of all history. According to Ludovici, Nietzsche had set out to show that the life principle, 'will to power', is the prime motor of all living organisms. Nietzsche, with his intense realism, had realised life is the mandate for violence and struggle: "Life means struggle, battle - war. Where it ceases to be that, its standard falls; it degenerates. the attacks that life survives, as a rule, leave it stronger." Nietzsche had defined life as it really is.

It is the capacity for Life that distinguishes the heroes in Ludovici's novels. In Mansel Fellowes, Richard Latimer's features are described as promising a substantial enjoyments of life's fruits. Mansel Fellowes lived an intense life. Her eyes revealed a concentrated expression of eagerness and vitality, like those of a cat, whilst her canines were prominent among her well-tended teeth. She had a feline vitality that baffled analysis. The 'flame of life' in her was intensely and fiercely real. She promised Life. Mrs. Fellowes persuades Richard Latimer to see her daughter 'dying' of her thwarted affection for him. She could not bear her daughter to be spurned by life. Richard Latimer, after visiting Mansel Fellowes and noting her immediate recovery, is very depressed over his choice between Mansel Fellowes and his future fiancée, the non-vital Gladys Morrison. He takes some relief by a sojourn in Europe. He first visits Paris, but the romanticism in his nature, which the Nietzschean Dr. Melhado had never succeeded in eradicating, was stunned by the bold realism of the French girls attitude to life. When he visited Italy he found that everybody lived and realised that a great literature like that of France, England and Germany, is a sign that
lives are rarely being lived. When Richard Latimer forsakes Hansel Fellowes and she 'dies', Dr. Melhado perceives that the full life was a matter of life and death to her. In Catherine Doyle: the romance of a thrice-married lady Gerald Swynnerton says to his confidant, Knowles, that even after he had gone on an Oriental cruise to relieve himself of his 'appetite' for the intense vitality of Catherine Doyle who, apparently, had jilted him, the 'flame of life' still possessed him: "I was only too well aware of the small piece of live coal that still glowed within my breast, and knew that the slightest indulgence in the way of deep breathing would stir it into flame again." In Too Old for Dolls we are told that Leonetta Delarayne gave the impression of aggressive vitality. Her quivering freshness gave a soft shimmer to her skin. In her faultless teeth the life philosopher could see the life hunger they revealed and "the full deep bite and fast hold they would take of Life's entrails." This large-canined virgin had more feelings than self-control. Mrs. Edith Delarayne exclaims to Lord Henry Highbarn that Leonetta is more determined to live than her elder sister, Cleopatra. Lord Henry Highbarn is perceptive enough to realise that Cleopatra's 'illness' had been occasioned by her jealousy of Leonetta's superior vitality. Leonetta is the acid that is corroding Cleopatra's life. Cleopatra attempts to shoot her sister through jealousy, when she is in a shooting-party. She fails. Lord Henry Highbarn takes the blame for Cleopatra and dissimulates that it was his shooting-accident. He knew that Cleopatra would act through thwarted passion, over her younger sister's success with Denis Malster, either against herself, or against Leonetta, "you would proceed to violence." Leonetta was not to be told the truth about the incident until she was old enough to see how 'natural' it was. In What Woman Wishes, when Lord Chiddingly and Janet Perkins, the working class heroine, declare their mutual
attraction and enter into a turbulent-romance, never before had the upper class hero felt so deeply that he was drinking life to her dregs. Never before had he felt danger at every second, it imparted a lack of deliberation and recklessness as though in a life-and-death situation that provided the impetus for 'extreme lengths'. Danger is life's most precious saviour. In The Taming of Don Juan, we are told that the hero Gilbert Milburn was impelled by the force of life. His girlfriend, Almina, is also described as vibrant with life:

...the plain check tailor-made frock she wore, and the soft felt hat, resting voluptuously on the rich folds of her hair, seemed like the skin of a beautiful animal, so thoroughly vitalised were they by her exuberance.

Dr. Hale, later in the novel, was not surprised to hear from Mrs. Dart that the jilted Frances Platt had thrown the missile which injured Gilbert at a Conservative Association meeting, disrupted by opponents:

"the chemist of life knows that natural forces are not to be played with, not with impunity, at any rate!" In his Woman, A Vindication, of 1923, Ludovici says the immensely vast and intricate activities which go to make a modern nation serve but one "force" (his italics) for which it is organised, which gives the city, the country beyond, and all the activities which we see, a genuine meaning - Life. This notion is of immense importance for the social and political thought of Ludovici, it is the theme that sustains most of his contentions. Most importantly it commits him to what liberals would regard as a non-rational theory of man and society and extends the domain of politics and government to a total concern with all areas of social activity. Furthermore, Ludovici generates a justification for total revolution from it. The following is an extremely important passage. He conceives 'Life' as the supreme force:

It should not be forgotten that industry, commerce, the professions and the Civil Service are but institutions organised for the purpose
of Life. The main stream of Life certainly runs through them, and derives its security, its relative permanence and its fluency from their harmonious function, but they exist for life, and not Life for them. It is Life that is important, the channels through which it flows are only significant, as auxiliary to the main purpose. If they do not fulfill this purpose, which Ludovici thinks they do not, they should be dispensed with. The purpose for which our organised State, and to which all activities and complex situations do but minister, is the stream of Life. The Government, like the bus service, is only an instrument serving the most important thing of all - Life. Our civilisation stands or falls as a whole. The intricate adjustments which constitute its fabric are so interdependent and mutually subservient, that it is impossible to lay hold of any important portion of it, with a view to condemnation, without thereby condemning the whole. And this sole purpose Life, for which the whole of our society should be organised, is a continuous process of inter-racial and intra-racial struggle, with no principles except the one of more life in each race or species, governing the whole.

According to Ludovici society cannot escape from violence as it cannot escape from Life without extinguishing itself. Life outside human society is neither more nor less than a process of preying and mutual suppression and incorporation. Every species behaves as if it alone had the right to prevail, and it endeavours by every means in its power - self-preservation, propagation, rapine and parasitism - to make its own kind preponderate on earth:

...We open the stomach of a shot leopard and we find in it the mangled remains of some other animal or bird. When we kill a bird and inspect its viscera, we discover the remains of insects, small quadrupeds, or smaller birds.

And there are few people who, upon dying a sudden death, would not
betray their violence towards the lower animals by the contents of their stomach or intestines. Violence is an essential factor in all life, even in human life. Indeed, as violence is at the very portals of life, in childbirth, a society cannot exist in which violence in some form, will not appear. With the free operation of the right of parenthood every society incorporates a piece of life in its organisation, and having done this, cannot hope to eliminate from its organisation the violence which attaches to the operation of all natural and vital laws. He reckoned that most of the apparent injustices, asperities and disabilities of human society are the inevitable repercussions upon individuals of the incessant working of the primitive act of violence at the basis of the social edifice - childbirth. As the violence of the procreative act reverberates through society and the world, someone or some group must suffer. Curiously, of the book in which the above vindication of struggle is to be found, The False Assumptions of Democracy, Ludovici proclaimed that it is "really Conservative in spirit." Similarly, in his book of 1928, The Might-Hoers; or, the case against birth-control and an alternative, Ludovici says that if our actions are not to be controlled by the old people in our midst, then we are to be a self-affirming people and regard the future as belonging solely to the English and their multiplication. The English should cynically recognise the truth that human sacrifice is inevitable on this globe, decline to be the party that has to be sacrificed, and demonstrate in word and deed that they have a natural mandate to supersede all other peoples. As Life means sacrifice of some or many, the charge of inhumanity against any scheme which merely proposes to shift the point of incidence of the sacrificial axe cannot be sustained.

Ludovici's most brilliant panegyric of struggle is to be found in his Violence, Sacrifice and War, read before the St. James' Kin of the
English History in October 1933. It was greeted, by some, as
destroying the "superficial logic of the war-sick reader". He
says that man used to be part of the mortal struggle of nature. His
first, longest, and probably fiercest struggle against violence
consisted in his wars with the large beasts of prey. For thousands
of years the sacrificial saviours of the tribe were probably those
individuals, chiefly women and children, who fell back in the tribes
fight for life. The violence originating from predatory animals,
however, was long ago settled. Similarly, the violence of the weather
and of the cold in winter was eliminated as fire and shelter acquired
perfected forms of application. Though not altogether:

...people are still killed and their homes wrecked by thunderstorms; cisterns and water pipes still
get frozen to our cost in winter, and people and
their cattle all over the world are still affected
by droughts and floods, while seamen still suffer
from the violence of the sea, though even this has
been neutralised to some extent by the recent feats
of giant shipbuilding.

Earthquakes and volcanic eruptions remain as forces majeure and like
thunder and lightning, allude the control of science. The cruellest
and most persisting form of violence, however, has been that which
afflicts one group of men at the hands of another hostile group.
Hitherto, powerful European countries had succeeded in localising to
some extent the incidence of this violence by limiting, concentrating
and specially selecting the defense, both as regards sex, age, and
the scene of the conflict. However, recent developments had made it
no longer possible specially to select the victims to be sacrificed to
it. Ludovici thought it would not be altogether desirable to eliminate
this form of violence from humanity until the best and highest race
is in complete possession of the world. Nevertheless, man had
succeeded in neutralising or eliminating almost all her forces in his
environment which might unexpectedly deal violently with him. There
is, however, one form of violence which all through history has been
a fundamental source of mischief to humanity, and cannot be
eliminated like that part of uncontrolled nature like thunder,
lightening and the wind. It is that part of nature in ourselves
which partakes of the quality of lightening and earthquakes, and is
as unscrupulous as they are - the reproductive function. Although
those born are not foreigners, they do precisely what foreigners
would do. They displace many of the previous inhabitants, compete
with them, or otherwise make claims upon them. The violence of the
reproductive function is a peaceful invasion, and, in its essentails,
as much an act of violence as any other form of invasion. Even in
a community in which space and food are more than adequate, the
forcible introduction of a person who outclasses the older
inhabitants subjects some to an act of displacement. Even sub-
parity may be a menace, in modern states, as those unable to support
themselves exercise violence upon the existing members by extorting
their life-keep from them. If technical progress keeps abreast of
human expansion, so that food will always be plentiful by cultivating
space on planets, through the discovery of means for traversing inter-
stellar space, the introduction of new people into a community would
still remain as an act of violence and demand sacrifice: "Even to
be forced, for lack of space, to pack up and leave for Saturn, or
Mars, is to submit to an act of violence." The lesson of history
is that vital expansion has with monotonous repetition introduced
fresh violence into human communities, and since violence means the
sacrifice of something or somebody, one of the perpetual problems of
human society has been how to shift the ultimate effect of this
violence upon a group or community other than the one in which the
violence actually originated; and if this was not possible how to
sacrifice portions of the community itself so as to neutralise the
violence. If there is no decimation of the population by war, the
people themselves instinctively resort to some means of decimating
themselves. Rome, like Greece, in addition to sexual perversities, wars and infanticide, further neutralised the violence generated by her peoples' reproductive function, by unloading it on other peoples. The prolific Huns and Vandals did the same by the Roman Empire. Similarly, the violence generated by the reproductive function of the British people between 1760 and 1840 led to the partial extermination of three or four and the complete extermination of at least two peoples. The portion of violence generated by a peoples' reproductive function that can be shifted in this way depends upon the strength of their nation. Even when England was most active as a force destructive of other peoples lives, throughout the latter part of the eighteenth and almost the whole of the nineteenth century, she was torn with dissension at home through the violence generated by her peoples reproductive function, of which each class tried to shift the sacrifice on the heads of another:

In fact, one might sum up the history of all social reforms, of all poor laws, of most revolutions and rebellions, of all the struggles for the extended franchise, and of all confiscatory taxation for the benefit of one class, by saying that they are merely events in the eternal struggle on the part of one class to shift the violence demanded from reproductive violence from one section of the community to another.

If an unwise ruling class retains power, as it did in the case of the ancient aristocracies of Greece, Russia, France and England and elsewhere, the sacrifice was without scruple demanded almost wholly of the ruled class. The moment, however, that the ruled class was able to reverse the balance of power, the sacrifice was then demanded of the lives of the former rulers. Violence is the inevitable concomitant of life. Sacrifice and violence are complementary features in life. To attempt to avoid violence and sacrifice is to avoid life itself. Therefore, if life is to be lived, so violence and sacrifice can only be overcome by the man or the nation that is prepared to live dangerously. No amount of renunciation of conquest
will ever remove violence from the core of human societies as there is a form of violence that is inseparable from human life, even within a peace-loving and unwarlike community, childbirth.136

In the second section of Ludovici's Violence, Sacrifice and War, "Pacifism, Internationalism and Nationalism"137, he asserts that the pacifists object in avoiding the terrible sacrifice of human life which war involves is based on an illusion. Even if the pacifist could stop war forever, he could not achieve the abolition of terrible sacrifice of human life.138 Healthy human life presupposes multiplication. A healthy race necessarily increases and expands. To wish to limit the healthy expansion of a nation is to wish for an unhealthy nation. The pacifist is, therefore, a dysgenist139 The pacifist is a destroyer of his own nation's potential offspring. And, if the pacifist belongs to a superior race he is a vandal.140 Pacifism conceals and continues degeneration, not standing armies or war. Without armies and the prospects of war, standards of physical efficiency would decline and propel the nation to degeneration.141 Nothing in the pacifist's programme of activities reveals a fraction of the zeal about the nation's health which military authorities and military nations have always revealed, ever since the time of Sparta:

...The military standards of old demanded great endurance, energy, health and vigour in men; it also set certain minima as regards height, development, dental soundness, etc.; the military authorities had some idea of the hardships, trials and tests to which a soldier's physique is subjected in war.142

It is the capacity for life and struggle that Ludovici idealises. He thought the capacity for struggle was particularly evident in the history of the Jews. Crushing defeats at the hands of the Philistines forced the Jews to act in unison, and fight as one nation. Saul, their "great military hero", led his people first against the Ammonites
and then against the Philistines, defeated them, although only temporarily. However, half a millennium after the Exodus the Jews succeeded in establishing themselves in Palestine at the expense of the settled inhabitants, who were better armed and organised than themselves.\textsuperscript{143} Their ultimate success proves their struggle had rendered them ferocious and resolute; their repeated wars and privations must repeatedly have winnowed the weaker from their stock.\textsuperscript{144} Whilst they were aware of their distant relationship to the peoples lying north and east of them and of the people they were driving out—the Canaanites—the lesson they had learnt from Moses, and the certainty he gave them of their favour at the hands of their deity Yahweh, fortified their belief that they were specially privileged to the land they were invading.\textsuperscript{145} Judah, the southern kingdom, after struggling for its existence against Assyria and Egypt in turn, and subsequently against Chaldea, ultimately succumbed to Nebuchadnezzar, King of Babylon. Jerusalem was sacked and the elite of the Jews were taken into captivity in Babylon. After a lapse of about 70 years, Persia conquered Babylon, and Cyrus, King of Persia, set the tribes free to return to Judah. Once again there was rigorous selection by circumstances of the Jews of highest stamina and most patriotic sentiments.\textsuperscript{146} And, throughout the Middle Ages in Europe, the fate of the Jews was very much the same. Everywhere the position of the Jews was more or less insecure, and yet everywhere they survived owing chiefly to the tremendous power of their law and religious traditions, their exceptional stamina, their inflexible will to maintain their unity in dispersion, and their capacity for adaptation.\textsuperscript{147} Their stubborn "primitive desert traits" repeatedly moulded their history, despite their thousands of years of separation from desert life.\textsuperscript{148} The early Semites were hardened and sharpened by the merciless life of the desert.
...a people fitted by milleniums of privation, uncertainty and simple living, to become formidable in any close struggle for existence with a type less hard and hardened; and a people accustomed to wait to endure, and to be masters of their own destiny. 149

Their history 'proves' that only a people capable of imposing the greatest hardships upon themselves, and capable of the greatest bravery, can survive the struggle that is life. 150 They are formidable exponents of the Nietzschean 'will to power'. 151

Ludovici identifies five possible ways of restricting population when it exceeds the power of the soil to support it: A proportion of the males may be castrated and their sexual function sacrificed; homosexual practices may be encouraged, among males; selective infanticide; female sterilisation; female homosexuality. 152 Ludovici thinks that all of the latter, including birth control, are undesirable as they inflict sacrifice on the native population. 153 However, sacrifice of something or somebody is inevitable as "sacrifice of some kind is implicit in organic life as it is found on the globe." 154 He then proceeds to identify those whose sacrifice is desirable: The inferior foreign races who limit the multiplication of English life; the infanticide of degenerates and the prohibition of the marriage of degenerates; the prohibition of immigration and cancellation of existing naturalisations. 155

It is significant that I have desisted from labelling Ludovici as a social Darwinist in the preceding discussion. I think it is a question that deserves caution. In Ludovici's The False Assumptions of "Democracy", of 1921, he says that Life's activities have a gravitating or descending tendency. In a large number of organisms, acquired embellishments or acquired faculties and qualities have to be dropped in the course of generations. 156 This is a conviction to be found
elsewhere in his writings, especially in his interpretation of Nietzsche. He thought Nietzscheans, like himself, should regard the hope that better things will perforce arise from allowing things to take their course unguided by human endeavour as pure romanticism. There is a curious ambivalence in Ludovici's attitude to social Darwinism. I do not think that Ludovici should be simply regarded as a social Darwinist, that notion that progress is the consequence of competition between men, although, he does, on occasion, subscribe to the view that survival is the survival of the fittest. In the main, following Nietzsche, he ridiculed the Darwinian faith in the blind force of nature, working automatically through the survival of the fittest. Nietzsche thought social Darwinists, like Herbert Spencer, had mistaken the true nature and function of life, which is 'will to power'. He ascribed all the importance to the 'life-will' of the organism as the motive force of evolution. Nietzsche transformed the Darwinian 'struggle for existence', which is passive and involuntary, into the 'struggle for power', which is active and creative. Economy is not one of life's principles: "The blind Will to Power in nature therefore stands in urgent need of direction by man." Although Ludovici concedes that Nietzsche's works bear the unmistakable stamp of the theory of evolution as taught by Darwin, they differ seriously in respect of the question of the lines upon which the process of evolution worked. Nietzsche's theory involves a new development hypothesis. If the evolutionary process be a fact; if things have become what they are, and were not always so; then, Nietzsche contends, we may describe no limit to the aspirations of man. The 'progress' of the Darwinians is by no means elevating. The environment, in conditions of spontaneity, is the

determining factor, and if its means are best met by the degenerate
then they will be the 'fittest', and survive. Nietzsche objected to Darwin's
mechanistic explanation of evolution and supplanted it with the
'will to power' as the more fundamental life motor. Darwinists
weave too much romance into life with their scientific formulae for a
moral order of things. Upon the basis of the 'will to power'
Nietzsche developed a cosmogony which assumes that species have been
evolved, but at variance with Darwin, and points to an inner creative
will in living organisms which makes environment and natural conditions
subservient and subject. Nietzsche, unlike the optimistic Darwinists,
did not believe that out of the chaotic play of blind forces the best
and fittest would survive. Such faith in autonomous forces Nietzsche
regarded merely as the survival of the old Christian belief in a moral
order of things. Arrested development or a retrogression along the
evolutionary ladder is a common source of degeneracy, according to
Nietzsche and Ludovici. Provided that more life comes into being,
nature is impartial towards the multiplication of species whether in a
progressive or regressive direction. The quality of those who survive
depends upon the kind of survival value that prevails. Consequently,
to allow the extreme effects of the struggle for existence to eliminate
the 'unfit' of today, would amount to rearing a race who happens to
succeed best in a commercial and industrial age. Evolutionary
processes do not possess either the infallibility or the reliability
for progress which social Darwinians suppose. In the animal world the
great majority of evolutionary changes hitherto have been in the
direction of degeneration, and by far the greater portion of living
species are degenerate ancestors of superior ancestors. Nevertheless, Ludovici, on occasion, contradicted himself and reverted to social Darwinism:

In natural and relatively stable conditions, the struggle for existence or power, rigid adaptation, and the absence of artificial medical aids, tends to create a standardised type. Aberrations are usually eliminated, whether sub-normal or conspicuously super-normal, unless either state means better adaptations. And this process is so rigorous that the young, whether human or animal, set loose to choose, can hardly err.

However, I think Ludovici's attitude to social Darwinism is ambiguous, in believing that 'evolution' covers millions of cases of retrograde metamorphoses, because he wished to emphasise the life and death, or vital, importance of the intense struggle to succeed. Therefore, any slackening in the struggle to become more and more potent is the beginning of the retrograde development:

...To assail the desire to become more and more is therefore tantamount to a conspiracy against life, it is tantamount to a denial of the healthy instinct of the species.

This ambiguity towards social Darwinism recurs in Ludovici's last book devoted to Nietzscheanism, Religion for Infidels of 1961. He says struggle is the mandate of life. Humanity still undergoes unprovoked violence from the attacks of wild animals; from insects, poisonous or disease bearing; from parasites, whether internal or external, and the micro-organisms of lethal illnesses. From the first moment of organic life on earth, slaughter and mutilation under the cruelest conditions has been the order of the day. The 'life force' is the power behind phenomena:

...Given a high degree of sensitiveness and intelligence, it is conceivable that even a confined townsman might, without the panorama of vital phenomena as it is unrolled in all its rich manifoldness along the countryside, reach fairly shrewd notions about the basic trend of the invisible forces directing living things on earth.
Ludovici proceeds to describe the attributes of the life forces:

First, they are cynical in the treatment of the living; second, they are indifferent regarding quality and show no 'taste' or discrimination; third, they do not favour an upward trend in the evolution of living things; fourth, the forces governing life's processes have implanted in all their creatures a will much more convulsive than the mere 'will to live'. Animals and plants do not merely sustain their own lives, they obtrude themselves on other lives, even other lives belonging to their own species. A striving after power or supremacy is the basic trend of all nature, whilst Schopenhaur's 'will to live' and Darwin's notion of the 'struggle for existence', give an inadequate idea of the life force. Only the Nietzschean 'will to power', the dynamic factor informing all living matter, is able to contend with and often defeat the degenerate trends implicit in the first three characteristics of the life forces, as previously enumerated. The 'will to power' has accounted for all those triumphs of the evolutionary process, including man himself.

Life is cynical, it has no trace of any morality: "every kind of thuggery, deception, fraud, duplicity and mendacity, finds its ablest and most unscrupulous exponents in Nature." Natural selection is not nature's discriminating choice of those races held worthy of survival, but a blind indiscriminate favouring of winners who, by favourable chance variations and their ability to adapt themselves to an environmental influence, have come victoriously out of the struggle for existence. Ludovici believed that only when the Nietzschean 'will to power' is free to operate in the elite of mankind will the degenerative attributes of the life forces be counteracted:

...Nor is it insignificant that in all periods of decline among the highest product of evolution - Man - will to power should be reviled in its highest manifestations only where surrepticiously, and in a manner unobserved by ordinary men and women, it does most harm; i.e., in women, children, the sick, the crippled, demented and the degenerate in general.
In society the 'will to power' must invoke the life force to operate constantly against the omnipresent threat of degeneration, for in nature, there is no similar influence, "and degeneracy is just as likely as regeneracy to supervene".\(^\text{188}\)

It is because England had ceased to be governed in accordance with the principles of life that Ludovici thought it had degenerated. I shall now proceed to explain, in detail, the reasons why Ludovici thought England had degenerated. The causes of degeneracy:

1. Racial: Miscenegenation and Dysgenic Mating

In his *A Defense of Aristocracy. A text book for Tories*, Ludovici agrees with Gobineau that there is inequality between the races of men, and that barbarity is the inevitable and permanent state of certain races with instincts incompatible with any other condition, whilst civilisation is the creation of races with other instincts.\(^\text{189}\) Races are destroyed through the extinction of those particular instincts constituting their identity, through miscegenation.\(^\text{190}\) The gradual decay of the great cultured nations of antiquity was always synchronous with laxity in matters of race pride and prejudice towards the foreigner.\(^\text{191}\) At times of promiscuous cross breeding instinct and will become confused and are no longer reliable.\(^\text{192}\) The only thing that destroys character permanently is the miscegenation which becomes the rule and custom in democratic times.\(^\text{193}\) Until the time of Elizabeth I the English were fortunate in their crosses; for their crosses were with closely allied races who could not introduce a very disturbing or degenerative element into their character.\(^\text{194}\)
In his *A Defence of Conservatism* Ludovici proclaims that diffuse miscegenation is inconscient with conserving the identity of the nation. Each race has a 'culture potential', by which is meant a certain people's capacity to evolve up to a certain plane of cultural organisation and not beyond it. The culture potential of the negro soon made havoc of the white culture imposed upon it in Liberia. As the preservation of the identity of the nation throughout change is the object of conservatism, the facilities afforded to foreign settlers in England should be the object of very jealous and severe attention. The mixing of blood has so often throughout history proved the principle cause of a nation's decay, that a haughty attitude of aloofness towards the foreigner is justified.

Because a "strong Conservative attitude" based upon considerations of ethnicity was unrepresented in the governing body, in 1656 Cromwell allowed the Jews to return to England. Hitherto, from Richard II onwards, a series of measures restricted the freedom of foreign merchants to trade within the realm. By Act 32nd, Henry VIII, c.16, para. 83, all leases, whether of a dwelling house or shop, within the realm or any of the King's dominions, held by any stranger, artificer, or handy craftsman, born out of the King's obeisance, and not being a denizen, were null and void, and the person taking such a lease was punished. The fact that no amendment of this law took place until the Act 7 and 8, Victoria, c.66, in the year 1844, when aliens were allowed to take a lease of real property for the purpose of residence or business for 21 years, though they were still forbidden to hold real estate, Ludovici believed spoke "highly for the conservative spirit of England". It was not until the Naturalisation Act of 1870, under Gladstone's first administration, that the civil disabilities of aliens were completely abolished and that naturalisation was made easy and inexpensive, and subsequent legislation was merely complementary to this measure. He thought those who marvel at the
change that has come over the self-reliant and independent nature of the Englishman, should bear in mind the influx of foreign blood that had, he believed, undermined the Englishman's character and physique. Regrettably, Disraeli's proclamation that "all is race" had little meaning in English politics, otherwise Disraeli himself would have had no status in English political life. It is hopeless to conserve a nation's identity if the blood of its people, and the unity of its culture, are exposed to alien influence on a large scale. Conservatives ignored the real nature of their creed: "We look in vain for any intelligence Conservative comment on these problems throughout the nineteenth century." The Tories, although they consistently resisted the measures that were proposed to remove the disabilities of the Jews in the nineteenth century did not, as they should have, base their objections on the question of race. No-one seemed to recognise the real conservative principle that a nation with individuality is a segregated ethnic unit, and that if its identity is to be conserved, it must be protected from the influence of other segregated peoples. The object of conservatism is to conserve the identity of the nation in every sense, not "to be pleasant, hospitable and open-hearted at all costs". Vague feelings of revolt moved the Conservatives to oppose the admission of the Jew to civil rights, but they never properly understood whether it was desirable to allow the Jew to influence English culture and a character by miscegenation. In the debates on the Naturalisation Bill, both in the Commons and the Lords, not a sign of the "old Tory spirit" was manifested.

Ludovici was most perturbed by the immigration of unprecedented numbers of Asiatics and Negroes into Britain in the post war era. He thought to understand the "supine inactivity" of the Government in regard to the 'problem' of miscegenation requires a knowledge of what had happened in England since 1939. He thought this all the more
necessary seeing that during most of the period covering this
black immigration, an alleged 'Conservative Party' had been in
charge of the nation's destinies. The reason is that ever since
1939, the Conservative Party had felt itself compelled to embrace
the opposition to fascism. And, in so doing had surrendered "the
wisest and most valuable Conservative principles". Like the
politicians of other parties, the Conservatives, shouted 'Nay!' to
every Nazi. 'Yea!' to Life, and subscribed to a number of socialist
beliefs, which with the traditions of the Empire behind them, were
quite novel and strange. When, therefore, from the standpoint of
conserving the nation's identity, foreign races poured into England
from her colonial possessions, Ludovici claimed that genuine 'conservatives'
like he claimed to be, were perplexed. In the case of the determined
opposition to Nazi racial laws, Ludovici thought English 'conservatives'
had not forgotten the lies that had played their part in hostilities.

Ludovici's racial diagnosis of degeneration was certainly not
inconsistent with the beliefs of his mentor, Nietzsche. In Nangel
Fellowes, the Jewish Nietzschean, Dr. Heltado, proclaims that the glory
of ancient Egypt still survives in his racial memory, and his heart,
filled with its after glow, sickens at the sight of modern Europe.
In What Woman Wishes we are told that one of the heroes, Lord Firle,
believed in the principle that England at her zenith had been the
creation of the national character:

"Foreign blood, or foreign influences, however exalted they might be in their own home, could, if imported into this country, only dilute or destroy the national character, and ultimately undermine the fabric of the Empire."

In Ludovici's Man's Descent from the Gods; or, the complete case
against prohibition, of 1921, he interprets the 'myth' of Prometheus
as embodying the truth of an actual racial cross. He reckons the gods

221
of the myth were descended from a superior race that had condescended to effect a union with an inferior race, and had, therefore, already experienced some degeneration. The natural attitude of a healthy superior race is one of aloofness and contempt to all other races. Zeus, was one of the true-bred off spring of the cross, who resembled in every particular the superior, immigrant race. Prometheus, on the other hand, was a perfect blend of the two races, and therefore very much bigger than the men of either the superior or the inferior race. The Holy Bible informs us that after the sons of God had taken the daughters of men as wives there were giants on the earth. Ludovici believed the moral effects of racial crosses is that whereas fertility and size are increased, character is destroyed:

...Thus Eurasians and Mulattoes and cross bred Europeans and Chinese are proverbial for their unreliability, shiftiness and even dishonesty. Where the blend is perfect, obviously both moral characters are destroyed; both inherited moral attributes tend to neutralise each other, and leave but a residuum of savage primary characters behind, denuded of their usual overlap of social and aesthetic inhibitions.

Prometheus, therefore, appears as of no moral character in the myth. The right to fetch fire from the superior race, which was originally in possession of kindling it, was subject to rules wisely laid down by Zeus, as he knew of the deleterious effects of fire on food. However, Prometheus the demagogue, had promised the inferior race concessions from Zeus, stole fire, and brought about evil for the inferior race. Ludovici then proceeds to identify the gods of ancient myth. He reckons Uranus was of the same race as the God of the Semites - the Jehovah of the Old Testament. This race must have been sufficiently large and widely distributed to have had representatives both in Asia and Europe. They are the 'Dionysians' rather than the 'Prometheans', who spawned Western civilisation. The 'dionysian type', the "men-gods", are the ancestors of the
Cro-Magnon race who reached their zenith in the Paleolithic Age, were artistic, and became absorbed by other peoples in the Neolithic Age. They were the gods of the Jews, Greeks, Persians and Indians. They were the greatest race on earth and became absorbed by the Aryans. Uranus was a Cro-Magnon. When, therefore, Aeschylus makes Prometheus say that he has lingered thirty thousand years in chains, after being punished by Zeus, he shows that he was aware of the vast antiquity of the myth. A similar process of "reasoning", applied to the first and second verses of the sixth chapter of Genesis would lead, according to Ludovici, to the conclusion that the God of the Jews and Christians was also a Cro-Magnon. The modern European, the product of the miscegenation between the Cro-Magnons and Aryans, is very much inferior to the Cro-Magnon race which existed over fifty thousand years ago.

The fact that the Cro-Magnons have not survived, despite their superiority, demonstrates both the extreme danger of miscegenation and that the "struggle of life is indiscriminate".

The democratic contempt of blood and family, which is based upon the belief in equality, and leads to miscegenation on a universal scale, must be reckoned among the deep causes of modern degeneration, according to Ludovici. In his Violence, Sacrifice and War, he defines a nation as consisting of either a pure race, or else a compound of two or more races which have attained to homogeneity through long segregation and inbreeding. Everything else is a mere population or biological proletarian, examples of which are:

...the Levantines, the hybrids of Haiti, Liberia, South America, North America, and South Africa, and the mongrel hordes which inhabit all the large trading ports of the world, such as Shanghai, Hong Kong, Columbo, Alexandria, Port Said, Cape Town, Zanzibar, and Marseilles.
In contrast, the ancient Egyptians, the Hindus, the Chinese, the Jews, the Greeks, the Romans, the English and the Japanese, are nations. Only they can contribute to culture and civilisation. To break down frontiers in order to merge people in one fraternal embrace would be to convert them into "mongrel hordes that ... swarm like chattering monkeys from Babel." The instinct of aloofness in the races, whether pure or mixed, which became through their geographical position, or their artificial boundaries, segregated and inbred, and which produced the great civilisations and cultures of the world, was a special manifestation of the instinct of self-preservation, to preserve what was precious in the blood. People who have long followed different lines of development, lived different lives, pursued different ideals, and evolved different characters, cannot unite without causing serious disharmonies both of physiology and psychology in their offspring. Especially, Ludovici believed, since the bodily parts of both parents are inherited independently.

In England by 1760, according to Ludovici, the wholesale miscegenation which began chiefly in Cromwell's time, had so far altered the fibre of the nation that she began to make successive mistakes in her domestic, colonial and foreign policy. But, still the garnered strength of her centuries of isolation and inbreeding allowed her to continue in military and naval supremacy until the time of Queen Victoria's Diamond Jubilee, in 1897, when at long last the inferior blood in her people caused the tide to turn.

Miscegenation conceals and spreads ill-health and all qualities, desirable or undesirable, diluting and mixing them. Ludovici believed the chief effects of miscegenation on the constitution are: Degeneracy, by inducing reversion; dysfunction and disease, by the production of individuals whose bodies are discordant jumbles of
unrelated parts from various unlike stocks; increase of national morbidity, owing to the spread of disease among sound stock.\textsuperscript{237} He regretted that too little attention is paid in modern civilised societies to disparities of race in mating, and their effect on child birth.\textsuperscript{238}

Ludovici's racial diagnosis of degeneration is most evident in his pseudonymous book of 1938, \textit{Jews, and the Jews in England}. He asserts that the Jews are a highly selected group of the Semitic race.\textsuperscript{239} Segregation, inbreeding, and long periods of communal life led under the rule of the same values, the conditions essential to the production of a race, were repeatedly imposed upon them by themselves or by their enemies.\textsuperscript{240} Indeed, from a common primeval source, mankind ultimately became differentiated into Mongoloids, Negroids, Australoids and Caucasians, by segregation of groups, inbreeding, and the specialisation among these groups that comes from meeting different difficulties, different climatic conditions, and observing different dietary and other values over long periods.\textsuperscript{241} In the Jews of the Great Dispersion, Europeans were still confronted with the members of a homogeneous race.\textsuperscript{242} According to Ludovici's monism as the Jew has survived as a 'type', there could be no question of the Jews not constituting a distinct race.\textsuperscript{243} The expulsion of the Jews from England by Edward I was right and necessitous.\textsuperscript{244} But, many poor Jews settled in England, probably accepted baptism and were thenceforward reckoned as English and adopted English names. Ludovici believed this constituted adequate evidence for assuming an influx of Semitic blood into the medieval English population, and accounts for the marked Jewish 'types' living as Englishmen, passing among their fellows as Englishmen and claiming to be of purely Anglo-Saxon or Celtic ancestry.\textsuperscript{245} The Jews inherited from their original state as nomads a complex of mental habits, emotions, gifts and tastes, such,
for instance, as their inability to become, or to feel rooted
to any territory, hence their lack of appreciation and capacity
for a territorial national's attachment to a particular soil and
environment. Such, too, as their inability to understand property
as a privilege involving duties and responsibilities; their
incapability of building up a society in which the relations of
the various classes and of their members are based on co-operation.

Owing to the Jews' characteristics inherited and acquired from
their Asiatic Bedouin origin, their long association with civilisation
and big cities, and their hard struggle for that narrow isthmus of
land which included all the principal trade routes between three
continents in the ancient world, they, according to Ludovici,
naturally tend to scorn the more laborious and slower methods of
accumulating wealth. The individualism of the Jew inherited from
his ancestors, and combined with his native 'hardness', render the
Jews incapable of understanding property except as individual
possession free from all obligations and duties. The rapacity of
the Jews is predictable, according to Ludovici, when we bear in mind
their derivation from a desert people:

...For how can an independent nomad, moving with all his
personal family and goods from pasture to pasture and
from oasis to oasis, conceive of any gregarious attitude
towards property, or of any obligations implicit in his
possessions, other than those he feels perhaps towards
his own children?

The Jews are an ethnic 'type' whose physical composition is different
from that of Englishmen. Difference of morphology means they are
incompatible as regards 'culture potential'. A truth regretably
disregarded by the English legislature of the nineteenth century
which liberated the Jews from civil disabilities and permitted their
intrusion into English public life. When the Jews oppose European
conservatism they are oblivious to their own "fits of Conservatism"
in the past, out of expediency:
What Esra did in Jerusalem in 485 BC, what
Nehemiah did in the same city in 445 BC, is conveniently forgotten, if it is a matter of ridiculing the
actions of a Tory like the Earl of Malmesbury in opposing the Bill to repeal the civil disabilities
of Jews, or if it is important that the National Socialists of Germany should be refuted and ridiculed.

On the other hand, when it is a matter of a Jew trying to get himself accepted as a conservative, nobody can speak in a manner more persuasive about the fundamental principles of conservatism that Ludovici thought actuated German National Socialism, than Disraeli himself. The Jews have a tendency to convert a society based on a mutualistic conception of property, and on a system of graded service with protection of the subordinate in return for his obedience, into modern capitalism. And, they ultimately have a tendency to meet the inevitable disintegration of capitalist society, by switching to communism. For these reasons Ludovici thought prudence dictated a policy of exclusion of both the Jew and his influence from all those departments of English life in which Jewish influence may alter the identity of the nation, otherwise, it could not be conserved:

Ludovici submitted that when once a well-defined national character has established the institutions and customs suited to its peculiar tastes, capacities and virtues, these institutions can be modified only by attacking the national 'type' or stock. He regretted that truths readily acknowledged in the breeding, health and satisfactory nurture of animals, are hardly ever applied to man. A segregated people in a state of nature tend to become uniform in their somatology and psychology and conflicts of a physiological and psychological order
are gradually eliminated through natural selection. If they mix with others differently constituted such standardised people become disharmonious and disproportionate, unbalanced and, therefore, functionally faulty. The English were once, and for a long period of their history, standardised. They degenerated because in the mechanisms governing heredity throughout animal life, including humanity, mixture of races causes the offspring to inherit the disparate bodily parts of their parents. One of the major consequences of miscegenation, Ludovici believed, is reversion; that is, the reversion towards a stage of development which each of a mongrel's parents has already surpassed and left far behind. According to Ludovici, the prodigious increase in demented, neurotic and maladjusted person, has occurred because of the reckless miscegenation, whether of races, 'types', or merely occupational family strains, that had been going on for over three centuries. The urgent need felt by the members of the Establishment to revile and reject every feature of Nazi Germany, especially the race measures which Ludovici believed most faithfully reflected the attitude of the Englishmen who established the British Empire, had meant that the British public had everywhere been inculcated with prejudices which even their aunts would have rejected out of hand at the turn of the century:

The result was that fashionable opinion in England soon began, simply on the grounds that a point of view or a policy savoured of the Third Reich, to condemn out of hand many a sound judgement and attitude which the English nation at home and abroad formally championed with all their might, and which in Thackeray's day would have been stoutly advocated by Thackeray himself. And, foremost among such attitudes was the rooted objection to miscegenation.

Ludovici thought one needs merely to think of the lethal consequences to a patient if blood of the wrong group is introduced into his bloodstream to realise the mendacity of the opponents of racial discrimination.
However, Ludovici's reasons for believing the race had degenerated were not merely confined to miscegenation. He cited indiscriminate breeding within the race as another potent cause of degeneration.

In his *A Defence of Aristocracy*, a text book for Tories, he eulogised a caste system, and regretted the tendency of Englishmen not to marry those to whom they are consanguineous, especially relatives. His novel of 1918, *Mansel Fellowes*, is a diatribe against indiscriminate breeding. Both Mansel Fellowes and Richard Latimer, the heroes of the novel, are specimens of 'flourishing life', but the latter gets engaged to Colonel Morrison's daughter, Gladys, who is described as degenerate. Richard Latimer did not have the perception to appreciate that Mansel Fellowes gave the greatest promise of life.

Ludovici laments:

...What a ghastly thing it was that the taste of men was such that this beautiful virgin could have been overlooked for one instance, while inferior girls were being chosen by the score! that was the real tragedy! that was the real crime! it was the gruesome tragedy of all precious things in an Age that was gradually compassing its own doom by methodically and consistently choosing the wrong thing.

In *The Goddess that Grew Up*, Peter Oliver never, unfortunately, transferred some of the bitterness he consumed in private over his marriage to the non-vital Maud, to a society which disregarded the eugenic aspects of marriage. So accustomed was the world to the spectacle which Peter Oliver's household presented, and to the 'normality' of lives blighted by imperfect health that nobody in his circle was aware of any sorrow in his life. Later in the novel *Mrs Oliver*’s desire to live fades, her "spring of life had gone", and she dies. Again, in Ludovici's novel of 1923, *French Beans*, although the "fire of life sparked and leaped" within Domina Biggadyke, she was less successful with men than her private secretary, Catherine Urquhart, who, frail, delicate and friable, aloof from the physical concerns of life, had many pressing admirers, so thoroughly misled were men as to the desirable mate.
Ludovici thought a tendency whereby opposites are married, according to which, dark crossed with fair, tall with short, and the sick with the sound, is neither more nor less than a recipe for degeneration.\(^{270}\) What happens to the body of the offspring of dissimilar types is necessarily reflected in its nervous controls and ganglia. If, therefore, there is conflict in the former, as there must be in people random-bred from disparate parents and stock, it also follows there is conflict, of varying degrees of gravity, in the psychological equipment.\(^{271}\) Mongelisation does not merely occur when races mix. Ludovici thought that in England this is now probably its rarest manifestation:

...It occurs chiefly in healthy, sound stocks, mongrelising themselves by mating with unsound, weedy and tainted stocks; or in well-constituted and good-looking stocks mating with ill-constituted, badly-grown, and repulsive stocks; or by the mating of wholly disparate types - short and stumpy with tall and slim, fat and heavy with spouses whose endocrine balance is normal; vigorous and hard mating with weakly and soft. So that ugliness becomes not merely the hereditary feature of a family line, but is created afresh in every generation and family by the confusion and chaos resulting from the jumble of incompatible traits inherited independently from wholly disparate parents (his italics ).\(^{272}\)

Ludovici even suggested that actual race mixture was now a comparatively rare occurrence, at least in Western Europe. However, the very same consequences which result from race mixture, also result from what, in Western Europe, was, Ludovici thought, now so common as to be almost universal, the dysgenic mating of different types which accounted for the prevailing morbidity.\(^{273}\)


One of the main reasons for England's degeneration that Ludovici continually
referred to was the prevalence of the Christian ethic and Puritanism in England. In his *A Defence of Aristocracy*, a textbook for Tories, Ludovici says that the relation of the ecclesiastical body to the people in Europe had deleterious influences by being independent of the government or feudal ruler. By ministering to the hearts of the people, not for a national or racial purpose, but for a purpose that lay beyond races and nations, it undermined the jealous love of race and nationality, and, by divorcing the idea of aristocracy from the noble duty of caring for the hearts of the masses undermined the 'ruler-aristocrat'. His diatribe against Puritanism is to be found in Chapter V, "The Metamorphosis of the Englishman of the Seventeenth Century", in which he asserts that Puritanism, by reducing the Englishman's love of life, prepared the way for industrial capitalism. Englishmen had to learn that vital beauty which leads and lures to life, to the joy in life and to the multiplication of life, is neither essential nor helpful to the factory. The profound problem with which England began blindly to grapple in the Seventeenth Century was to discover the religion essentially allied to trade and commerce. The religion that was to consolidate the masters and rear the slaves for capitalism was Puritanism. Puritanism, hostile to the flesh, necessarily suppressed the highest spirits, vigour, and energy, of the working classes. Though Puritanism did not become an organised force until the Seventeenth Century in England, the Puritan had always existed sporadically, individually and locally, "just as sick animals represent a certain percentage of all animals born every year." The puritan, sick in body and mind, cannot lead a full life. Calvin was:

...a miserable, god-forsaken invalid who, racked with fevers, asthma, gout and the stone, dragged his foul body through this life as if the world were a mausoleum, and himself the gangrenous symbol of the death of all human joys.
Essentially, the Puritan is a 'boy' who has acquired a moral standard of judgement, and transfers his inadequacies to the rest of mankind. Commercial morality became and remained united with the morality of the Puritans. They shared a profound suspicion of flourishing, healthy and robust life; indifference to beauty, whether in the human body or an art; hostility to sexuality and high spirits; a preference for meekness, inferiority of vigour and vitality; and a deteriorated love of life and joy of life, which rendered millions not merely resigned and submissive, but actually content in town, factory and office surroundings. According to Ludovici, the metamorphosis of the Englishman into a devitalised creature that accepted capitalism, was accomplished by Puritanism, which met the requirements of human profit and greed. The Puritans' depressing and life-sapping creed initiated a general decline in vitality by promoting industrial capitalism. The first direct attack that the Puritans made upon the dietetic habits of Englishmen consisted in an attempt at suppressing the consumption of wholesome alcoholic beverages. They promoted the introduction of the life-sapping drugs which contributed to the physical impoverishment of the working classes of England - tea and coffee. Ludovici proclaims as "one who has written so much about Nietzsche the Anti-Christ, and who has been engaged for so long in propogating his doctrines", that the English working classes could expect little justice or mercy from the Puritans. The life-despising morality of the Puritans and Whigs had been paramount in England since the last upholder of good taste and popular liberty, Charles I, was overthrown and murdered by them in the fifth decade of the seventeenth century. Nevertheless, not all of Ludovici's allusions to religion are deprecatory. In his A Defence of Conservatism, he concedes that the
earliest guilds were religious guilds inspired by the Holy Catholic Church, which in itself was an aristocratic institution with a strict hierarchy, although deprived of blood descent, and was largely responsible for the cooperative organisation of labour and trade, as it was for the greater part of the Middle Ages. Despite its non-pagan creed, Catholicism retained much of what was valuable in the classic world, including the insistence upon quality. However, Ludovici's attitude towards Catholicism was ambivalent. This ambivalence was never conferred on his attitude to Puritanism and Protestantism. He thought the Puritans were the worst of the Christians, because they prepared the way for the Industrial Revolution, by inaugurating an era of bodily neglect and hostility to bodily concerns and concerns of beauty.* In Chapter V, "Religion and the Constitution" Ludovici reckons that through the Reformation, an attempt at fortifying temporal authority against the international force of Catholicism, a stimulus was unintentionally given to a division of authority in the land by the creation of the Protestant Church. The Tories, as hereditary supporters of the Crown and Church, were saddled with a religious institution which, "from the standpoint of the Tory belief in authority, subordination and order", was a pure anomaly. Protestantism establish the doctrine of private judgement which, while it was ultimately to be deployed as a means of opposing the authority of the Pope, became the great corrosive of authority and tradition in matters unconnected with religious controversy. The principle of the right of private judgement soon became a disruptive and subversive influence in national life. Ludovici believed English Conservatives had been most unfairly handicapped by the ecclesiastical polity which they had been obliged to carry along with them for four centuries. At least Catholicism was more compatible than Protestantism with authority in general. The possession of such
doctrines as primitive Christianity offers, coupled with the right of private judgement, did not induce the English, or any other Protestant people to political stability: "least of all does it confirm them in their native and instinctive conservatism."^296

Of course, in decrying Christianity, Ludovici was continuing the task of his mentor, Nietzsche, who had written that Christianity was the cry of the sick and the degenerate, those "who suffer from life as from a disease". The Jews performed the inversion of valuations, which shunned life and led to Christianity's 'slave-insurrection' in morals. Christian values represent the descending line of life, and with them, man must perforce degenerate. Nietzsche could hear the weary and those incapable of the struggle of life, cry Christianity. In Christian values, Nietzsche read nihilism, decadence, degeneration, and death. They were calculated to favour the multiplication of the least desirable on earth. Nietzsche's charge of falsehood against Christianity was not a moral one but a charge of an error that led to humanity's degeneration. That Christianity had 'lied' was a subject of alarm to Nietzsche, not on grounds of morality, but because it was hostile to life. Mansel Fellowes, although the Nietzschean Dr. Melhado concedes that the Catholic Church stands for order, he protests to Father Jevington that the socialist revolutionary discovers from the Christian source of Catholicism that God has chosen the base things of this world and the things that are despised. The masses learn that they will be called to judge angels later on, and that therefore how much more can they judge the things that pertain to this life. This was the discovery of the first Protestants, the first insolent Catholics. Thus, disorder springs from the creed of the Church itself. That is why Dr. Melhado, who wishes to see his fellow men "more certain of the essential
truths of Life"?, cannot trust the Catholic Church. It led to Protestantism once, and might do so again. Richard Latimer, who consciously disavowed Christianity, still unconsciously, like thousands of his heretical followers, felt and thought like a Christian in his choice of a mate, and other vital matters. Nevertheless, he still saw about him all the degeneration that Dr. Melhado traced to Christian influences:

...He saw plainly the havoc Christian influence had made of human beauty, human health, and lofty human aims; he realised now almost acutely as Melhado himself, how dangerous had been the doctrine that lays such emphasis upon the soul and so little on the body; he saw how successfully two thousand years of Christianity with its ugly child Protestantism and the latter's still uglier abortion Puritanism had reduced the whole world to a huge commercial combine without either aesthetic aims or an aesthetic justification.

However, Richard Latimer's unconscious Christian bias made him suspicious of his temptation for Mansel Fellowes's vitality. In his choice between Mansel Fellowes and his non-vital fiancée, Gladys Morrison, he was sure that Dr. Melhado's insistence that he should marry Mansel Fellowes was right; but, he wavered, his deep respect for Father Jevington's insistence on loyalty to one's fiancée, and a growing doubt as to the finality of his atheism, made him question whether the standpoint of Life could always prevail. Indeed, Richard Latimer is finally converted to Catholicism and renounces Mansel Fellowes. On this occasion, Dr. Melhado says to Father Jevington that life and he have lost, as usual, against Christianity.

In What Woman Wishes, Mr. A.M. Landrassy exclaims to Lord Firle that his sons, Lord Chiddingly's, political ideal, that children should be taught that not every man has a right to his own opinion, and to say that he has is a dangerous and senseless lie would, regrettably, be regarded as an attack on the Church, though not on the Holy Catholic Church. Maud Oliver, in The Goddess that Grew Up, becomes perfectly
adapted to her career of illness once she adopts Catholicism.\textsuperscript{313}

With all Peter Oliver's health, his vigour, and his youth, she begins to pity her husband, that much had her adoption of Roman Catholicism done for her:

\ldots From a position of humble and pitiable helplessness, from which she had looked up to her husband's enormous vitality and health as something beyond her reach, and deeply to be envied, she had now been transformed into a creature who could pity him, who could afford to indulge his smallest whim, and smile peacefully and compassionately over his trifling pleasures.\textsuperscript{314}

Sir Thomas Braintree, in \textit{French Poems}, informs Andre de Loudon that Christianity, which does not value a man's and a woman's value according to the extent to which they guarantee in their own person the survival of the race in a desirable form, is one of the primary causes of contemporary degeneration.\textsuperscript{315}

Puritanism can deal with life only "by amputating and limiting it".\textsuperscript{316} Christianity had exerted a powerful influence in favour of ugliness, degeneracy and disease.\textsuperscript{317} The English people were misled by their prelates who vociferated according to Ludovici, against the relatively benign and creative regime of German National Socialism, whilst pretending there was anything or anybody worth respecting in the Government of modern Russia.\textsuperscript{318}

There were in the Puritan attitude all the prerequisites of a democratic ideology, thought Ludovici. It appealed to the natural meanness of those who wished to exploit their fellows and who chafed under controlled conditions, particularly to those members of the governing classes who wished for a free hand in their relations with the working classes. It prepared the way for the rule of laissez-faire in every department of English Life.\textsuperscript{319} The English Reformed Church
was riddled with Puritans, and since their doctrines had political implications, their followers were determined to fight for what they called freedom and independence, not only in religious but also in political matters. From the beginning Charles I opposed the demands of Puritanism, determined to continue the policy of those Kings who had protected the masses and been "the gradual socialisers of their particularist people", he tried to confirm the best features of medieval legislation. Ludovici thought the need for all these measures on the part of Charles I shows that the old values which, in the past, had placed national before private interest, were beginning to be undermined, and his efforts to restore medieval feudal principles infuriated the powerful Puritans. However, the Puritans ultimately succeeded, and by executions on the block removed the obstacles to their nefarious schemes. Once Charles I had been eliminated, the face of England changed completely as laissez-faire, exploitation and fraud, became rampant. The Calvinistic element of hostility to the body and to the flesh, compounded with the license everywhere allowed, in both the food industries and the condition of labour, led to a general decline in the national health. Material prosperity became the aim, even at the cost of national degeneracy. Puritanism implies a contempt of the body and is, therefore, negative to Life.

What least ingratiated Ludovici to Christianity was the benevolence it prompted. In his A Defence of Conservatism, Ludovici says that many Christian doctrines and valuations, when once they are divorced from the firm and orderly framework of Catholicism, become susceptible of being used for revolutionary purposes:

...such doctrines and valuations as the equality of men; the hostility to riches; the desirability of 'unselfishness'; the virtuousness of sacrificing the greater to the less; the notion that there is such a thing as
a universal and immanent justice (which in the popular mind appears to be violated when one child is born in a slum and another in Park Lane); and the duty to do unto others that which we would they should do unto us.325

Extreme liberalism or socialism are indebted to the steady incalculation upon the masses, by Protestantism and its representatives in England, of the doctrine of Divine Revelation plus the right of private judgement.326 The development of Catholic doctrine had been the work of interpreters who claimed that their interpretation of the New Testament was valid for all believers. However, Protestantism overthrew Catholic interpretation and restored primitive Christianity to the faithful. A soon as the New Testament became once more the sole source of religious inspiration, the right of private judgement led to the same result as in the age preceding the complete establishment of Catholic doctrine - communism.327 The immediate effect of Protestantism in Germany was so terrifying that Luther himself turned against the peasants whose contumacy he had helped to provoke with his doctrines.328

These views are consistent with those of Ludovici's mentor, Nietzsche. Christianity made life endurable for the 'slaves'.329 The religion of pity and patient toleration allowed parasites to survive in our midst.330 Egoism in him who is physiologically botched, meant the promotion and enhancement of an undesirable element in society.331 According to Ludovici, the steady infection of the healthy mass of the people by the Christian perpetuation, preservation and propagation of the nation's unhealthiest elements, has acted as a gradual poison in four ways: As a depressing spectacle and a destroyer of joy to the sensitive; as an unnecessary burden upon the healthy, exacting too heavy a toll on their energy and good spirits; as a source of deterioration to the healthiest elements in the race; and by making it difficult for the desirable percentage of very successful creatures
to be born, those creatures who, "by their beauty, grace and wanton spirits, ennoble life, by holding up a lofty example of Life's highest possibilities." Humanitarianism is merely an inverted form of cruelty; instead of directing their cruelty against the undesirable, humanitarians sacrifice the hale to the physiologically botched.

In Ludovici's novel of 1924, The Taming of Don Juan, he laments that Almina Underhill did not feel as miserable as Ludovici thought was natural whenever she accompanied her aunts to the Underhill Home. Nevertheless, she always felt a shudder of 'instinctive' loathing when her aunts made her shake hands with the most nauseating and hopeless incurable among her audience:

...The only influence which had hitherto forced her resolutely to conceal this attitude, had been her own innocent conviction that she was really being good in behaving in this way, and that her aunts also were good, and the whole of England was good in concentrating all assistance, all succour, and all charity upon life's most hopeless products, while the growing minority of life's successes were harassed with ever increasing difficulties and obstacles.

All the 'natural' impulses in her that tended to make her the adverse critic of her aunts she regarded as selfish, impure, and bad. She began to feel uneasy in her conscience if she was aware of any revolt against the charitable work among the sick, the feeble, and the defective which her aunts imposed upon themselves and her. However later in the novel, when Almina inherits her Aunt Clara's fortune, she was staggered by the vast sums she had to pay in merely continuing her Aunt Clara's extensive charities, and frequently, in consultation with her solicitor, began to question Christian pity and whether the claims on her resources might not be reduced. She had witnessed so much harrowing poverty among the people of the surrounding villages, and so much misery among desirable people,
that charity for the undesirable began to appear illogical to her.\textsuperscript{337}

Life with her aunts had sufficiently awakened her to the danger of Christian benevolence: "the slow but steady degeneration of all vital impulses into mere useless and self-gratifying appetites."\textsuperscript{338}

This change in Almina is encouraged by the return of Gilbert Hilburn, the hero, from the trenches of World War I. In conversation with Almina, about the principle of sacrifice, he upheld that the curse of modern England is the Christian principle according to which no-one hesitates to succour the degenerate and the undesirable.\textsuperscript{339} Gilbert persuades Almina that Christianity is the sociological formula for degeneration.\textsuperscript{340}

According to Ludovici, the Christian principle according to which all human life is protected, is supplemented by modern medicine which maintains a vast multitude of sub-normal and undesirable people alive. It does not endow them with a fresh joie-de-vivre, or with a capacity for leading full lives, but just about sustains them and allows them to multiply and perpetuate their decadent stocks.\textsuperscript{341} The consequence was that "waste human material", consisting of idiots, defectives, lunatics, incurables, cripples, and the physiologically botched, constituted a gratuitous penalisation, an intolerable limitation, upon sound life.\textsuperscript{342} Christianity had imposed pity, in the sense of an 'irrational' reflex at the sight of suffering, so that it must be forthcoming whether its expression promotes or hinders the welfare of the nation.\textsuperscript{343} Christianity revealed an insufficient grasp of the nature of sound government, by stressing the duty of pity, charity, and unselfishness in the ruler, rather than inculcating on all believers the fundamental truth that the 'virtues' of charity were, in all but exceptional circumstances, alien to a healthy state of society.\textsuperscript{344} The resources of the nation were lavished on preserving
what imprudence should have been discarded:

...even Royalty, when time hangs on its hands can think of nothing better to do than to grace a hospital, a home for cripples, the deaf and the dumb, and the blind, with its august presence, no-one makes a gesture, much less a bequest, which might promote the multiplication of the sound and desirable stocks still surviving in our midst.

Perhaps Ludovici’s most trenchant criticism of Christian benevolence is to be found in his *Religion for Infidels*, of 1961. He reckoned that even if the “army of defectives” that Christian benevolence had promoted did not contaminate and infect the sounder elements, it handicapped them, imposed limits on their capacity to multiply and thus jeopardised their survival. There was but one reason for contemporary indiscriminate pity - Christianity enjoined its practice.

The fact that in the nineteen-twenties a Church of England prelate was tolerated on the council table of the Eugenics Society, Ludovici thought, indicated that there was no understanding of the essentials of the 'problem' of degeneracy. Incidentally, Ludovici declined an invitation to join the eugenic society because he could see no chance of realising its aims so long as its council could retain Dean Inge on its Board. The compassionate plea for the least precious specimens in the nation was revelatory of the powerful hold that Christian morality had on the impulses and sentiments of modern people.

The contemporary prevalence of merely 'medicated survival' was only explicable as the deleterious influence of Christianity which rendered all indifferent to human repulsiveness. Prone as modern people were to declare themselves agnostics, or even atheists, acknowledging allegiance to no denomination of the Christian faith, the majority of professedly emancipated Christians were still champions of the most deleterious of Christian moral precepts. Ludovici’s hostility to Christianity adequately summarised in his "My Testament" to his *Religion for Infidels*,

241
of which the following is an extract:

Post no priest beside my litter;
Carve no cross upon my bier!
As a Christophobist bitter
Let me pass unchurched from here

Even if I be instructed
To appear before the throne,
Where a god head has conducted
World affairs since time unknown;

If moreover he engages
His recording angel there,
To recite a few score pages
Of my sins let him beware!

I will range his whole creation,
From the tapeworm to the fly,
And await his explanation
As to why, and why, and why?

So invoke no Heavens daughter
When I'm laid beneath the sward,
And don't waste your holy-water
On my oak-stained coffin-board!

3. Ideological: Liberalism and Socialism

Indisputably, Ludovici believed the major cause of England's degeneration was liberalism. Some of his most virulent attacks on liberalism are to be found in his *English Liberalism*, written for the English Array movement in 1939. He believed in all countries liberalism had meant: The uncritical misunderstanding of all change as progress; the utmost extension of freedom to all whether for good or evil in determining the destiny of their nation, which entails the deterioration of the national standard and tradition, as only the elite can elevate the mass; the acceptance of an extreme individualism in which private interests will take precedence over the national interest; the acceptance of the principles of independence and separateness,
which assumes the possibility of private rights in property. The consequences of these principles of liberalism has everywhere been, according to Ludovici, "the disintegration, decay and degeneration of the societies in which they have prevailed." The accretions English liberalism received from such English and French thinkers as Locke, with his false assumption regarding the supposed equality of mankind; Bentham, with false assumptions regarding the contentment and happiness necessarily secured by democracy; Rousseau, with his false assumption that man, being born good, the evils of society must be due to environment - only augmented liberalism's specious plausibility, they never succeeded in correcting its fundamental unsoundness. The denial of the value of good blood and good stock, by liberals, aggravated the havoc already wrought in England's health and stamina by the Puritan contempt of monism. A further specious claim of liberalism, according to Ludovici, is its unbalanced advocacy of humanitarianism as a means of mending the damage done to the masses by poverty, ill-health, and the general neglect of bodily concerns. Congenital liberalism had become a reality. Although the many who were afflicted by it, particularly women, might imagine that their liberal beliefs were the spontaneous products of their own private cogitations, they were really little more than the victims of an atmosphere infected with it. Ludovici thought England was faced with a colossal task of reconstruction and restoration - the eradication of liberalism. It meant restoring real liberty to the working masses; recovering the health and stamina of the nation; calling a halt to uncontrolled humanitarianism; reviving agriculture, the oldest and most essential industry in the country; re-establishing the old 'gregarious' attitude towards property; creating a fresh elite, who could inspire their followers to the reversal of the deleterious effects of liberalism. He wrote one other book purportedly dealing with his
deoryal of liberalism. The Specious Origins of Liberalism, the
genesis of a delusion, of 1967, which was his last published book.

Its twenty nine chapters coincide, approximately, with numerous
articles and series of articles he contributed to the South African
Observer during the preceding years. He reckoned words such as

Ludovici's The Specious Origins of Liberalism, the genesis
of a delusion will hereafter be abbreviated to S.A.O.; the South
African Observer will be abbreviated to S.A.O.; 'approximately
coincides with' will be abbreviated to a.c.w.. In his series
"The Specious Origins of Liberalism", (No.1) S.A.O., March 1961, Volume VI,
No.11, pp. 8-9 a.c.w. "The Liberal Prescription" Chapter III of
S.O.L., pp. 32-36; (No. II) S.A.O., April 1961, Volume VI, No.12,
pp. 12-15 a.c.w. "Rulership and Responsibility", Chapter IV of
S.O.L., pp. 37-42; (No. III), S.A.O., May 1961, Volume VII, No.1,
pp. 9-10, a.c.w. "Phantom Life-Belts", Chapter VI of S.O.L.,
pp. 48-52; No. (5), S.A.O., June 1961, Volume VII, No.2, pp.9-10,
a.c.w. "The Sanctity of Private Property", Chapter VII of S.O.L.,
"Liberalism and The Reformation", Chapter VIII of S.O.L., pp. 58-63;
No.6, S.A.O., August 1961, Volume VII, No.4, pp. 9-10, a.c.w. "The
Natural Iniquity of Man", Chapter VIII of S.O.L., pp. 64-73; No.7,
S.A.O., September 1961, Volume VII, No.5, pp. 10-12 a.c.w. "Left-Wing
English Utopia", Chapter X of S.O.L., pp. 74-78; No.VIII S.O.L.,
October 1961, Volume VII, No.6, pp. 12-15 a.c.w. "Religious and
Political Sophistry", Chapter XI of S.O.L., pp. 79-82; No. IX, S.A.O.,
Liberal Humanity", Chapter XII of S.O.L., pp. 83-89; No.X, S.A.O.,
January 1962, Volume VII, No.8, pp. 11-12, a.c.w. "Haberdashery
and Aristocracy", Chapter XIII of S.O.L., pp. 90-93; No.XI, S.A.O.,
February 1962, Volume VII, No.9, pp. 9-11, a.c.w. "The Tone-Setting
Elite", Chapter XIV of S.O.L., pp. 94-98; No.XII S.A.O., March 1962,
Volume VII, No.10, pp. 11-12, a.c.w. "Constitutional Monarchy",
Chapter XV of S.O.L., pp. 99-104; No.XIII, S.A.O., April 1962, Volume VII,
No.11, pp. 13-14 a.c.w. "Quality in Human Heredity", Chapter XVI of
S.O.L., pp. 133-137; No. XIV, S.A.O., May 1962, Volume VII, No.12,
pp. 11-12, a.c.w. "Primogeniture and Selection in Matrimony",
Chapter XXII of S.O.L., pp. 139-142; No. XV, S.A.O., June 1962,
Volume VIII, No.1, pp. 11-12, a.c.w. "Primogeniture and Selection in
Matrimony", Chapter XXII of S.O.L., pp. 142-145; No.XVI S.A.O., July
1962, Volume VIII, No.2, pp. 10-11, a.c.w. "The Profanation of Private
Property", Chapter XXIII of S.O.L., pp. 149-152; No.XVIII, S.A.O.,
November 1962, Volume VIII, No.4, pp. 12-13, a.c.w. "Privilege and
Public Service", Chapter XXIV of S.O.L., pp. 153-155; No.XIX, S.A.O.,
December 1962, Volume VIII, No.5, pp. 10-12, a.c.w. "Indiscipline in
Aristocracy", Chapter XXV of S.O.L., pp. 156-160; No.XX S.A.O.,
January 1963, Volume VIII, No.6, pp. 12-13, a.c.w. "Habitual Anarchy",
Chapter XXVI of S.O.L., pp. 164-165; No. XX, S.A.O., January 1963,
Volume VIII, No.6, pp. 13-14, a.c.w. "Psychological Utopia",
Chapter XXVII of S.O.L., pp. 166-169. In his series "The Importance
of Racial Integrity", No. XVII, S.A.O., August 1959, Volume 5, No.4,
pp. 12-15 a.c.w. "Louis XV", Chapter XIX of S.O.L., pp. 124-127 (of);
No. XVI, S.A.O., July 1959, Volume 5, No.3, pp. 10-11 a.c.w. "Louis
XV", Chapter XIX of S.O.L., pp. 121-124 (of); No. XV, S.A.O., June 1959,
Volume 5, No.2, pp. 48-13 a.c.w. "Louis XIV", Chapter XIX of S.O.L.,

244
'fascist', 'nazi', 'reactionary', and even 'tory', had acquired pejorative meanings which were beginning to associate them with guilt and shame, through the prevalence of liberalism. He thought liberals had stepped into the vacuum left by the abuse of monarchical and aristocratic government, and mistakenly believed their position was permanent through defect in the aristocratic system of government per se. Liberals had severely limited the sphere of government. They overlooked the truth that government is not merely a matter of executive functions connected with the nation's relation with other countries, its armed forces, its maintenance of law and order, and the control of public finances, but essentially a matter of establishing a desirable way of life in the nation:

...the cry that did not fail to go up in the late nineteenth century and was enthusiastically taken up by men like Horatio Bottomley - I refer to the cry for a Government of Business Men - is evidence of how vulgarly limited the idea of Government was in the Liberal confraternity.

Liberals pronounced man fundamentally good and ignored his instinctive aggressiveness, self-indulgence and secret indifference to the public good when it was incompatible with his own advantage. With the democratic superstition, liberals deliberately associated all officially imposed discipline with 'fascism', so that it was generally frowned upon.

upon by all those who wished to appear good democrats. Ludovici thought the latest liberal hoax was that racial differences are quite insignificant and that racial discrimination is both wrong and superstitious, peculiar to fascists. It took the clarity of a caustic foreigner, Oswald Spengler, to realise the cause of the degeneracy of Europe, liberalism:

"What we recognise as order today and express in Liberal Institutions, is nothing but anarchy become a habit. We call it democracy, parliamentarianism, national government, but in fact it is the non existence of conscious responsible authority—a government."  

All the liberal misunderstandings of human nature and its plea for democracy could not possibly fail to pervert and corrupt the nation and wipe out all the accumulated treasure in virtue and sanity which had been fostered and stored during former, more rational and tasteful times:

...the Civilisation of Liberalism may be said to be still resting on human qualities cultivated in bygone times and is likely to survive only so long as the store of virtue and ability remains not wholly corrupted and frittered away.

I shall now proceed to examine the constituents of liberalism and socialism that Ludovici thought the potent causes of England's degeneration:

**Utilitarian Rationalism**

In his A Defense of Conservatism, Ludovici says that since the nation is a vital organism, constantly growing, it cannot remain in a position of stasis. Newcomers are either above or below the standard to which they are born. Therefore, they desire temporary instability and change. However, if the desire for change comes from the degenerate and it receives such euphemistic titles as 'The Fight for Progress' or 'The Struggle for Human Advancement' or 'The Battle for Light', a moral quality is imparted to their endeavours, which often paralyses or
Charles I's opponents, who were the lineal ancestors of the Whigs and modern Liberals, never cared for the happiness and contentment of the people. Although the first Factory Act was passed under a Liberal administration, it was chiefly the work of two men, Michael Thomas Sadler, a Tory, and the aristocrat Lord Ashley; and the whole of the Whig-capitalist section of the nation, including men like John Bright, Sir John Graham, Lord Brougham, Mr. Gladstone, and Richard Cobden, were fiercely opposed to it. He believed the chief cause and consequence of the disease of the nineteenth and early twentieth centuries was a "completely uncontrolled and unreasoning Liberalism." As the Nietzschean 'will to power' is fundamental to all life, no trace of realism is to be found when liberals speak of 'eternal peace' or a future 'living concord' for all mankind, or of any state in which violence, oppression and discord, have been eliminated.

To hold typically liberal views, therefore, and to assume that if we like we could all settle down to love one another and live in perfect amity and harmony together, is possible only to those idealists who are congenitally blind to the true character of all life.

In his A Defence of Aristocracy, a text book for Tories, Ludovici opposes his anti-rationalist theory of human nature to that of liberalism and utilitarian rationalism. He says, as Bergson had shown conclusively, man, in acquiring an infinitely greater range of adaptations has depended very largely upon his intellect, his rationalising faculty; "and this has been developed at the cost of his instincts." Man had been cut adrift from a large mass of ancestral selections and rejections of vital significance to life, and came to rely upon his inferior intellect. Life is a factor in the world process with which we can only be acquainted through the living. The 'taste of flourishing life' cannot be reached by merely taking thought or
The strong man is only directed by the 'inner voice' of his ruling instinct; the environment merely provides an anvil with which those who possess the instinct of ruling beat out their destiny, "beneath the racket and din of its titanic action." Ludovici reckoned no 'truth' could be attained in which race, family, class, and traditional bias or prepossession does not play its part. He neither conceded nor advocated the desirability of subordinating emotion to reason. He regarded the two as complementary and mutually limiting. This, he thought, explained the attitude of his mentor, Nietzsche, towards Socrates. Nietzsche thought Socrates had made a tyrant out of reason when the Greeks were suffering the dissolution of their instincts. Nietzsche had asserted that behind all logic there are valuations, "physiological demands, for the preservation of a certain mode of life." The criterion for the validity of an opinion should not be whether it is true, but how far it is life-promoting and life-preserving.

Richard Latimer, in Mansel Fellowes, though no longer a Christian, still "unconsciously"; like thousands of his heretical followers, felt and thought like a Christian in all vital matters, although he was an avowed Nietzschean. Gerald Swynnerton, in Catherine Doyle: the romance of a thrice-married lady tells his confidant, Knowles, that at first he could not understand the marriage of James Gordon, Egyptologist, with Catherine Doyle, tea girl, due to his liberal disposition and city prejudices, "'except in the way in which a cold-blooded scientist examines the throbbing entrails of a creature he is operating upon, can understand what is taking place beneath his scalpel?'" Later in the novel, he proclaims that he pities men who arrive at broad synthetical judgements concerning life, who
believe that experience and the knowledge of facts form the best equipment for philosophising. 'Philosophical' judgements are already embodied within us. Facts and experiences are but loadstones drawing us away from the treasures that lie embodied within us. The facts of our experience are but an insignificant veneer which threatens to conceal the vital instinctive knowledge that lies hidden within us. He despised English rationalists, from Locke to Spencer, who "'have been but children paddling in water which they have only helped to render turbid and muddy by their movements.'" Janet Perkins, or 'Jimper', the working class heroine of What Woman Wishes, was not analytical where her strongest wishes were concerned. When she goes to the offices of the Friends of Order in Pall Mall to look for Lord Chiddingly, whom she had first met fleetingly in France, she was not in the least conscious of the true motives actuating her, but only felt a longing to increase the interest of her life by becoming acquainted with Lord Chiddingly. Ludovici praises this lack of deliberation:

How happy is the mass of mankind in not knowing the true nature of the motives that actuate them; how simple it makes their conduct appear, how open and ingenuous their most venal actions, and how unblushing and innocent their most life-promoting! perhaps a good deal of the joy of life would vanish if everyone knew his own and his neighbour's true motives, and perhaps the so-called Art of Life itself consists precisely in the concealment of the true reasons behind the bulk of humanity's apparently most innocent activities.

Ludovici's Man's Descent from the Gods; or, the complete case against prohibition is, perhaps, his most anti-rational book. In the latter he exemplifies a typical fascist claim that history is a myth, a supra-rational myth that cannot be questioned by the individual's reason. The 'myth' of Prometheus is the narrative of a vast act of miscegenation that took place in pre-history. In the introduction,
"On Myths in General, and on the Prometheus Myth in Particular," he says that the myths of antiquity embodied truths about natural or social phenomena as the men of the past, from whom we have degenerated, had remarkably good memories. Ludovici then proceeds to an interpretation of the Prometheus myth of the Greeks, and assumes that Prometheus, Zeus, and the other gods of Olympus, like the gods of the Indians and Peruvians, and the gods of some Western Asiatic peoples, were derived rather from deified strangers than from ancestors of the same race. His reason for holding this belief is the traditions contained in the early myths themselves. The Earth, or the people of the earth, are the men and women who are regarded as everyday occurrences of the race perpetuating the myth. The gods that mingle with the daughters of the earth, are the new stock possessed of unaccustomed qualities. The alleged crossing of the earth with the gods records an actual cross which took place between an inferior race, in the myth of Prometheus the remote ancestors of modern European people, and a race so much superior as to appear divine to the inferior race. Thus, in Greek mythology, Uranus, first ruler of the world, marries Ge, the Earth. In Indian mythology Dyaus (Heaven) marries Prithivi (the Earth). In Semitic mythology, "the sons of God saw the daughters of men...; and they took their wives all of which they chose." Ludovici regards the main features of the myth of Prometheus as true. He reckons the lower races' complicity with Prometheus in the theft of fire, is probably why Zeus included them in his general condemnation through the agency of Pandora's Box. He then proceeds to identify the man-gods, the 'Dionysian type', as the descendants of a race which reached its zenith in the Paleolithic Age, which was simple, artistic, and degenerate in early Neolithic times; and which became absorbed by other peoples early in Neolithic times. They were a people numerous enough to extend over Europe and Asia and to supply
a representative who became the God of the Jews, representatives who
became the Gods of the Greeks, and still more representatives who
became the Gods of the Persians and Indians. This race was, according
to Ludovici, the Cro-Magnons. It became absorbed by an inferior
race, the Aryans. Ludovici had no doubt that the process of
'reasoning' which he applied to the myth of Prometheus, when applied
to the first and second verses of the sixth chapter of Genesis would
lead to the conclusion that the God of the Jews and Christians was
also a Cro-Magnon. Eve and Pandora were sent by the Cro-Magnon
to punish men for their theft of fire, which led to the cooking of
food with its associated debilitation, and modern degenerate
civilisation. Satan and the Devil are archetypal 'Prometheans';
whilst Epymetheus and Prometheus, with both of whom Pandora became
associated, belonged to the worst results of the cross between the
Cro-Magnon and Aryans. Although it would be inappropriate to
explain the import of Ludovici's interpretation of the myth of
Prometheus here, it should be noted, that his interpretation of the
myth generates conviction for the fascist belief of racial purity,
anti-feminism, homeopathy, and primitivism, from suprarational
premises. It is this deployment of myth as a suprarational belief
that liberals would regard as non-rational.

Ludovici decried what he considered to be the "rationalistic
prejudices", of Western Europeans. In Ludovici's novel of 1923,
*French Beans*, when Dr. Glandry of the Womens' Independence League
questions Domina Biggsyke as to why she has left the W.I.L., she
complains that it is the weakness of women to have their reasoning
centres bound up with their emotional and sexual controls: "You can see
that when you dissect the female trunk and follow the ramification of
the longer nerves." It prevents them from being guided by pure reason,
which men can achieve without any promptings from the body. Domina recounts that pure reason can lead nowhere, because all direction begins with a bias or prompting. "Reason" is always subordinated to pre-conceived notions or bias. "Isn't that why", Domina continued, "the modern world doesn't know what its about, or whither it is going; because there is too much of this disembodied reason about?".

Ludovici thought that all the vital actions we perform in our lives are the outcome of correlations of bodily parts sending instructions to our brain. In all vital actions we are "utterly unconscious" of the real springs of our action. As woman is closer to Life than man, man must regard her as a creature who is constantly being actuated, unconsciously, by Life. The will of animals and humans is inseparable from the instincts to which either their racial memory or bodily parts give rise. The intellect, as Schopenhauer observed, is the servant of the body. One of Ludovici's criticisms of feminism was that he believed a vital department of human life is dependent upon the voluntary cooperation of the female with Life's scheme. She can only play her part in Life's scheme if her emotional equipment is unimpaired:

"From the day of her betrothal to the moment when she takes her last grandchild to her arms, all the trials and difficulties of her role in life are alleviated and taken as a matter of course because she approaches them, not with cold and intellectual detachment, but with deep emotional impulses of all kinds.

Thus, to impose upon her a permanent preoccupation in which intellectual detachment is an essential prerequisite, such as voting, is to develop a side of her nature which will prove an obstacle rather than an aid in her vital functioning. Ludovici thought no criticism of liberalism could be complete without appreciating the infirmities of
the human mind which play havoc with popular government. Gustave Le Bon, Georges Sorel, and other 'social psychologists' had revealed the rooted foibles of human nature which wrecks any nation that meddles with democracy. Man's non-rationality is exacerbated in crowds. In most of the deliberations on which popular government depends, according to Ludovici, from those conducted at election meetings to the 635 MPs in the Commons during the life of a Government, the mental state and judgement of those present is inevitably inferior as regards intelligence, objectivity, rationality and civilised impulses, to what they are when the average member of either of these 'crowds' deliberates alone.

In his *Religion for Infidels*, the sixth conclusion that Ludovici reaches regarding the life forces is that life and intelligence are co-extensive. There is intelligence in every particle, every cell, of living matter. When we recognise the necessity of seeing intelligence wherever there is life, according to Ludovici, no matter how mysterious this co-extensiveness may seem, we take an important step towards a better understanding, even if we lack "a clear explanation", of most natural phenomena:

...We get an inkling of the reasons for the prodigious versatility and resource of Nature, whether in the vegetable or animal kingdom; we appreciate the unlimited possibilities of inventiveness, operating without hesitation through the vast armies of cells, all endowed with sense and sensibilities (my underlining).

The fundamental problems of adaptation to ambient conditions, variation and natural selection, as these processes occur in nature to effect the evolutionary march of life, are inexplicable without assuming intelligence in living matter. What Nietzsche properly denounced as the Darwinian theory, the absence of any allowance for the role of mind in evolutionary processes, suggests the solution...
to the problem of variations and mutation. Unless we allow for the operation of mind in all living matters we cannot hope to discover how the variability, on which natural selection depends for its effects, ultimately arises. Ludovici reckoned that prayer was an instance of how men may enlist the cooperation of the formative, improvisatory and innovatory forces of living matter, although the life forces are unamenable to the "conscious mental faculties". Clearly, Ludovici is elaborating an anti-rational theory of human nature in the above. He reckoned creatures lower than man, not knowing, for instance, that fins may be changed into limbs, leave the means to the life forces, but in 'imagining' successful adaptation contribute to its positive force. He thought there was nothing non-rational in considering life and intelligence as co-extensive:

...there is nothing mystical or magical in the intervention of the formative and improvisatory powers latent in living matter, in order to produce the organic changes needed for a successful response to an environmental change. It is simply the slow operation in Nature of processes observed to occur spontaneously and consequently on a much less elaborate scale in human beings subjected to hypnotism, or practicing passive auto-suggestion.

Ludovici thought the difficulty of the improvisatory life forces acting through man was due to his lively consciousness. He believed the practice of traditional prayer is instinctive, its muscular adjustment compatible with the supersession of volition, is a vestige of man's practice of enlisting the life forces in his evolution:

...a vigorous age-long and immortal vestige of that instinct in animals which, operating in response to an untoward environmental change places them in imagination in touch with the life forces and enable them to mobilise formative and improvisatory powers that secure improved adaptation.

The imagination is the mental medium to be employed, rather than the will, to contact, intuit, and mobilise the life forces. Ludovici cites the phenomena of telepathy, clairvoyance, the known injuries or lethal
effects of curses pronounced and prosecuted by the shamans, medicine men and witch doctors of primitive societies, as instances of using prayer, or its equivalent, with the object of stimulating the improvisatory and formative powers of the life forces to operate outside the person of the petitioning agent. 415

Socratic Humanism

In his A Defense of Aristocracy, A text book for Tories Ludovici says that recklessly, and to great national peril, Englishmen have allowed the Christian doctrine of the soul to mislead and corrupt them on the question of human value. However, the truth remains that there can be no good spiritual qualities without beautiful bodily qualities 416.

What is cruel, what is inhuman, is to rear people on the sentimental and quasi-merciful belief that there is nothing degrading and 'unclean' (the good Old Testament adjective applied to disease) in disease and bungledom, but that a beautiful soul justifies everything; and then, when the world has got into such a state of physical degeneration through this doctrine, to suggest the organisation of a pre-nuptial check on all unions contemplated under the influence of this belief, without making any attempt to alter values. 417

Centuries of humanism had killed healthy man's natural inclination to avoid the imperfect, the foul of breath, the ugly and the deformed. 418

Ludovici's hostility to Socratic humanism was shared with his mentor, Nietzsche. 419 Ludovici even saw humanist values in the prohibition movement in America. He thought the proper reform was to purge modern beers, wines, and spirits, of their adulterative and deleterious elements, not to prohibit a portion of our daily diet which had been an essential factor in producing all the greatest civilisations that had ever existed; "Otherwise, on that principle we should get rid of human life itself; for has not Christianity with its abortion
Puritanism despoiled and blighted life as well.\textsuperscript{420} Two thousand years of humanism and its consequent debilitation, during which the resisting powers of exuberant health had been steadily worn down, had effectively impaired the ability of recent generations to face the institutions of their forefathers with their forefathers' spirit, health and understanding.\textsuperscript{421} Christian humanism had been exacerbated in Anglo-Saxon countries by the overlap of romantic obsessions, which had made a realistic view of primitive and natural needs almost impossible.\textsuperscript{422} The preponderant values of the English population were those in which all stress is laid upon the soul, in which the severe standards are soul standards and in which the body and its completeness are almost entirely overlooked.\textsuperscript{423} A nation ultimately becomes the image of its values.\textsuperscript{424}

...the spiritual environment of all modern subhuman peoples is the outcome of our fundamental values, as also is their sub-humanity; and that this spiritual environment is characterised by a tendency to neglect and despise the body and bodily considerations.\textsuperscript{425}

Modern degeneration, science, feminism, Puritanism, and the increasing cleavage between the sexes was the logical outcome of these body-despising values.\textsuperscript{426} If modern man felt no horror at the spectacle of degeneracy and disease, if he could be thoroughly ill, the victim of a foul disease, and yet thoroughly respectable it was due to the prevalence of Socratic humanism.\textsuperscript{427} Although these values were not necessarily Christian, Christianity had been their chief inculcator and purveyor.

...By zealously garnering most of the morbid, foetid, and decrepit elements in antiquity, Christianity has been a sort of cold storage depot for almost every decomposed vestige of the ancient world, and has thus doled out from its refrigerators to every generation the worst products of Pagan decay.\textsuperscript{428}

Amidst the decay of Greek culture there developed a tendency to exhort the soul at the expense of the body.\textsuperscript{429} The degenerate Socrates
determined to create values by which he himself and his type could be regarded as desirable. He transvalued the values of the Greeks by ensuring there was no visible connection between a man's visible and invisible aspects. Henceforward, people had been prepared to forgive stigmata which are nobody's fault when assessing their mates, and in thus forgiving forgot that he or she was cruelly foisting an undesirable parent in his or her offspring. When this Socratic humanism is added to Christian pity, which is quite indiscriminate and makes people react with love and charity to all who suffer, irrespective of their value to posterity, Ludovici thinks this a combination of evils which makes complete degeneracy a culpable certainty. He called his era one of Socratic degenerates.

Neither industrialisation, urbanism, or feminism, could have prevailed had there not existed a fundamental tendency to treat bodily questions and therefore bodily differences as of no importance. This fundamental tendency, due to the influence of Socratic values, had coloured all men's life:

"...if we do not look with horror upon a man or woman under thirty who has false teeth; if we have ceased to regard foul breath as an argument against an alleged 'pure soul'; and if we imagine that human rubbish and foulness can give us good laws, good poetry, good music, and good art it is wholly and exclusively due to Socrates and his influence."

Thanks to his own repulsive features in the midst of a population of beauty venerated, Socrates found himself forced in self-defence to discover a dialectical method to excuse every kind of physical degeneracy and putrescence. Modern Europe, according to Ludovici, had fallen completely under the sway of Socrates. In the excess of the momentum of Socratic humanism which ultimately removed slavery from Rome man had been carried to unwholesome extremes in charity and compassion, which had culminated in the infection of all human stocks,
and universal degeneracy.\textsuperscript{438} The average man was so ignorant of the signs of health, life, the 'point' of an efficient animal breeder, and his taste was so defective, especially with the exaggerated attention to 'spiritual' qualities, that he was prone to prefer a degenerate girl.\textsuperscript{439} Although socratic humanism in the working classes was neither deeper nor more intractable than in their "economic superiors", it was often more lethal, because it was untempered by contact with scientific thought in any form, and in the values and atmosphere of their urban life there was little to check it:

\begin{quote}
The loss of all contact with the lives and living problems of creatures other than Man, through decades of urbanism, and the steady inculcation upon them of the duty of indiscriminate commiseration towards every kind of physical defect, has not unnaturally led to an attitude of subnormality which, by implying condonation, involves blind acceptance.\textsuperscript{440}
\end{quote}

The position established by Socrates was the duality of man into body and soul; the soul's independence of the body, the soul's superiority to the body, the despicable nature of the body; the immortality of the soul.\textsuperscript{441} A cripple, a hunchback, any degenerate, became as desirable as a normal man, because, on Socratic principles, it could always be argued that his blemish was not himself, and that his invisible or 'real' self redeemed everything. For humanity it meant pollution.\textsuperscript{442}

In the first chapter of his Enemies of Women, The origins in outline of Anglo-Saxon feminism, "The Influence of the Prevailing European, or White Man's Philosophy\textsuperscript{443}, Ludovici says the 'philosophy' of the white man originated with Socrates.\textsuperscript{444} It pleased and flattered many\textsuperscript{445}, degenerates could greatly enhance their prestige by passing as persons with superior souls.\textsuperscript{446} The feminists, whether in Hellenistic Greece or in Renaissance or seventeenth century Europe, seized with alacrity the argument Socrates had afforded them. If bodily differences did not matter, if the soul alone counted, the visible or physical differences
between men and women were also negligible. Indeed, the more
one adopted feminism, the poorer man became, because the less man
was considering the despicable body - the vessel of life.447

Owing to the catastrophic socratic humbug about the alleged
superiority of the 'soul' and the negligibility of the body, health,
stamina, and hereditary soundness rapidly dwindled without causing
the slightest alarm among those who displayed the symptoms of
decadence. Their neglect of physical quality also made them
incapable of extruding a biological elite capable of leading them.448

By directing the eye and the taste of mankind from the visible
attributes of a fellow-being, and by minimising the significance of
their visible attributes, Socratic humanism protected the ill-
constituted from the repudiation which, in matrimony, would otherwise
have caused them to be eschewed as procreators of the race.449

Ludovici thought only the "'lethal chamber'" solution was the
appropriate means for relieving society of the crushing burden
consisting of its biological trash and dregs, and of protecting the
national stock and protecting it from further contamination. But
nothing was done because of modern Socratic sensibilities which
"cannot endure the thought of sacrificing so much as a single hair of
a raving maniac's head. Thus, the problem of purifying English stock
and relieving the precious minority of the sound, of the crippling
burden imposed upon them by the prevalence of sickness, defect,
incapacity, deformity and dementia, through which their own 'desirable'
multiplication and survival are in peril was postponed sine die.

Ludovici reckoned his mentor, Nietzsche, had realised that the
'problem' was fundamentally one of values:
...What had happened was that the pre-Socratic and wholesome values relating to man had been reversed, turned upside down, and that although... other influences may have contributed to this volte-face, the principal present agency causing these topsy-turvy values to exert their sway, was Christianity with its baneful Socratic heritage concerning body and soul, health and sickness, pity and altruism. Ludovici thought the scourge of Socratic humanism was peculiar to Protestant countries, not to Catholic countries. Catholicism, according to Ludovici, had retained its Aristotelian influence. Despite the errors of Socrates, Aristotle was still able to hold to the ancient 'healthy' view that mind and body could not be separated and that any change in the one indicated a change in the other. Socrates, as a townsman, was essentially a romantic. Ludovici expressed no surprise that urbanisation followed the Reformation, which was a turning away of Christianity from Aristotle in favour of Socrates. Ludovici discriminated between three types of Christianity: Extreme Socratic Christianity, moderate Socratic Christianity, Aristotelian Christianity. The latter, which prevailed in the Middle Ages, "was compatible with a high degree of biological sanity." In countries where Protestantism, "Socratism untempered by Aristotles sanity", had permeated the life and sentiments of the people, the sex-phobia arising out of the body-despising doctrine had promoted feminism. Ludovici attributed the relative failure of feminism in Southern and Latin Europe, as compared with its success in England and America, to the powerful Aristotelian tradition which is a heritage of their long adherence to Catholicism:

...as I need hardly point out to the scholar, Aristotle was the chief Greek influence in Catholicism, just as Socrates was the chief Greek influence in Protestantism, and even the more normal morphology of Latin women [which he cites as another reason for their lesser advocacy of feminism] may be due to the healthier of the two Greek influences.
Christianity's bequest to posterity had been the humanism of Socrates. However, amongst the most formidable of Socrates's opponents was Aristotle. He insisted on restoring to credit ancient Greek monism. Fortunately, for Catholic Europe, despite the Socratic elements tincturing the faith, it was Aristotle's teaching that saved medieval Europe from at least the more damaging effects of Socrates's attacks on old Greek monism. Aristotle's influence on Catholicism by reinstating Greek monism enabled Europe, despite her morbid Socratic heritage, certainly up to the Reformation, to act and think wholesomely. The Reformation meant a re-enthronement of Socrates and a revolt against Aristotle. Ludovici thought this explained why, after the Reformation, there should have arisen, not only Puritanism, together with an increasing tendency to neglect bodily considerations, but a steady and substantial decline in the beauty and stamina of Europeans. Christianity remained wholesome and sanitary, before the influence of Socrates was restored. Aristotle exerted a benign influence through the Holy Catholic Church, and encouraged by the realism of a population employed in agriculture which knew the essential needs of flourishing life, made the medieval authorities immune to an unreasoning favouritism for that which was defective and biologically depraved:

...It was, for instance, well recognised that, in times of famine and epidemics, the sound had to be considered first. If sacrifice was called for, it was the unsound and those who could give no promise of perpetuating the race in a desirable form, who were regarded as obvious victims. Thus, in periods of distress, the populace would clamour for the extirpation of useless mouths - that is to say, all lepers, cretins and idiots... so that there should be enough to sustain the sound and all those biologically precious to the community (his italics).

Only the unfortunate resurrection by the Reformation of the influence of Socrates, led to the reversal of this husbandman's attitude to life, especially in Protestant Europe. Protestantism revived the morbid
and perverted Socratic principles deeply rooted in Christianity, with their "predilection for the foetid air of hospitals..., and their weakness for the bitter taste of corpses".462

Feminism

In his tirade against modern feminism Ludovici was regarded, by some, as writing "in the spirit of a stout Fascismo, who challenges Mill and Liberty and the rest of it with a bold manly gesture."463 He deplored the effeminisation of men as the cause and consequence of woman's progress in the scheme of things. In the main, for "inwardly thinking of a masculine renaissance" and an "English Fascismo",464 Ludovici was mocked as "beating a dead horse".465 Although he was ridiculed by most for believing that there is an eternal struggle between the sexes466, some, or, at least Hutchinson Publishers when advertising one of his anti-feminist novels never to be published, "Raw Virginity", applauded him for his intense realism in deploving the preponderance of woman.467 There are good grounds for believing that Ludovici's anti-feminism is derived, or, at least consistent, with that of his mentors, Schopenhauer and, especially, Nietzsche.468

Ludovici's anti-feminism is not merely explained by his belief that feminism leads to man's degeneration, but reciprocally, that man's degeneration is the condition for feminism. In Ludovici's novel of 1918, Mansel Fellowes, the degenerate man, Richard Latimer, had not the vitality with which to confront Mansel Fellowes on even equal terms. Mansel Fellowes was like a tropical and voluptuous island that lay some distance south of the course Richard Latimer instinctively pursued, and millions of his contemporaries pursued, in a temperate
He could not navigate life. He was a man of an era, of whom even the best are but miserable fragments. Richard Latimer was merely a pretext on which to train a hope and a trust that took its root in more vigorous and more vital ancestors. The moment Hansel Fellowes's life-loving instincts receive their first disastrous check, when Richard Latimer gets engaged to Gladys Morrison, the obverse of her positive and life-loving instincts manifested itself at once in a desire for oblivion: "in a voluptuous alliance with thoughts of the grave." The Nietzschean Dr. Melhado does not believe that contemporary men's weaknesses are the outcome of deliberate restraint. He pursues, that generations of will-less men and Protestantism, with its doctrine of the sanctity of individual judgement, had made women impossible to master. Mrs. Fellowes confesses to Richard Latimer that neither she, nor the world, could give her daughter that for which she is most gifted and equipped, love — "I mean not by anybody that you can call a man (his italics )." When Richard Latimer visits France the realism of French women seemed curious to him, as a romantic, who believed in the possibility of "games and pleasant pastimes with full-grown virgins, free from arriere - hopes, and of slightly feverish conversations with pretty discontented young wives free from unladylike intentions." Dr. Melhado warns Richard Latimer not to reject Hansel Fellowes as she is of a 'type' that is becoming increasingly rarer, as modern men are not worthy of such women. However, Richard Latimer rejects Hansel Fellowes. The Nietzschean Dr. Melhado had given him the 'philosophical' formula for Life, but the physiological equipment of Richard Latimer had neutralised it. Richard Latimer's submission to Father Jevington indicates his degeneracy, as only the degenerate man requires assistance from outside to direct him when he is devoid of 'taste'
in matters of choice and selection. He was incapable of all vital decision. Life had called out to Richard Latimer in Mansel Fellowes, and cured its instrument of every flaw in order that Richard Latimer should respond. Richard Latimer flouts it, and it is because of his and other men's degeneracy that these vital women were becoming extinct in England. The climax of the novel is when Sir Robert Morrison, representing his daughter and wife, relinquishes his daughter's engagement to Richard Latimer. The latter then belatedly decides to pursue Mansel Fellowes who, thinking that she has been forsaken, commits suicide.

In Ludovici's novel of 1920, Too Old for Dolls, Mrs. Delarayne's eldest daughter, Cleopatra, had eagerly extended her hand to Life for all that Life had to offer, but was embittered that her outstretched hand had been filled with nothing satisfying. At the age of twenty-five her worldly wisdom answered 'nay' to the many whose proposals of marriage she had been compelled to refuse. The fault Cleopatra found with the modern world was that it did not offer one man whole or complete but only a series of isolated manly characteristics:

...The kind of fire that led to elopements, to wild and clandestine love-making, could now, with too few exceptions, be found only among ne'er-do-wells, foreign adventurers, cut-throats or knaves; while the stability that promised security for the future and for the family, seemed generally to present itself with a sort of tiresome starchiness of body and jejuneness of mind, and thought it childish to abandon itself to any emotions.

Half-consciously, according to Ludovici, she divined that only 'fire' purified and sanctified the transition from girlhood to womanhood. Lack of a great passionate momentum, that carried everything before it, seemed to her something distinctly discomfiting.
She was realistic rather than romantic. Her 'taste' inclined to the adventurous idea of love, to the impromptu element, to the wild ardour of first embraces, than to the kind of graduated passion that begins with conversation, proceeds to a public engagement, and ends with the still more measured tempo of a church wedding. All the deliberation that these slow steps involved, ran counter to her deepest feelings, that her love must be a sudden kindling of two fires, "the burning not of green wood but of a volcano." Cleopatra's mother, however, reckoned that as matrimony is entirely a matter of flesh and blood, provided a man has a clean mouth and "the teeth of an African negro," then he is eminently suitable. She accuses Cleopatra of being romantic in rejecting Denis Malster, chief private secretary to Sir Joseph Bullion, who appears to meet these requirements. Cleopatra objects that a man ought to 'fire' a woman with something more exciting than the consideration of his means and dentition. Mrs. Delarayne rejoins that men in their class can no longer set 'fire' to anything, and that modern civilisation had reared men who can exercise self-control. Ludovici reckons that Mrs. Delarayne herself, a widow, is suffering like all modern women, from receiving no sure and reliable guidance from men. Lord Henry Highbarn, the hero of the novel, advises Mrs. Delarayne to entrust her exuberant daughter to a continental husband, where they master women better than in England. Ludovici's description of Guy Tyrell in this novel is typical of his indictment of the modern English male as degenerate. He was of a 'clean-minded' and healthy 'type', who loved all sports and believed in the possibility of being a companion to a girl. His age was twenty-seven. Ludovici complains that in a man who displays all these characteristics there is no display, side by side with his mastery of games and his deep understanding of cricket in particular, of that mastery of life which
would constitute him a desirable mate. Mrs. Delarayne confesses to Lord Henry Highbarn that when she first met him, she had felt what all modern women longed to feel, the inferiority of modern men suddenly relieved by an object they were willing to serve and obey. She had retained him as a therapist for her 'nervous illness' for this reason: "We women suffer today because we have no such men as you to look up to." The climax of the novel is that Mrs. Delarayne's eldest daughter, Cleopatra, and Lord Henry Highbarn get engaged to marry.

Lord Firle, in Ludovici's novel *What Woman Wishes*, unveiling the War Memorial on the village green at West Claughton on March 18, 1920, declares to those assembled that despite the recent war modern men are effeminate. The fact that in World War I women were able to take over men's work could only mean that Englishmen were womanly and feeble. As he says to Lord Chiddingly, his heroic son, even before the war the English wore the mockery of Europe. They preferred to rule half the world rather than to rule their women: "Men are no longer male enough to subjugate the male in women." Dr. Thackeray in *The Goddess that Grew Un*, is described as a 'man' with the tired, slightly effete appearance of one who had spent too much of his life poring over books, rather than living, even if he had the capacity for it. Endowed with the bare minimum of vitality upon which life could be continued, he could not master his wife's contrasting liveliness. Mr. Truck, an ornithologist, suggests to Mr. Peter Oliver that the removal of his cock birds is going to cause a very interesting phenomenon among his hens, and which throws a considerable amount of light on the feminist movement. The phenomena referred to is that one of the hens will develop male characteristics. Later, one of Mr. Oliver's unattached hens does, indeed, begin to crow like a veteran farmyard cock, only
then does Mr. Oliver realise that Mr. Truck was indirectly referring to his possessiveness towards his mature daughter, Basilia.

In Ludovici's novel of 1923, French Doras Sir Thomas Braintree's only son, Denis, was, on his father's admission, admittedly dutiful and clean-living. However, he was lustreless and despite all his hard living, hard riding, and single-minded concentration upon sport, "he could not rid his person of a certain softness and seraphic, almost feminine, sweetness", which Sir Thomas knew was unlikely to impress Domina Biggadyke who was the product of his training. Dominia's father, James Biggadyke, friend and colleague of Sir Thomas Braintree, informs the latter that his daughter has a theory, which is not altogether unscientific or improbable, that the trend of modern civilisation is ultimately to dispense with the human male. His daughter then proceeds to explain her theory, as the inevitable outcome of our 'progress' in controlling disease, famine, and wars and gradually overpopulating those areas which are not yet under cultivation:

"And then we can expect to see the worst war of all - the war for food stuffs. It will be continuous, desperate, and brutal. It will first involve continents, then hemispheres, and, finally, when light at last appears, it will be a sex war. For the women will want to save the food for their children, and being able to run the world by that time, they will realise that, as millions of men are a superfluous luxury, it would be to the advantage of all to proceed to their elimination, after the manner of the slaughter of the drones in the hive."

Selective breeding, would enable the victorious women to survive with only one sixteenth of the present male population. Sir Thomas Braintree reckons that if the supersession of men arises it will be because men have desired their own extinction. Ludovici describes a similar course of events in Chapter III of Ilyistrata; or, women's future and future woman, "Woman's Future". He reckons that bitter rivalry between degenerate men and vital women will lead to riots and savage
street-fighting, in which, because moral indignation will be on the side of the women, the 'men' are certain to be routed, and to lose credit besides lives. The female domain will corrode that of the male, men will cease to be employers altogether, and become the poorest-paid workers in an industry run entirely by women. There would be a revolt against cohabitation and the act of fertilisation will be consumated in surgery. Seduction and rape will be punished by means of emasculation; and "men of vigorous sexuality will be eliminated in order to make way for a generation of low-sexed, meek, and sequacious lackeys." With unusual prescience, Ludovici anticipated that the fertilised ovum will be cultivated in embryonic tissue-juice, independent of the uterus, and would mature as chickens do in incubators. Triumphant feminism would reach its zenith with this discovery, and in a few generations women would appear the only vestige of whose sex would be her smooth face and primary genital glands. Men would then be frankly regarded as quite superfluous, and their numbers would be felt as a source of irritation. On the occasion of a threat of starvation, a few of the leading women would perceive with apocalyptic clarity that the reduction of the male population to the barest minimum indispensable for the purposes of fertilisation would relieve the food crisis, and obviate forever the danger of a masculine or slave rising. A sex fight at the distributing station of a large store would suffice as the spark for the inevitable conflagration in which the legislature would support the popular fury, and proceed to systematic slaughter of males, until, with the help of the regular troops, it would be found necessary to protect and preserve a small nucleus for fertilisation.

Returning to French Beans, Sir Thomas Braintree proclaims that he is witnessing a decline of the male in Europe. He declares that feminism
is the revolt of women who see the degeneration in their potential mates. Domina Biggadyke's, and other women's revulsion of feeling at modern man expressed itself in a wish that man may be superceded. Captain Ernest Biggadyke, Domina's brother, awarded the HC and DSO for gallant services during World War I, is described by Ludovici as a typical public school Englishman. Not particularly handsome, but honourable, humorous, benighted and good at all games, his attitude to women was one of abject veneration:

... A lump always began to form in his throat when he pronounced the word 'woman', and his moral code, formed on the lines of cricket, forbade any action or scheme of life in which there was any danger of 'cutting' an 'unsporting' figure beside the fair sex.

Andre de Loudon, a foreigner who, on becoming engaged to Mildred Hight, a confidante of Domina Biggadyke's, dissuades his fiancé from continuing to be a member of the Women's Independence League, represents a contrast to the degeneracy of Englishmen. He suggests in conversation with Sir Thomas Braintree, that England needs a masculine renaissance. Sir Thomas Braintree thought the youthful 'fire' of Andre de Loudon's finely-chiselled features was an anachronism. He rejoiced in Andre's stimulating warmth and vitality. The contrast between Sir Thomas Braintree's son, Denis, and Andre de Loudon is striking. The French man's eyes had greater 'fire', his mouth and nostrils quivered with vitality, and his physique had a "tigerish resilience and flexibility"; the Englishman lacked "inner heat".

Sir Thomas Braintree says to Andre de Loudon that England is now a matrarchy due to the degenerations of men. Although decent and wise women will admit in private how often women need violent handling, it is now condemned by everybody in Europe, especially in modern England. Sir Thomas Braintree explains to Domina Biggadyke that the 'fire' of the red-blooded man is too strong for him to resort to mere insults if his mate lapses, therefore, he will instinctively
resort to violence. Despite the fact that Domina, Honest Biggadyke, and Mildred Hight, claim that life on those lines would be intolerable, Sir Thomas Pursues, "'Is not love itself an act of violence?'", and would not the numerous discontented young wives accept it as such if, as a consequence, life and love were more thrilling? It is due to the deficiency of tragic natures that makes its deepest wants a matter of life and death that life is becoming a desert of tedium and lassitude, according to Sir Thomas Braintree. He exclaims to Mildred Hight, referring to Domina Biggadyke, that such vital women mother causes instead of children because men are too emasculated through commerce and industry: "'They find no mates with greater masculinity than they possess themselves.'" Self-control is merely a euphemism for lack of passion. However, the English woman's wilfulness did not succeed with Andre de Loudon as it did with Englishmen. When Mildred Hight abandons Andre de Loudon she challenges his "all masculine energy to action", and he beats her. As Domina Biggadyke encounters Andre de Loudon she realises how easily she is outstretched so that she was filled with a new humility, spontaneous and natural, that dissuaded her of her feminist convictions which she had acquired by measuring her own mind and knowledge of things against that of Englishmen. Andre was hard and metallic in his wilfulness. When Domina Biggadyke and Andre de Loudon become engaged to marry, Andre's and Sir Thomas Braintree's belief that the masculine English woman completely unbends when under the impelling influence of a personality more masculine than hers, is vindicated. Andre, unlike the man of northern blood, did not feel a sense of self-reproach when impelled by any undue excitement to transgress social conventions. However, when the northerner oversteps these boundaries he blunders through his lack of practice in "hosted and violent expression".
and a sense of unlawfulness is induced in him which is equivalent to feeling himself in the wrong. Hence the exaltation of what Ludovici calls 'parliamentary' or deliberative language in England. He reckoned old English writers and speakers were accustomed to an 'un-parliamentary' mode of expression when they were provoked. That was when "blood was warmer" in England, before the deepening of Puritanical influences and the consequent "cooling of the blood of the nation". To remain moderate and tepid where excitement and great indignation were indicated, became the mark of good manners. However, Andre was not aware of its being any more unbecoming to show violent feelings of anger when provoked than it was to remain serene when his mind was at peace:

...He had no concern with the preposterous rules of so-called 'Parliamentarian' temper, which came in with the worst form of Parliaments in the nineteenth century; he was, moreover, practiced in violent feeling, and it was not unfamiliar, untrodden ground to him.

In England's Puritanical atmosphere the lack of 'fire' and vigorous ardour stifled emotion and caused it to tempo rise indefinitely. Sir Thomas Braintree, who belonged to a generation that had not felt this mood, regarded it as a bastard character in his son, untrue to his stock and taking no root in his family line. It never occurred to him that since the whole prejudice of modern England was to avoid danger a generation of young men had been produced who lacked 'fire' and ardent impulses. However, he realised how frivolous it was to grant the title 'manly' to his son, Denis, who could only aspire to the modern hoax of "tweed and golf-stick virility". Tragically, Denis commits suicide after Domina Biggadyke disputes his virility. Lady Freeman, after pronouncing a few conventional regrets about the deceased to Sir Thomas Braintree comments, rather insensitively, that she does so miss Andre de Loudon: "'After seeing such a lot of him, as I used to do, my life seems a perfect blank nowadays. He was such
Initially, Sir Thomas Braintree was greatly disturbed by his son's suicide, and greatly shaken in his own vigorous attachment to life. But, after some thought, he realises that his son's effeminacy is by no means unique among young men.

Gilbert Milburn, in *The Taming of Don Juan*, the seventeen year old protege of Dr. Hale, is responsible for the illicit pregnancy of Miss Prin. Dr. Hale comments to Frances Yardgrove, that his protege is a vital contrast to the average degenerate man:

"Of course Nature took the world by storm when she made him [Gilbert Milburn], and, what is more, she intended to take it by storm. But imagine the imbecility of these absurd parents who, because the average young man of today is safe as a marble statue, fancied that they could let their young pussies run wild with him! Can you think of anything more foolhardy? Isn't it strange how one vital figure can demonstrate the inanity of any smug and slightly anemic social organisation? Every girl in this area is as free to wander in the fields, or in the woods, with her particular apology for a young man, as I am to walk up my staircase. Everything is staked upon the subnormality or tameness of the male."
Dr. Hale accuses Mr. Frin, a farmer, of being mastered by his wife. Mr. Frin timidly retreats from Dr. Hale's charge that he, like the other farmers, have as much masculinity as "gilded porkers". Although Mr. Frin knew that his wife's health would have been better if they had produced their own butter, he had desisted from supporting Dr. Hale's movement for the overthrow of the Underhill 'milk factories' because his wife had not permitted him. Only the women of this novel possess vitality. Frances Platt, a friend of the Underhills' niece, Almina, possesses a "vicious curiosity about life": One who could remain after dark at the mouth of the drain, down which an unfortunate fox had taken refuge, for the kill; and one who could never complain of the hare's plaintive cry when she had been out coursing with the menfolk of the locality. Dr. Hale explains to her that modern commerce, industry, and politics, have no masculine bravery or love of danger left in them, and that soon the only manly job left will be burglary. When Gilbert Hilburn contests the constituency of the northern division of Wessex, in the General Election of November 15, 1922, as an unofficial Conservative candidate with a programme for the prohibition of patent and 'artificial' foods, he is opposed by a band of militant viragoes.

Ludovici believed the only hope for the world lay in a masculine renaissance. A group of men endowed with a vigour of intellect and will which would make all attempts at a comparison between the sexes a piece of foolery; and who would make it one of their first constructive duties to repeal the female franchise clause of the Representation of the People Act of 1918.

It is the degeneration of man that is the cause of woman's mal-adaptation. Because woman is Life's uninterrupted stream and custodian she cannot help feeling...
miserable at the muddle that man has made of Life. The historical fact that feminism is undeniably a phenomenon of male degeneration, "the swan-song of male constructed societies shows how inevitably Life comes forward at the last moment in order to save itself when all else is failing." However, feminism cannot lead to salvation for woman is only equipped to carry on Life's business, not for ordering it:

"...You cannot be a thing and above it, or out of it, at the same time. The part is not greater than the whole. And as Woman is immersed in Life, she has not the dualism that is necessary for placing and ordering Life. She knows, because she feels, when Life is going to pieces; she knows when Life has been outraged, when hostility to Life is working havoc with Life's material; but she can only ascertain the fact, she can only protest against the fact; she cannot remedy it."

Woman's respect for man, must of necessity fall to pieces when the order which it is his duty to establish by means of his 'social instinct', either collapses, or in any way proves inadequate.

When woman becomes positive to the 'social instinct' it denotes a decline of her power as the breeder, the mother, the custodian of Life. England's great past had left an inheritance of thousands of virile women; but, owing to the degeneracy of man, there were not the males to hand with which to make these women. Feminism is dangerous because woman, like nature, is unscrupulous in her promotion and preservation of Life, and thus immoral. Nature's cry is for more Life irrespective of whether the success of the struggle falls to the superior or inferior. Unfortunately, the Anglo-Saxon and Teutonic races are too firmly wedded, according to Ludovici, to the liberal doctrine of individual experience to learn from the accumulated history of mankind that the intrusion of women into public life must lead to degeneration. Feminism was particularly dangerous because it struck close to the roots of Life. Ludovici prophesied an increasing degeneration of life in England, that would reach its nadir.
with the zenith of feminine influence. Human nature is no malleable, and the freaks of its adaptation so manifold, that it had not proved impossible to convert woman into a creature with masculine aspirations which must, however, come into constant conflict with a non-masculine physique and a non-masculine racial history. It was not woman that was in need of transformation but man himself for the return to the "eternal segacity of Nature". One of the effects that Ludovici believed feminism had caused was a decline of the chivalrous spirit. Men and women were competitors, equals, in the struggle for existence, resenting each other's rivalry. Men had declined in sensitiveness of 'natural' reaction in the presence of women: "The development of modern fashion in women's morning, afternoon and working attire alone is a sign that far more potent stimuli can be borne without prompt reaction than formerly." Ludovici thought the constant association of young men and women would be impossible if this were not so. One of the effects of feminism on women themselves was the destruction of their versatility, as they enter the narrow specialisation of what had previously been male callings, and do not escape their besetting effects. Through their improved economic resources and lack of tradition in money control, as also through their increased freedom, women acquire a pronounced accentuation of their hedonistic impulses. Exposure to the asperities of the struggle for existence brings out the combative, predatory and latent side of female nature and represses its sequacious side. One result of feminism affecting men is that selection operates in favour of men of inferior attractiveness and vitality. In all businesses, industries, and public offices selection operates in favour of the more or less unattractive male at the cost of men more vigorously endowed and naturally alluring. Whilst, owing to the masculine aspirations of feminism, the exorbitant demands made on
young bones and muscles by boyish athleticism led to a premature ossification of the pelvic structures and to morbid rigidity in the pelvic and upper femoral regions in the adult female. Sterility and agonising confinements were the inevitable outcome of these conditions. Another effect of women neglecting domestic interests and pursuits, according to Ludovici, was the appearance of patent and proprietary foods which are a poor substitute for the natural foods of our ancestors. One of the social results which Ludovici enumerated as a result of feminism was a marked increase in luxurious tastes in every class. Emancipated the modern woman was like a nööiveau riche, tasting expensive idleness for the first time, with the consequence that luxury and excitement were the order of the day.

Ludovici believed feminism, which touches the very heart of life, was preparing disasters for future generations. Feminist reformers did not realise the limitless end to which they were tending as the facts of evolution show little is impossible in the matter of fresh adaptations and their resulting transformations: "Then once the end desired is clearly presented to consciousness, there is hardly any modification, within reason, which slow development may not bring about." The enfranchisement of women was tantamount to depriving them of their vital emotional direction by fitting them for political participation.

As all life is a striving after power, and power only extends so far as the point where it meets with effective resistance, the extension of women's power must be commensurate with man's weakness. Feminism coincided with the downfalls of Athens and Sparta. The rise of female power does nothing and can do nothing to check or cure the vices in a civilisation which are contributing to its downfall. Least of all can the rise of female power lead to the production of anything great
by women, or bring about the only condition which can restore health to a people's institutions, namely, a regeneration of manhood:

...Greece and Rome never recovered, and France had the good fortune to be saved by a genius, who was a stranger in the nation, and whose virile lead alone restored the vigour of her male population.  

The unadaptness of women, their free expression of their maleness at the cost of their femaleness, was a sign of male degeneracy, because it meant that their menfolk had not remained sufficiently beyond them in male characteristics, to make their masculinity recessive.  

The manly man in England's effeminate civilisation was unadapted and could only find escape in burglary:

...having no taste for the effeminate callings open to a full-grown and able-bodied man in our grossly over-urbanised and safe civilisation, insists on pursuing a calling in which he can find danger, risks and the vicissitudes of the chase or of war. But he is not a degenerate.

Ludovici reckoned that the harm done to women and the race by making masculine standards, whether in respect or ideals, occupations, pastimes, morphology or sexual habits, the only standard, was immense. Ludovici even attributed the dominance of pecuniary values in Anglo-Saxon culture to feminism. Similarly, he ascribed what he regarded as the excessive and deleterious humanitarianism of the English to the influence of the feminist movement.

Ludovici believed the 'White Man's ideology' originated with the degenerate Athenians of the fifth century BC who, being homosexual, could obtain little stimulation from women. Therefore, they sought their stimulation, both in art and sex, in the male. Especially in countries afflicted by Protestantism, which was influenced by Socrates and the worst in Greece, there arose a tendency to exhort
the boyish figure in women, and insensibly to accept a masculine accent over every aspect of civilisation. The Greek homosexual tradition made men choose masculinized women as mates. Hence selection had been in favour of viragoes. With our effeminate manhood there was an automatic tendency for the male components in the female to cease from being recessive. Owing to the Puritanical tradition in Anglo-Saxon countries, there was an abundance of men who lacked 'fire' and that mastery over life and over sex which makes women feel gratified for being women, thus women revolted against their role in life. Feminism was merely a phase in the degeneracy of the male which had brought more misery, disease and death than satisfaction and joy to the majority of women.

Urban women had, according to Ladovici, travelled a vast and dangerous distance from a realistic view of life and especially of themselves, owing to the degeneracy of the male. He believed that once women had got a firm hold of the guiding reigns of civilisation, there would immediately follow a degenerative tendency towards town life. Feminine influence had led to the degenerative multiplication of towns and cities in England, and the migration of the rural population to urban districts during the nineteenth century. Feminism, by increasing women's power, had also contributed to the emancipation of the child, and thereby made sound education or discipline more difficult. Britain had become a womanised society, according to Ladovici. Women had striven to obliterate as far as possible their biological differences from the male, and striven to make their sexual lives conform to the life-pattern of the male. An army of apparently sane English women in the nineteenth and twentieth centuries had been so hard driven by their neurotic contempt of femaleness as to question the palpably obvious interest all women have in preserving the home as
the ideal site and scene for the reproductive period of their lives. With dire results:

...the increasing stupidity of the population resulting from the Feminist way of life, the considerable loss of native genius due to the same cause, and the increase in anarchy and crime which, with the best will in the world, cannot be separated from the Movement led by the viragoes of recent times and their predecessors of the 18th and 19th centuries, whose clamours culminated in the clownish militancy of a precocious dement like Mrs Pankhurst and her deluded followers.575

Due to their hatred of the male women showed between the two World Wars, according to Ludovici, an irresponsible loathing of the leading dictatorships because of the masculine ascendancy they implied, and did nothing to emulate what was commendable in those polities; "nothing, for instance, to raise the status of the mother and housewife, or to increase the prestige of domestic duties, which at least the German Dictatorship did succeed in doing."

Although their sex is the foremost custodian of Life, emancipated English women did nothing to check the dangerously mistaken attitude of their society to the psycho-physical shortcomings of the population. Indeed, by the way of life evolved by feminism, they actually added to the factors causing racial deterioration. Ludovici mentioned one possible sphere of action - the elite of womanhood were drafted into occupations dooming them to infertility: "earmarked for a sterile life by such vast modern industries as the Films, the Stage, including Ballet, and Haute Couture (models and mannequins), besides the Call-Girl traffic."577 Women, animated by their secret loathing of the masculine accent over the dictatorships, fiercely opposed appeasement in the months preceding World War II and created a mood conducive to Britain's engagement in a debilitating war. According to Ludovici, the enhancement of women's power had been coterminous,
not only with a steady decline in English prestige, prosperity, and standards, but also with World War II. Ludovici even believed modern women's reluctance to breastfeed their children had contributed to the "moronization of modern England", as cows milk is deficient in lecithin, a brain builder. Woman's unreflecting, uncritical, imperious impulse to succour, protect and feed her offspring is essential to Life. She will spring eagerly into action and blindly perform all the Life-preserving duties that devolve upon her. Unfortunately, however, the same saving grace of non-discriminatory maternal care, may also act in a manner favourable to reversions and degenerate processes. Ludovici deduced from the above that the female is biologically-conditioned to be lacking in discrimination and taste. This is mostly favourable to survival in desirable form; but, when unchecked and uncorrected as it now is in human life, it favoured degenerate changes; whilst, in its operation as a social influence, it had gravely untoward consequences: "This is shown not only by the prevailing ugliness and vulgarity of our Age and even of the higher arts of our Age, since women have seized the helm. Women were especially responsible for the untoward state of the modern world since they were now paramount in the home and the adult formative years. Owing to women's dislike of male ascendancy, and aversion to long-term reforms, they favoured the scrapping of old and tried, and the improvisation of new and untried, institutions, rather than efforts to improve the men who control old institutions. The female taste in mating also tends to vulgarity; because of the importance Life forces her to attach to adequate means of support for her progeny. When free to choose her mate woman is congenitally prone to favour the affluent male, regardless of his other qualities, if any. Due to the absence of 'grit' and realism throughout all quarters of national life fathers had been handicapped in understanding the essentials of child management.
They had abandoned every attempt at exercising their former rights over children to women. This abdication by most men of the role of leaders in the home had contributed to the growth of anarchy and lawlessness in modern England, according to Ludovici.

**Rousseaean Romanticism**

Ludovici believed the conservative reformer had a virgin field in deprecating the "complete and romantic ignorance into which the bulk of the nation has sunk". In his *A Defence of Conservatism*, Ludovici says that with the delusive banner of 'progress' at their head, the romantic forces of disintegration and disorder aim constantly at inaugurating more change without ever giving a thought to the direction in which change is moving, whether towards decomposition or higher organisation. Impossible ideals are associated with liberalism. It is opposed to conservatism, because liberals imagine that the preservation of the nation's identity throughout change can be achieved otherwise than by the observance of eternal laws. Liberalism takes its origin in romanticism, the fantastic, hence the preposterous nature of its principles. It reveals a neglect of sound stock and lineage. Liberalism is in favour of elective offices as opposed to hereditary offices; it seizes on those instances in history when herédity seems to have failed in human families, without considering whether the conditions which alone enable heredity to operate successfully, were or were not fulfilled in the instances it adduces. By unwisely rejecting the hereditary principle, liberals have relied on the romantic principles that virtue and character come from nowhere, and have therefore incited the world to a degree of miscegenation, both between stocks, nationalities, and 'types', or occupationally distinct families, which has dissipated
the character and capacity of every Western nation. Ludovici believed nothing could be more fantastic than the assertion that every man is the best judge of his own interest, and that the cumulative effect of everybody's directing his energies to the securing of his own interest makes a nation happy and prosperous. The romantic principle of the equality of mankind colours the whole mentality of thinkers like Locke and Rousseau, and is equally fantastic with the rest of their principles: "It is taken direct from the early Christian doctrine that created Romanticism; it has no basis in fact; it is contrary to nature, and it is useless as a principle except for the purpose of creating social disorder." The romantic condemnation of authority and discipline by both liberals and socialists had led to the parlous decline of discipline. Liberals suppose, fantastically, that a nation may be preserved if those responsible for its government pay no heed to the health of its people, that the body is of no concern - which is incompatible with permanence of any kind. While liberals shirk the protection and guidance of the people, it is their fantastic belief that it is impossible to give the people too much political power. Another fundamental principle of liberalism, according to Ludovici, is its fantastic belief in the radical goodness of human nature. Liberals construct their schemes as if angels and not venal, acquisitive and egotistic human beings are the object of them. The preference for democratic before aristocratic control is based upon the romantic assumption that man in the aggregate is better and wiser and more trustworthy than men in small exclusive bodies selected from the elite of a particular generation. However, it does not and cannot lead to permanence in the institutions of the state which gives it practical expression. Socialism goes even further than liberalism in its romantic flights. Fancy and not a sound knowledge of human nature.
directs the supporters of socialism in the framing of their utopias. In the pure romance of socialism it requires a good deal of the vicarious experience of the failure of socialist settlements to destroy its mischievous illusions. Ludovici lamented that the majority of able writers were either liberal or socialist for they, being fantastic and romantic, offer more scope to the imagination:

...From Locke to Herbert Spencer, there has been not one true follower of Aristotle in the domain of realism and sound human psychology. Everywhere we can discern that strain of loose thinking which inclines so readily to the fantastic notions of equality, the radical goodness of human nature, liberty, and the whole of the nonsensical rigmarole of romanticism. Ludovici even condemned Burke and Disraeli for their mysticism. The preponderating influence of a romantic and fantastic ideology in Europe over since the downfall of the realistic pagan world, had made the task of conservatism in modern Europe an extremely difficult one. Ludovici hoped a great disaster, the nemesis of romanticism, would bring all aberrant elements sharply to their senses, "and dissipate their morbid dreams."

Even before the dawn of the eighteenth century, the very principles that were at the base of European life and aspirations, like the principle of liberty for liberty's sake, the principle of the pursuit of general truth, and the principle that experience, a direct appeal to nature was the best method of furnishing the mind, had been leading steadily to one conclusion, romanticism, and this conclusion Rousseau was the first to embody in his fulminating protest against culture, tradition, human power and society. Mrs. Delarayme, in Too Old for Dolce, mother of Leonetta, a vital youth, asks Lord Henry Highbarn, the hero, why grown men are so susceptible to "raw flappers" He replies that it is occasioned by romanticism, the trend of modern
sentiment and prejudice. Hence, too, the contemporary exaltation of childhood as everything immature or uncultivated is sacrosanct, according to romantics. Denis Malster, Joseph Bullion's private secretary, is attracted to Mrs. Delarayne's youngest daughter, Leonetta, due to his romanticism. But, it was not entirely his fault: "We are all threatened with infection. They had it in the eighteenth century in France." In Ludovici's novel of 1921, What Women Wish, we are told that Lord Chiddingly, apart from the reputation he had won in the War Parliament as a powerful and fearless champion of the people, had discovered a number of unsuspected causes behind social unrest. The most striking of which were the romantic assumptions lying at the basis of liberal and socialist thought, and ignorance of realistic principles concerning life and humanity. He maintains that the masses are striving to realise three conditions which are utterly fantastic and unattainable—liberty, equality, justice.

Ludovici's The False Assumptions of "Democracy" is devoted to his denunciation of romanticism. He proclaims, in the latter, that one of the reasons for our present degeneracy, besides the decline of a common and uniform culture, is romantic literature and journalism. He believed that both the French Revolution and the Russian Revolution were the outcome of a romantic confusion of language. The French Revolution was traced by Ludovici to the radical misunderstanding of three words, nature, freedom, and man by Jean Jacques Rousseau. After having formed a totally fantastic and false conception of nature, Rousseau began to speculate upon the unhappy contrast that human civilisation presented in comparison with the fairy like figment of his mind. He lacked the realism to see nature as it really is: immoral, hard, merciless and tasteless. When Rousseau proceeded...
to plant his 'natural man' down in the utterly fanciful scenarios of Rousseausque 'nature', he drew a picture even more distorted of humanity than he had already drawn of nature, and thus proceeded to his ultimate romantic conclusion that man was born free and good and everywhere he is in chains.\textsuperscript{612} He poisoned his own country and the world.\textsuperscript{613} Ludovici then proceeds to re-define nature, freedom, and man, in accordance with what he regards as a realistic outlook on life and humanity. He says, cynically, that if we contemplate the world as a whole, there is no justification for postulating a moral order of phenomena.\textsuperscript{614} Romantics, like Wordsworth and Rousseau, by ignoring the cruel suffering of animals and insects in nature, were able to present a false picture of Life to the world. Much damage had been caused by their "pleasant lies".\textsuperscript{615} The violence which the socialist deprecates as the power that one man can exercise over another, in determining his occupation and in exacting service or else food from him, still remains even in their proposition that the state should exact the service and not the individual.\textsuperscript{616} Furthermore, so long as the individual right to parenthood is accepted as inviolable, society will continue to be perturbed by an uninvited access of one or more mouths from certain individuals.\textsuperscript{617} Thus, in a healthy society, which is an expanding society, procreation is not merely a transitory but a perpetual source of violence. It is a fundamental truth of life and, therefore, it would be romantic to devise any new scheme of society in which it is not allowed for.\textsuperscript{610} This original act of violence, procreation, is rooted in life and enters into every form of human society willy-nilly, and its reverberations must proceed rhythmically throughout all the sections of any human community.\textsuperscript{619} What romantic socialists had forgotten is that since procreation and its consequences are part of the original elements of life and nature, which are allowed to persist in the more
or less artificial arrangements called society, then these arrangements must partake of the harshness, the inequalities and the apparent injustices of life and nature. Ludovici implores us to accept Life as it is:

...On its shadow side it may appear harsh, but seriously would we have it otherwise? and are not those who pretend it can be otherwise merely romanticists who want all life to be the perpetual white glare of a noonday sun without any noonday shadow?

Even conceding procreation's inevitable repercussions, inequality and injustice, the free operation of the individual's right to parenthood has immense advantages:

In nature it is the violence and inexorable character of the forces at play that give life its manifold beauties and contrasts, the mountain and the valleys, the rivers and the lakes, the table land and the gorge, the forests and the open plain.

Much of the joy of life springs from the thirst and thrill of adventure, from the consciousness of being an individual trying to establish one's right of citizenship among people who are sufficiently unequal to one to introduce an element of uncertainty and 'sport' into the undertaking. The vast repertory of different virtues and powers which inequality alone makes possible gives life its charms, its light and shade. Therefore, to inveigh against the necessary consequences of life, as socialists and communists do, is to open war against Life itself. Socialists are the advocates of a principle of death. After all socialist reforms, there would still remain a residuum of violence in all civilisations, which it would be impossible altogether to eliminate, so long as nations recognize the individual's inviolable right to parenthood. These truths of realism should be carefully remembered and reckoned with as a defense against the Rousseauan romanticism of liberals, socialists, and communists. Ludovici hoped an enlightened generation of historians would one day
arise who will regard it as their mission to inform mankind concerning the repeated instances in the past when "romantic illusions" alone, have led to disastrous upheavals in the life of the race. Where the desiderata striven and struggled for have been wholly chimerical a romanticization of life has ensued which, "like all romanticism, has to be paid for very heavily, and the price of which is frequently the peace, order and happiness of centuries." Ludovici thought the extreme danger of the ideology now prevalent in Europe and America is that it is replete with romanticism of this kind, it is a catalogue of chimerical hopes, objects, and desiderata. Superficial statesmanship was due to the prodigious romanticism of our era.

In Ludovici's novel of 1922, The Goddess that Grew Up, on the occasion of Mr. Peter Oliver's complicity in the death of his daughter's suitor, Cyril Bashfield Streeter, by giving him an unsafe mount, Ludovici says that cynical writing is deplored, unfortunately, by modern romantic Westerners. The "elites of the five villages" would never acknowledge publicly that the sudden and tragic demise of Mr. Streeter had occasioned them any secret pleasure. When the local newspaper, the East Kent Mercury, declared that this tragic occurrence had cast a gloom over the whole neighbourhood, none challenged its trustworthiness as a purveyor of accurate information, and "caused a lump to rise in throats which, only a day or so previously, had been accompanying the operation of the composite Evil Eye with a strong implication upon Mr. Streeter's head." Ludovici narrates, cynically, such as humanity, but those who paint a more pleasing and romantic portrait, "touched up with lies and illusions", about their fellow men, are the real favourites in the world's literature.
Ludovici believed that one of the best indications of the
effeminacy of men was the spread of socialism and communism all
over Europe.631 If covetousness and envy were the principal
emotional factors behind the socialist attitude, the modern world
would have nothing to do with it; for the modern world, unlike the
world of classical antiquity, was obsessed chiefly by moral
considerations. The modern world had no conception of the
intellectual cleanliness of the populaces of classical Athens and
Rome who were covetous and had the courage of their infirmities,
and a clean conscience in their immorality.632 If the modern man
wished to indulge in the infirmities of covetousness and envy he
clothed them in a moral and romantic garb which would appear to
provide him with a motive more exalted than cupidity, and at the same
time supply his opponents with virtuous reasons for capitulating.
The issue between them, far from being a trial of strength in which
the more powerful must prevail, becomes a duel of casuistry.633 The
moral justification of socialism is the plea of justice. However,
socialists had not yet realised that the 'justice' which forms its
moral justification is "a pure illusion, a meaningless fable, the most
elaborate 'eye-wash' that has ever been contrived by man."634 This
same notion recurs in Ludovici's novel of 1923, French Beans. Andre
de Loudon, the hero says that the menace of the covetousness of
socialism is that it has a moral basis.635 He then proceeds to assert
that universal justice means simply nothing at all, it is a figment.636
Sir Thomas Braintree thanks Andre de Loudon for his "lucid analysis
of the greatest hoax of modern times."637

Ludovici deprecated the demand, among liberated women, for fictional
and romantic literature. He thought it was a "neurotic solution"
which amounted to a fantastic escape from reality, as their is a
tendency, both in these novels and those who read them, to hold a view of life which is unrealistic and false. Ludovici’s Violence, Sacrifice and War of 1933, was welcomed as an attempt to disillusion the prevailing mentality of Britain’s interwar statesman. He had realised that the interwar age was afraid of the truth, to desert the dogmas of its eighteenth century liberalism that man was born free and noble, and that nature is opposed to struggle. Ludovici regretted that what had characterised all romantic reformers, hitherto, is that they had invariably regarded the sacrifices imposed by the elite upon the ruled, not as the outcome of a naturally generated form of violence, procreation, which must find sacrifice somewhere, but as a form of violence generated wholly by the vices of the rulers themselves or by their iniquitous laws. Ludovici called the latter charge romantic. It was true to life only to the limited extent that some rulers had intensified the sacrifice, or deliberately restricted it to a section of the community other than their own, or made it fall on the sections of the community least deserving of immolation. It was not real in the sense that, without an elite, violence and the need for sacrifice would vanish. Overlooking the sacrifices which procreation entails, romantics had been too hypnotised by the fact of human suffering to see the inevitability of it, and had always turned to the quarter of privilege as the source of the violence occasioning the sacrifice. Ludovici saw fascism as the elite’s realistic denial of this mistake of romanticism:

The aristocratic revolutions against kingship, insofar as they were partly prompted by compassion for the masses, were characterised by this mistake. The bourgeois, or middle class, revolutions against the aristocracies were the same. And the present movement of proletarian or mob revolutions against the middle classes which finds its counter-current in such middle class organisations as Fascism and Nazism are the same.
The socialist and communist idea that the abolition of capitalism and capitalists can ever remove violence from human society was purely illusory. The promoters of all revolutions had been ignorant and romantic enough to imagine a condition of no violence and no sacrifice. The internationalists and pacifists ideal of eternal amity and concord on earth overlooked reality and was a pure romantic illusion.

Ludovici believed the advent of a saner world would be ensured only if a sufficiently large body of people were persuaded of the romantic nebulous Liberal or Boleshevistic fantasies of the last two centuries. In his *The Child: an adults problem* of 1948, Ludovici attributed the growing adoration of children, those "unthumb marked by life", and aversion to their discipline, to the influence of romanticism.

Indeed, among liberal politicians and ideologues, as also in the schemes and programmes of socialism, Ludovici thought we everywhere encountered the determination to frame policies and to legislate on the hasty and superficial assumption that Rousseau was right:

...No attempt is first made to justify Rousseau by careful examination of the data, or by an assiduous study of human psychology. It is assumed off-hand, presumably because the assumption pleases, that Man is born good.

It was this romanticism, that had grievously affected the disciplining of children, according to Ludovici. Thus, a school of romantic educators had arisen who advocated an absolute minimum of adult interference with the wiles and wills of children. By means of the Wordsworthian and Rousseauan romantic standpoint with its implied moral superiority of the child the parent or educator was rendered passive, with ultimate detriment to their charges: "A degree of freedom is thereby secured for the permanent fixation of childlike tendencies in our growing population."
romantic view of children as revealed in Wordsworth's "Intimations of Immortality", undermined the adult confidence in his right to mould children's characters, for it made the adult appear the child's inferior. Ludovici disclosed the romantic belief in the fundamental goodness of man as naive.

Socialist Welfarism

Ludovici thought the conservative should question whether many contemporary evils are not to a very great extent the outcome of a too heavy burden of human incapacity and wreckage that had been imposed upon each fresh generation of efficient and sound citizens. The burden of social welfare hampered the whole machinery of national endeavour more or less equally as it rested quite as heavily on the hearty and sound among the working classes as upon the more desirable members of the elite. Ludovici thought the heavy toll that was levied on the people by the dissolute aristocracy of eighteenth century France was nothing compared with the toll that was exacted by humanity's wreckage from the surviving percentage of sound citizens in Britain.

In his A Defense of Conservatism Ludovici claims that he is amenable to the system of State-aided voluntary effort in education that existed before eighteen seventy. However, not to Mr. Forster's Elementary Education Bill which became law in eighteen seventy and effected three radical reforms: It placed the building and support of elementary schools upon the rates; it instituted the principle of compulsion; and it made elementary education practically free. The principles laid down in the Act of eighteen seventy were never departed from; on the contrary, subsequent Bills had been merely
complementary to them. What perturbed Ludovici was that Conservatives supported Mr. Forster quite as enthusiastically as moderate Liberals:

Thus, Lord Sandon’s Bill of 1876, which marked the contribution of the Conservative Party to the national system of education, far from reversing the policy of 1870, confirmed and extended it, and the only modification it embodied was to take a further step towards universal direct compulsion.

Ludovici questioned whether the Public Health Act of 1876, which established an efficient control over nuisances of all kinds and obliged local authorities to institute such services as the public health required, was more Whig than Tory in its conception. Although sound conservatism must endeavour to preserve the national health, it should also be committed to the policy of preserving the national character. One of the most valuable elements of the Anglo-Saxon character, according to Ludovici, was its independence and self-reliance. Therefore, to introduce the principle of gratuitous medical service was a dangerous innovation. It was anti-Tory. The practice of defraying the cost of a slight service in order to encourage its use, was to initiate the indirect subsidisation of industry out of the pockets of the whole community - it was gradually to undermine the character of the working population. It would have been preferable to have demanded a small fee for the service, and where poverty forbade the use of the service, to have started then and there an enquiry into the prevailing system of wages with a view of discovering why workers were insufficiently remunerated to be able independently to provide for their own medical needs. The latter would have been the real conservative policy because it would make industries and their workers self-supporting and at the same time conserve character. Seeing that the gratuity people relieved industrialists of the onus of raising wages, and to spend part of the money due to the workers before it
actually reached their pockets, it was also 'vicious in its conception besides being unconservative. This vicious principle was extended throughout the latter half of the nineteenth century until with Lloyd-George's Insurance Act of 1912, the method of spending a portion of the poor man's wages for him, before it reached his pocket, was established on a prodigious scale.\textsuperscript{659}

However, this vicious Liberal principle of favouring industry and not caring for the character of the people was one already endorsed by Conservatives and Tories alike. It revealed the Conservative Party as inadequately equipped in the knowledge of their own principles.\textsuperscript{660}

No Conservative ought ever to have been party to a Liberal measure which went any way towards establishing free compulsory education, which undermined character.\textsuperscript{661} The free labourer, unlike the slave, can develop character traits such as independence, self-reliance, self-respect, and thrift, which are ultimately useful to the nation as a whole.\textsuperscript{662} Ludovici believed it was natural for the Liberals to abet the enslavement of the working people by welfare schemes for not only were they the patrons of the towns and of industries, and thus interested in keeping down wages, but, in their fantastic attitude they were not concerned with preserving anything so real as the character of the people.\textsuperscript{663} He thought that as the Conservative Party neither took steps to control foreign immigration or attempted to secure a fair competence for the working masses, this "is the best demonstration of the supine indifference of the nineteenth century Conservatives of the principles of their party."\textsuperscript{664} The easy course was to enslave the workers through State enforced services, and this was proceeded with:

Thus today, we find ourselves saddled with a proletariat largely deteriorated in character through the enslavement they have suffered, and with all this the problem of wages still remains unsolved. So we are practically in the same position with regard to the condition of labour.
as we were in 1860, plus a proletariat whose moral fibre has been vitiated and completely transformed.665

Although, it is important to get the reasons for this degeneration that Ludovici cited, in proper perspective. He reckoned that the corruption of English character and self-reliance had only been partly due to welfare legislation. It was mainly due to the passing of the Nordic element in the country and its replacement by Mediterranean stock through indiscriminate immigration.666 Nevertheless, in his A Defence of Conservatism, Ludovici reckoned trade depression and unemployment were ultimately caused by the financial burden of the degenerate and unproductive on the sound and able-bodied.667 He found it deplorable that money which was intercepted on its way to the pockets of wage earners was spent on the sick, degenerate, and crippled.668

Ludovici is correctly regarded as employing the doctrine of liberty in the defense of hierarchy and orthodoxy and against the Welfare State. He complained of the effects of social reform:

..."its two fold effect in character deterioration and in penalising the more industrious, thrifty, responsible and self-reliant members of the population for the sake of the indolent, unscrupulous and least disciplined."669

For Ludovici, socialism was the bitter effluvia of death; it was the morbid indolence of the sick. Socialism was a force of decay and disintegration for private property is a principle of Life.670 Development describes the changes of a species that has grown in the sense of becoming cumulatively capable of multifarious activities and adaptations.671 As development implies becoming more and extending identity it is a principle of higher life. When applied to humanity it means that the ascending line of life by physically striving to become more and more extends identity. To assail this desire to become more and more is therefore tantamount to a conspiracy against
life: "It is the hand of death outstretched across the ascending
road of the animal man (his italics)." Private property is so
closely identified with individual extension that even women and
children have been included in this category. The individual of
a species cannot manifest this incessant striving to become more and
more, which is the conscious counterpart of the physical evolution
of the race, except by means of private property. Socialists are
the convinced and determined opponents, not only of a particular
class, but of Life itself. The morality of development identifies
growth in the individual with the general growth of the species, and
therefore sanctifies the 'instinct' of self-extension which is the
'instinct' of private property. Those who assail the principle of
private property paralyse the life 'instinct' of their fellows, and
limit their life on the globe. The institution of private property
was not an evil in itself, only its present distribution. The desire
to eradicate the institution was the resort of sick and exhausted
people, who were incapable of repairing or recreating anything; and
the action of people who were not merely hostile to private property,
but to Life in general. Ludovici thought the elite on which the
successful survival of the race depends were being sacrificed for the
comfort, ease, and daily welfare of the defective, the lunatic, the
incurable, the half-witted, and the blind. Socialist welfarism
had led to the desire to live by 'unselfish' mutual support and
dependency, instead of by the virile qualities of self-help and
individual enterprise.

According to Ludovici, personal liberty and freedom, the spirit which
once made England great would vanish under socialism. Socialist
welfarism was the canker that was destroying everything valuable and
great in our civilisation:
...So long as it is desirable, for the life of one desirable and fragrant family to be penalised even to the extent of sixpence a year, in order to maintain human rubbish in existence, we are obeying the value which demands, when sacrifice is necessary, that the greater should be offered up to the less. We have obeyed this value too long, and it has necessarily landed us in disaster.

Ludovici thought that past experience and the common verdict of mankind indicated private ownership as a desirable institution for the following reasons: It is the first prerequisite of individual freedom; it is the first prerequisite in the formation of character and the practice of self-discipline; it is the first prerequisite in the exercise and development of taste; it is essential for purposeful leisure; it is economically superior, besides promoting the nobler side of human nature in generosity and patronage, by providing a condition for energetic and ambitious activity. The wise man should follow Aristotle's reply to Plato, that wherever communism is applied, a condition in which the best administrator of property is assumed to be the central government, waste, inefficiency, daily robbery of the national exchequer, and above all chronic dereliction of duty in all ranks and departments, prevails.

In contemporary welfare schemes it was the most competent and healthy person who lost, "while the degenerate who is capable of producing nothing but degenerate offspring has the public purse at his disposal." Ludovici deplored the spectacle of a national Government sparing no pains to foster and pamper "human rubbish", and sacrificing the sound to that end. He believed the danger of the Welfare State was that it contributed to the decline of the stock of desirable people in Britain, and attracted immigrants. The British had degenerated from a proud, independent, thrifty, and self-respecting race into one that had become expert in shifting its legitimate burdens onto its neighbours,
in battening on charities expected from its fellow men, and expecting State aid and compensation even for performing the primitive function of procreation.\(^{689}\) It was unjust to penalise self-controlled, industrious and responsible people in order to succour contemporaries whose lack of responsibility and reckless hedonism, dissolute habits and sloth, had reduced them to a pitiable condition. Ludovici also deplored reckless benevolence towards criminals, particularly murderers, as undermining discipline and order:

> It is unjust to allow people who have deprived others of the sweetness of life to continue enjoying the sweetness themselves. Therefore, the just man, disregarding the relief from envy vouchsafed by the spectacle of the murderer awaiting the hang man in the condemned cell of jail, and not wholly forgetting the man’s victim, deprives the murderer of the benefits of which he has shorn his victim, and leaves it to the mob high and low to wallow in their charitable grief.\(^{690}\)

He believed abuses of the compulsory charities extorted from the responsible, thrifty and industrious elements in the population occurred with disturbing frequency. Socialist welfarism had also contributed to overpopulation in Britain.\(^{691}\) Ludovici attributed socialist welfarism in part to what he called the 'parti hontcune' in pity, which Schopenhauer, but not Nietzsche, had discerned. Wherever envy is widespread people’s peace of mind is disturbed by the spectacle of any marked superiority in a neighbour. Only the spectacle of any inferior plight in a neighbour and the consequent pity and charity evoked relieves the ache of envy.\(^{692}\) It was manifested in the prevalence of indiscriminate charity, and its degenerative effects:

> ...behold all the unwise and reckless benevolence and charity in modern England which is now undermining the will to work in the masses, and converting our prisons into second-rate boarding houses; ... about us all the inevitable results of the concessions that have been made to popular self-indulgence and lack of self-restraint. \(^{693}\)
Institutional: Democratic Government

Jadovici claims his purpose in writing *A Defence of Aristocracy*. A text book for Tories is to conclude that aristocracy means life and that democracy means death. As life is a matter of choosing and rejecting correctly, there is one opinion on vital matters that is right and another that is wrong. Democracy is therefore a condonation of suicide for some men's opinions on vital questions; by being erroneous, must lead to death. Democracy also involves a condonation of murder, for those who hold and act upon lethal opinions will not only cease to exist as men either in their own or subsequent generations, but they may stand in the way of the life of others.

Jadovici attributed the gradual crescendo of "emotionalism and claptrap" in the speeches of politicians, particularly Lloyd-George, after the extension of the franchise in nineteen-eighteen, to the pernicious effects of democracy. It is difficult to sustain a serious and profound political role in a democracy without thereby forfeiting, through the loss of popular favour, the very opportunity and power one may have of contributing to the wise government of the country. Democracy forbade the presentation of sound and far-reaching reforms in a shape sufficiently attractive and garish to provoke popular enthusiasm. In his *A Defence of Conservatism*, Jadovici wrote that in a degenerate age the majority of newcomers to a country fall below existing standards and are, therefore, anti-conservative. Their claim for the modifications they propose as 'progress' is exacerbatated in a democracy where their lethal and morbid influence is not limited. Democracy amounts, in practice, to a failure to distinguish between changes which are demanded by undesirable, and those which are demanded by desirable elements in a nation.
democratic influence, bulk and numbers begin to take the place of quality in every department of the national life. The competing political parties are inherently opportunist in their competition for popular support:

...the practice, so much favoured by Conservative politicians in the past, of stealing the clothes of the Liberals or the Radicals or even the Socialists, while these gentlemen are away bathing, becomes the highest wisdom, and party differences become mere make-believe.

Democracy rendered it impossible to distinguish in the confusion of the polls, between the clamour for change which was regressive and that which was progressive - the task of conserving the nation's identity becomes impossible. Liberals were wrong in thinking that where democracy is withheld the intelligence of men stultifies and their capacities decline. The people of self-governing England were no more intelligent than the people of England a hundred and fifty years before. Contrary to what romantics believed, political activities are the most corrupting a man can engage in. The multiplication of State controllers, far from improving the control, depreciates its quality. Democratic institutions tend inevitably to destroy the belief in national purity and good stocks: "Miscegenation might even be regarded as the peculiar device of democracy." No class in the community feels its interest are satisfactorily secured by democracy because of the power of the caucus, and of the party leaders over the body of backbenchers in Parliament.

Ludovici believed democracy brought the 'slaves' to power. In democracy no real struggle for rulership took place as there was no desire to master. Ludovici shared his belief that democracy causes degeneration with Nietzsche, who reckoned democracy "the annihilation of all higher aims and hopes."
The inherent vice of democratic control was that it ultimately degraded politics into a matter of emotional appeal through the instrumentality of demagogues. Politics had become a matter of divisions, Conservative and Labour, without any attempt to make a unifying appeal. Ludovici cited as an example of the increasing bitterness and the fantastic nature of the promises made by the candidates the election of the young Labour MP Oswald Mosley at Smethwick, commenting on which The Times said "personalities played a bigger part than politics." Not only did democracy contribute to national decline, but as the ignorant masses formed a powerful body of opinion in a democracy, it became increasingly difficult to get the country to regard the fact of national degeneracy as a problem. Hence the reluctance to take "drastic steps" to arrest national degeneration.

One of Ludovici's reasons for admiring Hitler was that he believed Hitler was fulfilling Nietzsche's anti-democratic bias in action. Ludovici eulogised Hitler's belief that democracy is the precursor of anarchy and communism because as the suffrage is extended to the ranks of the ignorant, subjective, and foolish, who cannot see beyond the limits of their own self-interest, the democratic form of government necessarily leads to a chaotic clash of self-interested groups, who are prepared to see their country perish before they will yield what they conceive to be their immediate advantage. Similarly, Nietzsche believed democracy is wrong because the elite are swamped by the mediocre and inferior mass: "I am opposed to parliamentary government and the power of the press", he said, "because they are the means whereby cattle become masters." Hitler emphasised the value to Germany of having rid herself of democracy, her 'talking institutions', 'chatterboxes', and the voice of degeneracy at her council table.
By condemning the 'chatter' of democracy and its defence of the liberties of degenerate nonentities, Ludovici believed Hitler was a laudable Nietzschean:

"When, therefore, the Fuehrer repeatedly assures Germany of the benefits of her silence, it is only a therapeutic measure, and points to the advantage which, as a silent nation, she now enjoys overall the vociferous and chattering nations of Western democracy, he once more reveals, if not the Nietzschean influence, at least a deep sympathy with the ideas of the latter-day German sage." 715

The democrat, motivated by sick and degenerate values, by participating in the nation's affairs occasions its death. 716 The only 'freedom' that democracy confers on the people is to allow their ignorance and stupidity to be exploited by demagogues. 717 The Control Commission in defeated Nazi Germany failed to see that whilst condemning national socialism they were engaged in putting across another ideology by propaganda - the democratic. They should have realised, as Dr. Salazar of Portugal did, that: "One of the greatest fallacies of the nineteenth century was that English Parliamentarianism and English democracy were adaptable to every European country." 718

Democracy amounts to a condition of suicide and death to the nations that adopt it because a majority are not merely incapable of voicing the taste of flourishing life but make selections adverse to flourishing life, or actually lethal. 719 The capacity to distinguish good from evil doctrine, diet, conduct, form, stature, appearance, and the daily routine of human life - taste - is essential to the conservation of a people. The people who lose their elite, who can exercise this vital taste, are thus doomed. Only an elite of flourishing life can give their people life-promoting values concerning all the vital alternatives of life. 720 Ludovici thought democracy was a pernicious form of "mass neurosis" which afflicted civilised communities in their decline. 721 Under popular government the people's cumulative influence
ultimately has a degenerative effect on all standards, whilst the
machinery of democracy, with its elusive sources of control,
allows of opportunities for swaying the ill-informed and emotional
populace in any direction that may seem expedient to powerful,
and alien minoritys. Unfortunately, so carefully had the mass
been indoctrinated by the fanatical and 'interested' champions of
democracy, "with their dark insinuations about Fascism", that they
frowned upon any critics of democracy. Democracy militated
against the recognition of national decadence:

...Moone, who like myself, has had much experience
of public debating, can fail to have noticed that
it is not the truthful realist, dwelling on
unpalatable facts, who is acclaimed, no matter how
elegantly he may speak; but the speaker who leads
everyone to believe that everything is all-right,
or, as even the so called educated prefer it today;
quite all right.

Democracy was the political institution of a sick generation. Before
men could devise it the elite, down to the meanest operative, had to
undergo a marked deviation from the normal and forget a more 'golden
age'. Men possessed of forest stamina, with buoyant health and high
spirits, are immune to the infinitude of envy and the institution that
appeases it - democracy. Democracy was in the control of every
unsavory and skilled 'wire-puller' who, once he had acquired
control of publicity channels, had secured the means whereby the
pathetic apathy, mental indolence, indiscipline and sentimentality
of crowds could lead to any 'majority decision' he desired.

Licence masqueraded as liberty, discipline declined, and the
nation's fibre slowly softened as anarchy spread because of
democracy: "Can anyone doubt that the basic evil of our system
results from Party Government and the bitter rivalry it fosters?"
The most elementary knowledge of human nature should suffice to warn
of the inanity of assuming that political parties will consider the
national interest before their chance of winning an election; and that the electorate in estimating the merits of a party's policies, will always forego immediate benefits in order to serve the best interests of the nation.\textsuperscript{728} The wise, intelligent and discriminating members of the community always constitute an elite. Thus, majority rule must mean government by the least able and least gifted elements in the population: "Can we wonder then, that wherever today democracy is established things go from bad to worse and that chaos and anarchy are becoming universal?"\textsuperscript{729} According to Ludovici, we condemn what the Establishment had taught us to regard as the fascist and nazi slogan that might is right, yet in our democracy we unhesitatingly accept that right resides where there is popular might.\textsuperscript{730} Democracy attacks aristocracy, and the world is left with plutocracy, a grandiose device for appeasing envy. However, plutocracy is but a stage in a process towards the total elimination of all causes of envy. Aristotle foretold the inevitable transformation of democracy into socialism and finally communism over two thousand years ago in his \textit{Politics}.\textsuperscript{731}

The conclusion to which Ludovici's reasons for the degeneration of the world constantly refer is that the natural hierarchy and order of nature has been inverted. At the beginning of Chapter III of his \textit{A Defence of Aristocracy. A text book for Tories}, "The English Aristocrat as a Failure in the Tutorship of Ruling"\textsuperscript{732}, Ludovici says that whilst the English aristocracy had failed hopelessly in the 'craft', or protection of the populace, of their ruling, his charge against them in regard to the 'tutorship' in governing is even more severe. For centuries the Lords had neglected the principle of flourishing life: "Respect the burden."\textsuperscript{733} Since the middle of the eighteenth century, but for a few brilliant exceptions, such as
the seventh Earl of Shaftesbury, the voice of flourishing life had been entirely silent in England:

...all the confusion and doubt which we now see about us, all the ugliness, vulgarity, misery and uncontrolled Hedonism which now prevail, are nothing but the outcome of the fact that the voice of impoverished life, of inferior life, has been practically the only guiding voice in our island for one hundred and fifty years. 734

The misery of the lower orders was matched by that of the 'superior' orders who had lost all sense of a grand scheme of life, and who were uncomfortable in their position of merely material superiority. 735

Conservatives showed themselves incapable of even the elementary self-preservative caution of preserving the health of the elite and that of the people, which would have followed. They committed their party to an unprincipled opportunism. 736

Ludovici shared his conviction that all government had lapsed with Nietzsche. 738 All sense of gradation and rank had been lost in our democratic age, according to Ludovici; the virtues of modesty and humility had to be preached as a corrective against the vulgar pretensions of "wretched nobodies." 739 Lord Henry Highbarn, the hero of Too Old for Dolls, says to Aubrey St. Maur that the elite has decayed: "Where are the great men today?" 740 Ludovici found it deplorable that everybody imagines that they not only enjoy but also exercise the right of private judgement. 741 He reckoned the low taste, intellectual inferiority, and indolent hedonism of the degenerate elite had gradually diffused to 'lower' strata in the population. Everything despicable today was present in germ generations ago in the elite, and needed only time to reach the emulatory masses:

...whereas in 1860, a Salvation Army for the 'Upper Ten' would probably have sufficed to regenerate the whole nation - a fact entirely missed by William and Charles Booth - today the imperative need is a Salvation Army for the whole population, a much more difficult undertaking. 742
The record of aristocracy in England had, except for a few individual nobles, been one of deplorable incompetence, hedonism, and self-indulgence. Throughout the classes high and low, or the affluent and the less affluent, no elite existed. The limitation of the power of the 'aristocrats' who comprised the personnel of the House of Lords had been due to the fact that only exceptionally were they aristocrats at all.

Indeed, in speaking of England alone it is no exaggeration to say that for a period of 1100 years - from St. Boniface to Asquith and the Parliament Act of 1911, which was a rude conge hurled at the heads of England's worthless aristocracy - we know of no age in which the English ruling class, as a body subordinate to the sovereign, displayed even the minimum of wisdom and prudence which would have assured their retention of the national leadership.

Ludovici thought it would be worthwhile, before the ultimate reckoning arises, for those unfamiliar with the social history of England, to ponder on the centuries of inarticulate suffering before the old French word 'dangier', signifying dominion, authority, jurisdiction - the relation of a Lord or master to his dependent or subordinate, with all its undertones of protective benevolence could, through the behaviour of bogus aristocrats, have become a warning of imminent injury. The absence of an elite had been responsible for England's degeneration.

...it must be obvious that it is the complete absence from our present day Western societies of any elite able to set a high standard of decency and good tone, that is chiefly responsible for the steady deterioration of our way of life and the decay of our civilisation.

Conclusion

Ludovici is a typical fascist in condemning all the extremes of the political spectrum, and their associated parties, as contributing to
the degeneration of the nation. In the latter part of Chapter 2 I have described Ludovici's condemnation of the Conservative Party, whilst throughout this Chapter, the Conservative Party, in either thought or action, is invariably implicated by Ludovici as having some complicity in the various causes, which he alleges, of England's degeneracy. Similarly, in his tirades against miscegenation, the Christian ethic, rationalism, humanism, Rousseauan romanticism, socialist welfarism, democracy, and the like, Ludovici condemned the heritage of both liberalism and socialism. Indeed, his condemnation of the established ideologies of the party system overlaps. No aspect of the political spectrum of the party system escaped his denunciation. His is a fascist diagnosis of national degeneration.

In the following chapter I shall demonstrate that Ludovici synthesises the political extremes of the party system, which he intends to succeed, in an extreme nationalism. It will be maintained that by rendering conservatism commensurable with fascism he intended to regenerate England.
Notes to Chapter 4: The Desperate World


2. ibid., p.168.


8. ibid., p.61.


10. ibid., p.16.

11. ibid., p.41.

12. ibid., p.42.

13. ibid., p.91.

14. ibid., pp.91-92.

15. ibid., p.92.


17. ibid., pp.48-49.

18. ibid., p.49.

19. ibid., p.52.

20. ibid., p.117.


23. idem., Man's Descent from the Gods; or, the complete case against prohibition (London: William Heinemann, 1921), p.115.


32. *ibid.*, p.16.


35. *ibid.*, p.112.


40. *ibid.*, *Some Reasons for Fear*, English Mistery Leaflet, No.3., 1936, p.3.


42. *ibid.*, *The Quest of Human Quality, How to rear leaders* (London; Rider, 1952), pp.132-133.


46. *ibid.*, p. 194.


Notes to Chapter 4


53. ibid., p.160.


56. idem., The False Assumptions of "Democracy" (London: Heath Cranton, [1921]), pp.ix-x.


58. ibid., p.575.

59. idem., "A Post-War Maiden (To Agnes Birrell) [A poem]," in his The Taming of Don Juan (London: Hutchinson, [1924]), pp.6-7.

60. idem., The Taming of Don Juan (London: Hutchinson, [1924]), p. 164.

61. ibid., p.189.

62. ibid., p.190.


64. ibid., pp.202-203.

65. ibid., p.203.

66. ibid., p.236.

67. ibid., pp.272-273.


69. idem., Violence, Sacrifice and War (London: St. James's Kin of the English Mistery, [1933]), p.27.


72. ibid., footnote to p.7.

74. *ibid.*, pp.15-16.

75. *ibid.*, p.16.

76. *ibid.*, p.83.

77. *ibid.*, p.88.

78. *ibid.*, p.251.

79. *ibid.*, pp251-252.


82. *ibid.*, p.256.


90. *ibid.*, p.34.


92. *ibid.*, p.58.

93. *ibid.*, p.150.


96. *ibid.*, p.220.

Notes to Chapter 4


99. ibid., p. 65.

100. ibid., p. 92.

101. ibid., p. 176.

102. ibid., p. 191.

103. ibid., p. 282.

104. ibid., p. 284.


106. idem., The Taming of Don Juan (London: Hutchinson, [1924]), p. 207.

107. ibid., p. 240.

108. ibid., p. 310.


110. ibid., p. 264.

111. ibid., pp. 236-237.

112. ibid., p. 249.

113. ibid., p. 306.


115. ibid., p. 99.


117. ibid., p. 110.

118. ibid., p. 111.

119. ibid., p. 113.

120. idem., A Defence of Conservatism (London: Faber & Gwyer, 1927), p. 130.

121. idem., The Night-Hoers; or, the case against birth control and an alternative (London: Herbert Jenkins, 1928), pp. 234-235.

122. ibid., pp. 238-239.


126. ibid., p.3.

127. ibid., p.2.

128. ibid., p.3.

129. ibid., p.4.

130. ibid., p.5.

131. ibid., p.6.

132. ibid., p.7.

133. ibid., p.9.

134. ibid., p.10.

135. ibid., pp. 10-11.

136. ibid., p.12ff.

137. ibid., pp.17-31.

138. ibid., p.18.

139. ibid., p.19.

140. ibid., p.20.

141. ibid., p.22.

142. ibid., pp.21-22.


144. ibid., pp.31-32.

145. ibid., p.32.

146. ibid., pp.34-35.

147. ibid., pp.41-42.


149. ibid., p.67.

150. ibid., p.68.

151. ibid., p.90.


153. ibid., pp.146-147.

154. ibid., p.149.
Notes to Chapter 4.


156. idem., The False Assumptions of "Democracy" (London: Heath Cranton, [1921]), pp.32-33.


160. ibid., p.439.


162. ibid., p.454.


164. ibid., pp.92-93.

165. ibid., pp. 161-162.


168. ibid., pp.69-70.

169. ibid., pp. 71-72.

170. ibid., p.72.


172. idem., The Night-Hoers: or, the case against birth control and an alternative (London: Herbert Jenkins, 1928), p.65.


175. idem., The Choice of a Mate (London: John Lane, 1935), pp. 10-11.

176. idem., The False Assumptions of "Democracy" (London: Heath Cranton, [1921]), p.33.

177. ibid., p.34.
Notes to Chapter 4.


179. ibid., pp.92-93.

180. ibid., p.149.

181. ibid., p.149-152.

182. ibid., p.152.

183. ibid., p.159.

184. ibid., p.161.

185. ibid., p.163.

186. ibid., p.194.

187. ibid., pp.228-229.

188. ibid., p.277.


190. ibid., p.302.

191. ibid., p.309.

192. ibid., p.319.

193. ibid., p.325.

194. ibid., p.326.


196. ibid., pp.39-40.

197. ibid., p.115.

198. ibid., p.118.

199. ibid., pp.120-121.

200. ibid., p.121.

201. ibid., pp.122-123.

202. ibid., p.123.

203. ibid., p.133.

204. ibid., p.134.

205. ibid., pp.147-148.

206. ibid., p.150.

207. ibid., p.151.
Notes to Chapter 4


209. ibid., p.155.

210. ibid., p.158.


212. ibid., p.6.


216. *idem.*, *Man's Descent from the Gods; or, the complete case against prohibition* (London: William Heinemann, 1921), pp.43-44.

217. ibid., p.45.


220. ibid., p.48.

221. ibid., p.56.

222. ibid., p.57.

223. ibid., p.172.

224. ibid., pp.179-180.

225. ibid., pp.181-182.

226. ibid., p.184.

227. ibid., pp.184-185.

228. ibid., p.185.

229. ibid., p.194.


232. ibid., p.23.

233. ibid., p.24.
Notes to Chapter 4

235. ibid., p.30.
237. ibid., p.135.
240. ibid., p.15.
241. ibid.
242. ibid., p.17.
243. ibid., p.125.
244. ibid., pp.53-54.
245. ibid., pp.60-61.
246. ibid., p.67.
247. ibid., p.79.
248. ibid., p.180.
249. ibid., pp.93-94.
250. ibid., p.109.
251. ibid., p.113.
252. ibid., p.115.
255. ibid., p.20.
256. ibid., pp.21-22.
257. ibid., p.23.
Notes to Chapter 4


262. ibid., pp.384-385.


264. ibid., pp.238-239.

265. ibid., p.278.


267. ibid., p.31.

268. ibid., pp.264-265.


276. ibid., p.172.

277. ibid., p.173.

278. ibid., p.175.

279. ibid., p.177.

280. ibid., p.178.

281. ibid., p.180.

282. ibid., p.183.

283. ibid., pp.188-189.

284. ibid., p.204.

285. ibid., p.206.

286. ibid., pp.218-219.

287. ibid., p.234.

288. ibid., p.235.

290. ibid., p.66.

291. ibid., pp.168-207.

292. ibid., p.171.

293. ibid., p.172.

294. ibid., p.173.

295. ibid., p.176.

296. ibid., p.180.


298. ibid., p.114.


301. ibid., pp.56-57.


303. ibid., p.xiii.


305. ibid., p.110.

306. ibid., p.111.

307. ibid., p.144.

308. ibid., p.180.

309. ibid., p.236.

310. ibid., p.237.

311. ibid., p.286.


314. ibid., pp.100-101.


318. idem., "In the Worker's Paradise [Review of The Rabbit King of Russia, by R.O.G. Urch (The Right Book Club)]," New Pioneer, March 1939, Volume 1, No.4, p.105.


320. ibid., p.20.

321. ibid., p.21.

322. ibid., p.22.

323. ibid., pp.22-23.


326. ibid., p.177.

327. ibid., p.178.

328. ibid., p.179.


330. ibid., p.143.


333. ibid., p.174.

334. idem., The Taming of Don Juan (London: Hutchinson, 1924), p.84.

335. ibid., p.85.

336. ibid., p.234.

338. ibid., p. 236.

339. ibid., p. 271.

340. ibid., p. 272.


342. ibid., p. 175.

343. ibid., p. 281.


347. ibid., pp. 69-70.

348. ibid., pp. 72-73.

349. ibid., pp. 76-77.

350. ibid., p. 81.

351. ibid., pp. 130-131.

352. ibid., pp. 134-135.

353. idem., *English Liberalism* (London: English Array, 1939), pp. 4-5.

354. ibid., p. 5.

355. ibid., p. 28.

356. ibid., p. 29.

357. ibid., pp. 30-31.

358. ibid., p. 31.


360. ibid., p. 36.

361. ibid., pp. 50-51.

362. ibid., p. 68.

363. ibid., p. 78.

364. ibid., p. 136.


368. ibid. p.58.

369. ibid., p.125.


373. ibid., pp.240-241.

374. ibid., p.245.

375. ibid., p.246.

376. ibid., p.314.


379. ibid., pp.8-9.


382. ibid., pp.70-71.


384. idem., Man's Descent from the Gods; or, the complete case against prohibition (London: William Heinemann, 1921), pp.1-12.

385. ibid., pp.7-8.

386. ibid., pp.42-43.

387. Genesis, vi.2; quoted in Anthony Mario Ludovici, ibid., p.43.

388. Anthony Mario Ludovici, ibid., p.64.

389. ibid., pp.57-58.
Notes to Chapter 4

390. Anthony Mario Ludovici, Man's Descent from the Gods; or, the complete case against prohibition (London: William Heinemann, 1921), pp. 1-12.

391. ibid., p. 181.

392. ibid., p. 182.

393. ibid., pp. 184-185.

394. ibid., pp. 218-219.


397. ibid., p. 206.


399. ibid., pp. 42-43.

400. ibid., p. 44.

401. ibid., p. 58.


405. ibid., pp. 176-177.


407. ibid., p. 193.

408. ibid., p. 206.


410. ibid., p. 219.

411. ibid., pp. 219-220.

412. ibid., p. 230.

413. ibid., p. 237.

414. ibid., p. 241.

415. ibid., pp. 249-250.


417. ibid., p. 337.

322


421. *idem.*, The False Assumptions of "Democracy" (London: Heath Cranton, [1921]), p.27.


424. *ibid.*, p. 16.


432. *ibid.*, p.25.

433. *ibid*.


437. *ibid.*, pp.36-37.


Notes to Chapter 4


442. ibid., p. 8.

443. ibid., pp. 1-31.

444. ibid., p. 11.

445. ibid., p. 13.

446. ibid., pp. 13-14.


450. ibid., pp. 128-129.

451. idem., The Choice of a Mate (London: John Lane, 1935), p. 239.


455. ibid., p. 102.


457. ibid., p. 111.

458. ibid., p. 112.

459. ibid., p. 113.

460. ibid., pp. 117-118.

461. ibid., p. 120.

462. ibid., pp. 120-121.


465. ibid., p. 86.
Notes to Chapter 4


467. R.B. Kerr, Our Prophets [Studies of Living Writers], (Croydon: R.B. Kerr, 1932), pp.91-92.


470. ibid., pp.92-93.

471. ibid., p.94.

472. ibid., p.106.

473. ibid., p.107.

474. ibid., p.150.

475. ibid., p.162.

476. ibid., p.222.

477. ibid., p.281.


479. ibid., p.24.

480. ibid., pp.24-25.

481. ibid., pp.25-26.

482. ibid., p.79.

483. ibid., p.82.

484. ibid., p.94.

485. ibid., p.106.

486. ibid., p.107.

487. ibid., p.122.

488. idem., What Woman Wishes (London: Hutchinson, [1921]), pp.36-37.

489. ibid., p.59.


491. ibid., p.118.

492. ibid., p.186.

494. ibid., p.13.

495. ibid., p.14.

496. ibid., p.15.


498. ibid., p.86.

499. ibid., p.88.

500. ibid., p.89.

501. ibid., p.93.

502. ibid., p.94.

503. ibid., pp.94-95.


505. ibid., p.17.


508. ibid., p.23.

509. ibid., p.34.

510. ibid., p.41.

511. ibid., pp.42-43.

512. ibid., p.73.

513. ibid., p.74.

514. ibid., p.91.

515. ibid., p.95.

516. ibid., p.109.

517. ibid., p.115.

518. ibid., pp.122-123.


520. ibid., p.180.

521. ibid., pp.98-99.

522. ibid., pp.223-224.

524. ibid., p.262.

525. ibid., p.288.

526. ibid., p.291.

527. ibid., p.298.


529. ibid., p.35.

530. ibid., p.36.

531. ibid., p.77.

532. ibid., p.78.

533. ibid., p.86.

534. ibid., p.143.

535. ibid., p.302.


539. ibid., p.29.

540. ibid., p.35.

541. ibid., pp.35-36.

542. ibid., p.61.

543. ibid., p.66.

544. ibid., p.161.

545. ibid., pp.301-302.

546. ibid., p.306.

547. ibid., p.361.

548. ibid., p.362.

549. ibid., pp.365-366.

550. ibid., p.367.

551. ibid., pp.367-368.
Notes to Chapter 4


553. ibid., p.23.

554. ibid., p.24.


556. ibid., p.652.

557. ibid., p.655.


559. ibid., p.72.

560. ibid., p.77.

561. ibid., p.89.


567. ibid., p.37.

568. ibid., pp.65-66.

569. ibid., pp.68-69.

570. ibid., p.73.

571. ibid., p.138.

572. ibid., p.140.


575. ibid., p.10.

Note to Chapter 4


578. ibid., p. 13.


587. ibid., p. 61.

588. ibid., p. 62.

589. ibid., pp. 62-63.

590. ibid., pp. 63-64.

591. ibid., p. 65.

592. ibid.

593. ibid., p. 67.

594. ibid., p. 68.

595. ibid., p. 71.

596. ibid., p. 72.

597. ibid., p. 73.

598. ibid., p. 132.

599. ibid., footnote to p. 132.

600. ibid., p. 135.

601. ibid., p. 261.
Notes to Chapter 4


604. ibid., pp. 157-158.

605. ibid., p. 158.


607. ibid., pp. 166-167.


609. ibid., pp. 16-17.

610. ibid., p. 17.

611. ibid., pp. 17-18.

612. ibid., p. 18.

613. ibid., p. 19.

614. ibid., p. 51.

615. ibid., pp. 52-53.

616. ibid., p. 101.

617. ibid., p. 102.

618. ibid., p. 106.

619. ibid., p. 108.


621. ibid., p. 116.

622. ibid., p. 117.

623. ibid., p. 118.

624. ibid., p. 119.

625. ibid., p. 125.

626. ibid., p. 179.

627. ibid., p. 183.

628. ibid., p. 184.


630. ibid., pp. 255-256.

632. ibid., pp.196-197.

633. ibid., p.197.

634. ibid., p.198.


636. ibid., pp.33-34.

637. ibid., p.34.


642. ibid., p.22.


645. ibid., p.39.

646. ibid., p.41.

647. ibid., p.47.

648. ibid., p.55.


652. ibid., p.607.


654. ibid., p.113.

655. ibid., pp.113-114.

657. ibid., p.139.

658. ibid., pp.139-140.

659. ibid., p.140.

660. ibid., p.141.

661. ibid., p.143.

662. ibid., p.144

663. ibid., pp.144-145.

664. ibid., pp.145-146.

665. ibid., p.147.

666. ibid., p.156.

667. ibid., p.230.

668. ibid., p.239.


671. ibid., p.32.

672. ibid., pp.33-34.

673. ibid., p.34.

674. ibid., p.35.

675. ibid., pp.35-36.

676. ibid., p.36.

677. ibid., p.37.

678. ibid., pp.37-38.


681. ibid., p.230.

682. ibid., p.341.

684. ibid., p.31.

685. ibid., pp.32-33.


692. ibid., p.175.

693. ibid., p.177.


695. ibid., p.241.


697. ibid., p.955.

698. ibid., pp.955-956.


700. ibid., p.22.

701. ibid., p.21.

702. ibid., p.27.

703. ibid., p.32.

704. ibid., p.69.

705. ibid., p.71.

706. ibid., pp.72-73.

707. ibid., p.157.
Notes to Chapter 4


715. Anthony Mario Ludovici, ibid., p.52.


719. Anthony Mario Ludovici, ibid., p.36.

720. ibid., p.36ff.

721. ibid., pp.46-47.

722. ibid., p.48.

723. ibid., p.50.


Notes to Chapter 4


730. ibid., p.92.


733. ibid., p.78.

734. ibid., pp.78-79.

735. ibid., p.79.


742. idem., The Quest of Human Quality, How to rear leaders (London: Rider, 1952), p.56.

743. ibid., p.68.


747. ibid., p.47.

748. ibid., p.97.
CHAPTER 5: WE MUST REVOLUTIONIZE

The Revolution

An essential part of their commitment to total change and a new civilization as does Judovici. They share the belief that a regenerate state of man and society can be achieved through revolution. In his 'A Defense of Anarchism: A text book for foreign', Judovici indicates that he is outlining a 'solution' to the problems which democracy and socialism are really attempting to redress. A solution which Judovici believed is more fundamental and 'concurrent with the peculiarity and soliloquy of human nature, more practical, and above all more vital and full of promise for the future than anything socialism does and can bring forward.' Litho, reformers had merely tinkered with the legal system and applied corrective. Such reforms had been 'patchwork'. The need was for a scheme of life that would dispense with the necessity for any future corrective.

It is logically inconsistent to claim that man is irrevocably degenerate and yet possessing the means for his regeneration. Never- theless, logical inconsistencies never captured the vigour of Judovici. In his 'A Defense of Anarchism: A text book for foreign', this logical inconsistency arises. Judovici comments of modern Europe approaching a nadir at which it would be too late, too hopeless, too appalling to arrest the torrent of national decadence. Again, in Chapter tXII of his 'Anarchists: The women's future and future women', 'Women's future', Judovici claims that the culmination of women's total decadency over degenerate methods in that society will petrify, so it is not in women's nature to be inventive or to make great discovery, at the level of mechanical and scientific progress.
required at the moment of men's most conscious dealings. However, it is hinted that sociology may supercede on a few religious women will realize they have made a terrible and futile blunder. Indeed, in the next chapter, "Japan: Utopia", Ludovici considers there is an alternative to the dogmatism described in the previous chapter. Similarly, in his another. The want of sociology national unity, Ludovici claims England is hopelessly dogmatized, but proceeds to a "solution". He says that three terms, "instinct", "tradition", and "lender", are being obscured in the English history, which he is addressing. He suggests that the word "instinct" be dropped from the movement's vocabulary because there are no instincts in modern Englishmen which are reliable guides to conduct. Only if 500 Englishmen of the fifteenth and sixteenth centuries, when they were pure bred, could be collected together with instinct still have a meaning and the rulings of such a body have validity for Englishmen. The only rigid and uniform habituation, from which instincts were forming, are dogmatized: "Liberalism, Romanticism, and a fantastic Utopianism, based on an unavowed psychological theory of men"? Although the task of the English history was to establish the uniform conditions in England which would rear the sound instinctive equipment for correct and reliable human conduct that time had not yet come. Ludovici then questioned the validity of the term "tradition" when applied to modern England. English traditions were devoid of life and vigour and were, therefore, unsatisfactory guides for sound political action. The tradition of the Puritan, the sect, the liberal, the nonconformist, the Moravians, the tradition of the patent drug, the cocktail, the nightclub and the lipstick, promised no life. Finally, Ludovici claims that the English mystery's emphasis on leadership is also faulty. Too much emphasis on leadership denotes a decline in the dyadic force of
their inspiration. The doctrine of the movement should be their
strength, and loyalty to the cause should not be contingent upon
dedication to official leaders. 11 It is only when the people
obtained to power through their obedience to men 12 since
everybody was ranked within the tightness of dogmatism, Isidoreii
suggests that the English History's emphasis on personal leadership
be dispensed with. 12 Isidoreii comparatively asked the English History
that since England's "owe another mandate, undifferentiated
tradition nor a man or a leader on your authority, what are you to
do?" 13 So then proceeds to a "resolution" of modern dogmatism by
suggesting that on all modern values, unconscious motivation and
guidance, are no longer trustworthy, needed in thrown back on his
consciousness. He reckon psycho-analysis and science itself are
but an effort to find a conscious means of orientation and centory
in a world in which the instinctive senses have vanished. 14 Isidoreii
believed every advance of consciousness and intellect in history
had been due to an one of toulldomment when old or vitiated instincts
were no longer serviceable. There had been many such crises in
history:

...The disruption of classical antiquity was one. The downfall in Europe of north-western
Catholicism was another. While as to countries
outside Europe we know that Confucius came at
a moment of prove disorder in China when the
old feudal conditions were breaking up and the
country was seeking for a fresh orientation.
Some, too, appeared at just such a moment in
the history of his race, and no doubt supplied
much of what his intellect had gathered in Egypt
to the fresh indoctrination of his followers.\nEven in Popes, Isidoreii's doctrine came as a
reform. 15

History, therefore, warranted the belief that when instinct fail or
become corrupt, an intellectual search for the recovery of sound
values is the only available, although imperfect, remedy. 16 If truth
of a high validity is to be attained by the intellect then it must
not be a conclusion or judgement attained a patently. Individually suggest a final check which may be applied to findings reached with examples objectivity and inductive reasoning. That check in the history of the scene which flourished, made table of values, and the ultimate cause of their degeneration. The English are committed to their intellect for evolution, but must act quickly for the whole of their civilization in is flux. Thus, degeneration does not excuse inaction and despair for Individually. The case notices as occur in Individually's history. The audit of constituent nations towards regarding degeneration had occurred over twenty years before in his A Defence of Axiology, A work book for Fascism. In the latter, Individually claimed that nations, unlike individuals, can regenerate their strength and youth. Rebellion is the only means by which a subject people can rid themselves of detestable rulers whose guidance has degenerated.

Similarly, in his A Defence of Conservatism, Individually states it as his intention to reveal conservatism not only as a policy of preservation, but of discontent in change:

...Both in my objection of Conservatism in the past and in my outline of a Conservative philosophy of the future, I have argued from the standpoint that true Conservatism should proceed not only by the obstructive principle of "no change", which may at times amount to stagnation and even negativism...

No intention to reveal conservatism as the only force in the nation which in able to resist degeneration and maintain a critical attitude towards every stage by which this evil is being expressed by factors.

Individually calls the policy of no change "ostentious conservatism" and thought it neither wise nor rational for statesmen to accept or to practice conservatism in this ostentious form. Individually alleged that Edmund Burke was an ostentious conservative as he never distinguished between a desire for more change which may come from
the most valuizable elements in the nation, and the creative
innovations of the elite, the sole dynamic of national progress.
And so he does not make this distinction be naturally fails in
defining the duties of those who, in their political activities,
critical for conservation.25 If conservation is to be served it must
be elevated beyond its popular and esoteric connotations, and must
come to be regarded as merely a position of political caution.27

Conservative politicians constantly made the mistake of assuming
that if an old established institution began to reveal obvious flaws,
the fault must inevitably lie with the institution itself and not with
the non trying to run it. As the conservative is concerned with
maintaining the institutions of his country then he must be concerned
above all with the maintenance of his nation's psyche-physical
quality and be committed to whatever regenerative measures that
commitment may entail.28 Unfortunately, in England the "old"
Conservative Party was oblivious to their obligation to maintain the
psyche-physical quality of the nation if its traditional institutions
were to be conserved.

...Now, over since the dean of their existence, back
in the 17th century, they have not only constantly
neglected this task, but have also aggravated their
difficulties by not even caring about the psyche-
physical quality of the men and women of their own
persuasion, including, of course, their ruling edifice.29

Ludovici found inspiration for the task of regeneration from his mentor,
Riccardo, whom he believed to have shown how much still lay in men's
power. He was convinced that, to the sculptor of values,
the world in an open field of yielding clay provided they have a
profound faith in the fundamental will which others had hitherto
based in God, natural law, truth, and other euphemistic fictions.30
According to Ludovici, Riccardo had realized that our aim should be
the perfection of the society and man, and that our morality and religion should be subordinated to that end.\textsuperscript{32}

Men himself had to be regenerated. The mere change of institutions could not even cope the surface of the deep source of degeneracy, according to Luedoivi.\textsuperscript{23} He thought it had been man's boasting sin, throughout history, to trace that evil before him to the institutions of society rather than to himself and his fellows.\textsuperscript{24} It is possible for institutions to outlive the quality of man.\textsuperscript{25} In typically Nietzschean vocabulary, Luedoivi declared that 'Dionyulians' stoutly deny that degeneration is inevitable. A civilization other than one present 'Dionyulians' and degenerativeness possible.\textsuperscript{26} The 'Dionyulians' would not fail 'whom the great turning point reappears again.'\textsuperscript{27} Modern mankind was too slowly evolved to encompass what would be desirable in the institutions of the future harmonious and integrated national life, when once mankind would have raised itself from its present degeneration: 'That is why the lone to destroy at present the bottom.' Men must first regenerate themselves to prepare the way for the only possible 'solution' to the world's difficulties and problems - a better generation of men. So modern mankind is too degenerate to tackle the problems that surround it satisfactorily, the reorganization of institutions would follow, not precede, the regeneration of the whole man. Then mankind would begin a new era in its evolution.

Unlike the past and present, in which man had played a game of chance with himself and his fellows, the future would be radically different as man would call his conscience in the moulding of his destiny.\textsuperscript{28} Nietzsche says of his proposal for the regeneration of man: 'It is a practical and perfectly possible solution capable of certain fulfilment.'\textsuperscript{29}

Men still possess both a potential strength and courage to rid
himself of decay, and step into the future. Addressing the English history movement in 1923 Ludovici described the genesis of their movement, in 1920, as a ‘cry of patriotism, alarmed at the insensible forces of decay and corruption which in the course of the two preceding generations had crept into England’s institutions and the very ‘nucleus and heart of her people’.

They had combined together to consider her ‘progressive degeneracy and dissolution could not be stopped. With reason seeing, according to Ludovici, the English history correctly discerned that something new was arising than merely England’s laws and institutions, and the voice of its economic condition, that it was in the living nations about them that the real degeneracy actually found its source. It became apparent to them that before anything could be attempted in the external structures of the nation, the values of the “standardised head, high and low – for all the classes are one in this respect” would have to be transformed. The English history was, according to Ludovici, a militant body that should represent a solid and determined pleasure of men, all straining for the same loyalties and attachments, to new and regenerate standards and values. They were all preparing for the time when they would be in a position to bring about radical change in England.

Ludovici demanded that the populace act “to usher in the new civilisation of health, beauty and good taste” while acknowledging formidable obstacles to the movement of regeneration, Ludovici thought they were “at bottom continental.” As England was to exert degeneracy upon its people must be prepared to make a “radical change in our outlook and the values that govern our lives.”

As early as 1923 Ludovici saw the kind of regeneration he desired...
Under these circumstances. Although he realized it was difficult for Englishmen to understand the domestic politics of foreign countries due to differences of race, national tradition and culture, especially in the case of Bolshevik Russia and fascist Italy, *5* Indovil proceeded to contradict himself. He believed Italian fascism was greater than it was represented by others to be; *6* Fascist propaganda instigated and national antipathy could not everything justify. The novelty of fascism was that it was not utopian yet practical to postpone Italy's disintegration also etc. Indovil counselled the fascist Socialists that coalition or annexation are the inevitable developments of modern civilization. Fascistmen should adopt Mussolini's statement that "Can ain in reality" so their watch word. *7* For example, nothing could be less real than Fascistmen's proof of the assertion of right to right. Whilst Fascistmen accepted any new and inconvenient right, they were too sympathetic to gather right about an old and long established right when it was being cancelled or undermined.

...It is too easily forgotten by a people accustomed to parliamentary debates, and gulled into uncomeliness by their respective offices, that in order to act with power in the political world to-day right is just as necessary as Owen's unification to negotiate with effect, force should be at hand and in a position to act, has not lost any of its validity since that famous leader of men successfully concluded his negotiations in the abortive in the year 1001.

The English conceded to it at elections, the right to strike, hold up transport, cool relations, or the food of the community. But, they shrank from it when vindicating right long established and traditional.

It is this principle of Holman's that formed part of the Fascist philosophy, which is reality. The state of Italy was unchangeable. The whole country deplored Italy's small and inadequate share in the fauna of victory and began openly to attack the war party, the Government, and
the new positions. The formidable state of the C.C.C. under the
Socialist Party were transcendant in their nature and more arrogant
in their ultimate. When the people transport and postal services,
industry and agriculture, were disrupted, the Italian cavaliere, like
the English, prepared to acquiesce in occupation. However, Mussolini
and his followers were less romantic and fatalistic. They realized
the socialists and communists were obtaining over greater rights,
because they were gaining over greater right. Viewing this
situation in the socialist or "realistic spirit" they concluded that
the only chance of making opposing rights prevail was not by tolerating
their implantable opposition:

...it was to fling across the whole front of the
unemployment and Socialist forces another card
if possible, a superior form of might. Here, recall -
they say with the clarity of Bolsehveys that this
might must not merely consist of a strong party
with a voice, it must consist of a strong party
with a weapon, ready to return violence for
violence, blow for blow. And what was the result?
everywhere, almost, the Bolshevik vindicated their
right.

The strength of the Fascists and their movement, was their speedy
recognition of the realities behind the situation of post-war Italy.
Ludovico believed the distinctive contribution of Italian fascism to
modern politics was its realism. And provided Italian fascism
retained this ideal it could not fail to flourish. Though Englishmen
could not learn anything from Fascist methods, because national
character are too dissimilar, or from their program, because
national problems are too different, from Mussolini's first principle.
"Our aim is reality."
Ludovico thought they had a tremendous deal
to learn:

...For if the political life of England today is both
flexible and consistent everywhere except in the very
quarters that are struggling for the overthrow of the
existing order, it is precisely because there are no
more principles urgently needed by modern Englishmen
from the outset of reality, that insight of reality,
that suspicion of clap-trap and romantic ideals,
and, above all, that forward momentum, which... for the basis and soul of the national movement... (note above) 

(Note above) that Laudovici believed in the importance of action, in the sense of national regeneration. Gerald Bryanstorm, in Laudovici's novel of 1919, Catherine Dayle, the heroine of a national-minded lady, is informed that the hero, James Gordon, a scholarly metaphysician, advocated a sense of "neomedal" and yet failed to grasp "the very first principle of his teaching" - by his inactions. However, no one later informed that James Gordon did, indeed, realize the first principle of his teaching. Gerald Bryanstorm recounts that James Gordon had invited him alone, among his friends, to his readings to Catherine Dayle, a ten girl, because he thought Bryanstorm appreciated that actions are everywhere... 

"You need to be the exception who realized that nothing can ever matter, and that actions are everything. This is a fundamental idea which I cannot I did not believe you were wise enough to act upon, but when I saw that you did not act upon it, I knew your worth." 

Similarly, when Gerald Bryanstorm had visited James Gordon at his death bed, the latter had said that he could not see justification in his life, its only justification lay in his actions. However, the invocation of action is rather a general characteristic of Laudovici's writings. The urge of action and movement is evoked throughout his writings and cannot be found confined to a section of his works. Nevertheless, Laudovici did on occasion make the need for action more than just an offshoot of his writings and made explicit recognition of its primacy. He said, addressing the English history in 1915, that until they had succeeded in completely changing the unconverted populace any distinction between the deliberative and active side..."
of their research on the burdens of preserving the new doctrine
and maintaining and revised. Even when the time came to illustrate
the ideology of the English history into national institutions and
customs, the distinction between the Individuals and active functions
of their movements would be protected because it is impossible to
separate thought from action, and creative cannot therefore been
diverse as cut off from thought.\textsuperscript{62}

Then, an Individual believed there were no applications to England's
organization that chapter will describe the proposal for organization
to represent England. I shall introduce this with a discussion of
Indovolo's principle for collective brooding.

\textbf{Introduction}

\textit{Raison, Religi, and Discipline - the Principles of Collective Brooding}

The premises of Indovolo's scheme of collective brooding in the
awful of humans. In the \textit{A Collage of Ancestorry}, a text book for
writing, Indovolo says that will, conscience and spiritual strength,
are impossible without those institutes being established through a
long line of ancestors practicing disciplined brooding leading to
bodily symmetry. Indovolo's denial of human was consistent with
the ideals of his mentor, Blomme.\textsuperscript{63} The Blommeon Dr. Holletto,
in France Holletto, believed that there a body in beautiful the soul
can look after itself, and represented the modern academy to use red
to find desirable ends in soul, nestled or ugly bodies.\textsuperscript{64} Later in the
novel, when Michael Holletto had to choose between his Constitutional
follies (Damon Holletto, and Michael Holletto), to resemble his father,
a vision that the choice in one of them, the living Damon, of Cloth
... the old Hittite belief that it is possible to have a beautiful soul, a beautiful character, and a beautiful mind in an ugly body with evil-calling breath, will have to be recognized for what it is - that is, merely a mode for the comfort of repulsive people.

Likewise, the visible aspects of a person and the peculiar note he strikes into mind or soul, when the "breath of life" passes through it, are indispensable and interdependent. Any modification of his form leads to a corresponding change in his mind or soul. Indeed, it was believed that our vital functions are neither more nor less than animal. But, like animals, adapt to their environment. The Jews are a 'desert people' who have evolved, physically and mentally, to different environmental conditions to those of the Hittites. Before a good initial endowment can be the possession of all, no man must recover the neoastic beliefs which existed in pre-Neosastic times. Owing to the quite indistinguishable equivalents that for almost two millennia had been laid upon the 'soul' of human beings, there had been a corresponding tendency, strengthening with the residence of Christian civilization, to neglect the purely animal side of our nature, the mechanism of bodily movement and their control, above all, the optical sensation of bodily organs required for smooth, uneventful and
Individuals acknowledged that racism had been established in Nazi Germany to encourage the policies of selective breeding and sterilization. As continued sterilization, industrialization, and genocidal extremities began to prevail with the spread of Nazism, it led to the neglect of the body and favored the multiplication of biologically inferior human beings. They and those did not breed the superior, intelligent and neat native races of the majority they could not, therefore, cultivate a superior race to eradicate of human debility. Apart from the degenerative congregations and environments open to the term-traited, by withdrawing the term being from the everyday contact to be instated by mtatwary cultivated plants and animals grew, and observing the conditions essential to their prosperity term life required a tenetistic or asceticistic attitude to life which of itself, constitution mental, man-made. Industrialization intensified the worst influence of sterilization. The factory can be served by "types" which could not have the obedience or discipline for heavy work. Industrialization exerted a sense of physically deteriorated individuals, already removed from the instinctive condition of life by their urban habits, and a type of character that is passive and servile. Deteriorative pressure which had made sterilization and industrialization possible, had conditioned modern men to underestimate and neglect bodily standards. Indiostinfeld thought that one of Adolf Hitler's most significant acts was the organization of National Labor in "Nazi Germany." Indeed, his control on extremities and industrialization would have been effective but he failed to attract the volume mood on National teaching which enabled both to flourish. The sound in health and mind were the beaconed of the German nation by such Nazi laws as that of July 16, 1933, to prevent
the Criminalization of Hereditary Disease. By means of this law it became possible through sterilization, to prevent men and women suffering from certain hereditary diseases by preventing them from having progeny. A further measure, known as the law to protect the Hereditary Health of the German People, of October 10, 1933, provided for the removal of marriage candidates to all applicants who failed to reach certain standards of health.

The twelfth paragraph of the law for the Protection of Unemployment of June 4, 1933, provided that all young couples who decided to marry and who had not the means to do so, could obtain from the Government help to set up a home. However, loans were only granted under particular conditions:

The partners to the marriage contract were required to be of German blood, hereditarily sound, and free from any disease, infection or infirmity which would make their parvisage incomparable with the public interest.

From the Health Record Books of the Hitler SS to the high-pitched collection of the G.S., Ludovico thought the Nazi Government had insinuated eugenics to enhance and preserve the soul in mind and body.

It is significant that Ludovico was attracted to the realistic beliefs that Nazi Germany propagated, by his advocacy of Haeckelism. He believed that Haeckelism was identical with much that was advocated and executed by the German National Socialists. He thought a good deal of the common ground between them was indicated by the teachings of Darwin which were inescapable in the two leading Churches of the Third Reich. Alfred Rosenberg's On Ethical and Social Foundations, of 1930, should be understood so as no more than a continued advocacy of Nietzsche's leading eugenic and pro-social values. Nietzsche had cut off a completely branch with the past. Freedom was to a great extent conditioned then enforced. But, Aristotle made a very serious
and determined effort to revive it by evincing the extreme
consequences of theocratic doctrine. Anti-atheistic was essentially the
status of the developed Church and of theocratic system,
which SOCIALIZED and BC. Real were the failures of putative
Christianity. The reaction was a revulsion to putative
Christianity. To Luther, Anti-atheistic was "fanatically opposed to
giving grace and consequently to God." Protestantism was a
return to putative Christianity and Catholicism. Then, Catholicism
which in one of its aspects was an attempt to restore pre-theocratic
values, is sympathetic to Anti-atheistic. And, if contrary Catholicism
was an attempt to accuse a theocratic teaching; this was not because such a
teaching was traditional in the Church, but because in its emphasis
with Protestantism "it has inevitably been influenced by the
opposite' tendency, just as English Conservatism has through the
decades of Tory politics become infected with Fascism." Eduard
thought that although we were entitled to infer from the protest
of the Evangelical Church in Germany, and even from the Holy Catholic
Church there, that the influence of National Socialism of both
legends and Mecklenburg was for teaching and professed, it did not follow
that the National Socialists were on that account always unit
Christianism. Eduard reckoned that all the protests of Evangelicalism
and Catholicism meant we that National Socialism approved a
Christianity averted of theocratic incursion and liberated from the
pronounced influence of the Jews' early history.

...I submit, the frequent coupling of the names
of legends and Mecklenburg by those leading members
of the National Socialist Party who are
responsible for the outlook and conduct of
national Germanism, and hence, too, the consistency
of Mecklenburg and Evangelical influence on
National Socialist with an attitude still
friendly to Christianity, although perhaps,
it would be unwise yet to hope that the
Evangelical Church of Germany would be able to
take the attitude previously in their rights."
According to Hiotsocho, the history of mankind falls into two
halves - the period preceding Socrates, during which the public
estimate of a man always valued a man according to his biological
worth, and the period following Socrates, during which the public
estimate of a man always tended to neglect or ignore his
biological worth. Hiotsocho, and the National Socialists
advocated a return to pre-Socratic values, which, by being
concentrated on biological worth, would exact and eliminate
dogmatism:

...it seems fairly obvious that there must be a
strong Nietzschean influence in National Socialism,
if only because of the powerful breath of pre-
Socratic Hellenism which has prevailed in Germany
over since the 5th B.C. period, which ended the reign of
government.92

Indeed, Lasovici believed certain passages from Nietzsche could well
have served as the outline of the National-Socialist program.93
He thought the best 'proof' that Nietzsche's inspiration was
operating in the Third Reich was the humanitarian conception of
pity, as a passion felt when the sound and valuable plant in danger
of being sacrificed to the unclean and worthless plant, replacing
the urbanite's sentimental and unreasoning pity which is felt only
for morbid or abnormal existences and is prepared to succumb the
latter irrespective of the cost to the sound, which the Third Reich
had transformed:

"A medical certificate is a condition of
any marriage" said Nietzsche, "endorsed by the
medical authorities, in which a series of questions
addressed to the parties and the medical officer
must be answered (family history)." and he made
this demand for the marriages of the future.

This has already been realised legislatively,
... in modern Germany.94

In his A Politics of Aristocracy, A text book for Tories, Lasovici
discusses his proposals for creating an elite through selective
breeding. To urge the reproductive process would inevitably tend to decline through inbreeding, when the will is driven up to its maximum of organizing power, and thevery degree of energy the body possesses can be given a purpose within the individual himself and not outside himself in the form of an efficient of himself.\textsuperscript{25} Indecisive then proceeds to examine the ways in which this sterility may be avoided through judicious mixture. Although cross breeding to rejuvenate stock destroys character, this may only be temporary if the conflict is not too great.\textsuperscript{26} Thus, an occasional croso, only consummated with a people whose will and virtues have a direction not too extremely hostile to their own, may prove the salvation of a too highly inbred race.\textsuperscript{27} In all the nations of antiquity, whether originally pure or mixed, after passing through a period of inbreeding sufficiently prolonged to have arrived at a homogeneous working adjustment of their instincts there obtained an instinctive prejudice against the foreigner. "In conclusion that Caucasus drawn in his book, "Histories den pracete Practice, which I have sufficiently quoted.\textsuperscript{30} Once ensnared and the development of a distinct culture create a sharp distinction between a race and its neighbours, further distinctions within a race are bound to occur, owing to the long practice of particular virtues on the part of the different strata of a race which were originally created by a bodily differentiation.\textsuperscript{39} Lavallos advocated incest. The leader, conscious of his possessions in instinct, will, virtue, and beauty, is "intuitively disinclined" to marry someone who is not his like: "If he can, he will, as far as possible, marry within his family."\textsuperscript{100}

Through Conservative propaganda and patronage collective breeding should be rendered popular.\textsuperscript{101} Once the signs of human docilisibility were more evenly understood, through the expression of "honest taste" a great and remarkable change could be effected.\textsuperscript{102} In his A Cadence
of Conservation, Lodovici says conservation is desirable because it is only in a stable environment that the slow work of heredity can build up family qualities, group virtues, national character, and social characteristics. It was in islands like Crete, Japan, and Britain, in peninsulas like Greece and Italy, and in naturally or artificially enclosed areas like Mesopotamia, China and Peru, that great peoples and great cultures have tended to arise, partly because of the greatest ability of environment that can be secured in such territories. The formation of an ethnic whole out of a confusion or mixture of races requires just such an environment as those countries were able to provide for many centuries:

...Constant change, and interference from strangers, are prevented by natural or artificial barriers, while the habituation to similar circumstances, which is usually accompanied by an absence of mixed breeding with foreigners, accords precisely the requisite conditions for the formation of an original and powerful national outlook and temperament.

Above all, these conditions create a strong tendency towards conservation in the people who suffer their influence. Lodovici believed the English were the most conservative people in Europe because they had been least debauched by miscegenation. It was impossible to conserve the identity of the English nation if Jews were allowed to modify its institutions and blood:

...True Conservatives, therefore, should always show themselves firmly hostile to (a) the principle of Jewish emancipation, which enables the Jew ultimately to influence our national politics and our culture; and (b) to any encouragement of a mingling of the two peoples, Jews and English, through marriage.

England's character, culture and institutions, could not be conserved except by conserving its ethnic type. Medieval England was truly conservative in its attitude to the Jews by never encouraging them to settle, and in 1290, altogether expelling them. By excluding the foreigner conservatives would be acting in accord with the true
and original dictators of their creed. It was the faction who
took the lead in the anti-clcan demonstration that occurred in
the reign of William II, and on the question of compensation,
showed themselves the national party in the early days of their
history.\textsuperscript{99} The necessity of facing and dealing with the problem
of degeneration falls naturally within the province of conservatism,
because conservatives are primarily concerned with the preservation
of the nation's identity.\textsuperscript{100} As the multiplication of thoroughly
undesirable human material exacts the life of the sound and
desirable, conservatives are concerned with its effects on the
future of the English race and ultimately of the Empire. Public
attention should be solicited and drawn to the possibility and
urgent necessity of approaching the English population 'problem'
from the qualitative standpoint. Conservative measure should aim at
reducing and eliminating degenerate and undesirable stocks, and should
protect existing sound and normal stocks from the chance of pollution
and deterioration through misalliances and contact with decadent or
polluted elements in the populations.

At first these cases might be dealt with
which, while they are not acute enough to find
their way into asylums and homes, nevertheless
constitute a threat to the race if allowed to
multiply; and it might even be necessary to
increasing for one or two generations the expenditure
on public assistance, in order to isolate and
aggregate larger numbers of people certified to be
half-witted or tainted with some kind of hereditary
element, either of the criminal, casual or general
classification which would make the propagation of
their kind undesirable.\textsuperscript{111}

Kadovici regretted that the inter-war Conservatives contradicted and
denigrated everything the Third Reich affirmed. With a view to
conserving the identity of the German people, the inter-marriage of
men and women of German stock with people of Oriental, African and
European blood, was not only firmly discouraged by the National
Socialism, but the partisans to such undertakings also incurred various social dislikes and forfeited many privileges. Yet, Conservatives in England discovered such nonconformity

Unfortunately for England, this cannot of Nazi logicians be to be just on whole easily disregarded and excised as the root, especially on a large and most influential section of the population in Nancy School, regarded it with particular horror.172

Ibsen's ideal of selective breeding with Nietzsche's views, be thought, with Coburn, believed in these principles which are strictly maintained by breeders of cattle throughout the world.173 He thought one of the worst consequences of social Darwinism was the disturbance of a tendency, natural among men, to conserve and intensify certain aptitudes, certain native talents in a family line by means of the steady pursuit through generations of 'blood occupations.'174 Indiscriminately concluding between the contest, each of which had its particular occupation, was beneficial to the ancient Hindoo, Persianian, Egyptian, and others: "The Suelo of the Middle Ages, too, I have no doubt, fostered alike reverence for blood occupations."175 However, breeding between classes should not be completely prohibited, according to Ibsen's. In Ibsen's novel of 1919, Catharine Boyd, the princess of a thrice-married lady, Gerald Symonds recounts to Krasilov that James Gordon, Egyptologist, married the vital tea-girl, Catharine Boyd, to conserve his mind in a more robust body.176

The vital Cleopatra Coleroyce, in The Old Curiosity, built up her vision of her ideal man, not with the help of the savagish and morbid fancy of the romantic idealist, but guided only by the hints of an exceptionally healthy body. It was to her a fine need that her mate should have "vigo" and vitality.177

172. "The Henry St. House of
the hero, Lord Harry Highmore, did have that vitality and warmth 
of blood, without which "the highest breeding is in the extinction of 
the animal at the expense of the man". Ludovici tells us that 
Lord High, the hero of *That Upon a Lying*, like Miccolli, denied 
people's right to the title of countertenor, whatever their ancestors 
might have been, if they themselves were no longer examples of the 
superiority of the "animal man". His son, Lord Giddingly, had 
marricd in 1917 and forgotten one child: However, Lord and Lady 
Giddingly had not married through 'love', as they knew of the 
disastrous consequences of marriages consummated by 'love'.

Ludovici's novel of 1922, *The Goddess that Grew Up*, is an elaboration 
of his ideal of incestuous mating. Circumstances had choked in 
Peter Oliver, the full and natural expression of marital devotion. 
The ill-health of his wife, Eudal, had blighted his married life. As 
he was a law-abiding man, the emotions which else would have found 
their vent in the experiences of adult passion had turned 
preternatural force in the inevitable direction of his daughter, 
Basilia. Even as a maturing schoolgirl, though Basilia Oliver was 
not a shining light of learning and industry, as a personality, as 
the example of a "desirable kind of life", and for comeliness and 
grace, she assumed a natural lead. She was attracted to the vital 
Roger Gamble, whose young eyes were already lambent with 'fire'. He 
promised life, but Peter Oliver terminated the relationship. Peter 
Oliver observed the unmistakable signs of oncoming womanhood in his 
daughter. They filled him with fear and announced to his a term to 
his life. Later in the novel, Basilia is powerfully attracted to 
the vigorous and elemental Mr. Cyril Bashfield Streeter:

...True, he was not the type that she had seen 
when on the motor tour with her father in France; 
he had not the inner fire, the red hot internal 
warmth. But it was precisely this deficiency

356
That constituted his chief scrupulosity, for he
influenced without bawd, he broached coldly, and
cultivation followed.\textsuperscript{129}

Peter Oliver doted on Mr. Evelyn Northfield's permission to
marry his daughter. His deep objection to his daughter was
accompanied by his own jealous love of his daughter and by his
instinctive feeling that once married to Mr. Northfield, Evelin,
after having found in her instead a new spirit the equal of her
father in intellect and character, would be no such bent to him as
if he were dead. Her marriage to a man of Northfield's gifts would
finally destroy his leading part in her life. Consequently, he
consented to drive his daughter into a union with Helen Booth-Martin,
which would nevertheless leave her father in the same position he
had always held and which was now "more to him than his life.\" Hence
his prodigality for the inarticulate, ill-convinced, and
unappreciating one of the Booth-Martins.\textsuperscript{126} Peter Oliver gave
Mr. Northfield an unused want in a riding exercise which leads to his
death. He hoped his daughter would never be attracted to another
secret, as Mr. Northfield would provide her with a standard that would
always be to the disadvantage of future lovers. But, this did not
attract the Mr. Track. "Life is even powerful than money and standard,\" and
the very probability of Evelin's grieve over the last affair was
consistent proof of the vigour of her passion.\textsuperscript{127} Mr. Track's
promiscuity in constant. Evelin became attracted to an officer at a
local P.O.W. camp. The officer had a tall and lithe martial figure;
his eyes alone with "fire" seem under the park of his field cap;
whilst the fluid mobility of his moustachio seemed "not only a proof but
a prelude of life.\textsuperscript{128} Despite his cultivation his comrades were still
primitive; and the dominent way he treated other men, particularly
inferior, uplifted Evelin.\textsuperscript{129} The mysterious officer is subsequently
identified as Evelin's childhood master, Major Larcher. For affection
In Deloria's novel of 1823, "Sarah Baring," Dr. Nathan Bigglydyke's private secretory, Cathy Urquhart, is engaged to the Dynamic brother, Enoch. Cathy Urquhart was the infatuation of Dynamic Bigglydyke in vigor and general health. Enoch condemned the sexual aspect of the match and anything that prevented Cathy Urquhart from marrying Dynamic Bigglydyke must be right and something to applied under the same principle. The Thomas Brandtwoo attempted to persuade Andre to London, the home to consummate his engagement to Mildred Night and marry Dynamic Bigglydyke, to promote Mildred. To Andre in London, the Thomas Brandtwoo had been a providential discovery in the wilderness of romance that composed modern England. Eventually, Andre does consume Mildred Night and becomes engaged to the vital Dynamic Bigglydyke. Andre was "electrified" by Brant's intense conversion to the exord of life. Dr. Bering, in "The Tabia of Tom Juran," concludes his protégé, Gilbert Hillburn, that as a general rule in life, it is more important to be "normal" than to choose one's mate with discretion.
According to Ludovici, in the midst of the positive values the
legitimacy should be maintained in the volume of positive life. 157
The future is to the race which is most severely tested. 158

Incestuous inbreeding is one of the most potent causes of racial

genuf

It is certainly true that if the conventions
and laws against inbreeding and incest were relaxed
throughout, hundreds of thousands would be wiped out
in two or three generations (through the defective
"inbreeding" unmasking the various terms), but
those that survived would be magnificent exceptions
from which we might hope to reap a suspended
penalty and degeneration, instead of it in the
product of miscegenation, would have been largely
abated. 150

The results of inbreeding would soon make themselves felt, and a

degenerate method would have led by these stocks which had successfully
survived a long discipline in inbreeding. 149 All degenerate would,
in due course, be deprived of their liberty to reproduce. 140 Ludovici
thought "aggressive means" to enforce family limitations on
degenerate parents would be a laudable accomplishment. 141 He advocated
legislative penalties for segregating, or otherwise enforcing infertility
on these he deemed undeniable. 142 If the law did not prevent the
violent elimination of all these degenerate, criminal, and
abnormal, then a few brave and "wise" fathers should lead
the way, for the law to follow. 144 The science of human points must
be brought up to the level of which animal ornithologists have brought
the points of hounds, cattle, dogs, and other animals.

...Ultimately this science must far surpass the
degree of perfection at which it is now found in
animal ornithology. And all those who know
so little about the interdependence of physical
and physiological qualities as to reject with the
stoutness that "horses cannot be dealt
with on the lines of a stud farm" should be
invited to study the subject a little more
clearly, and above all to study the records
of the world's greatest men with less parti pris
than hitherto. 145
indicted that the role of Christianity should only be enshrined by a Doctor's profession, and that it should be made a capital offence to pass them as.

The attributes of the qualities of the English to that understanding, the original inhabitants of England, "Englishmen", were first described by Agesa Goldo, who were a slave-descended, yellow-skinned and bronzed people. As was their natural want of pure blood, mixed Goldenblacks and pure Englishmen, that are usually designated as "Goldo" from opposed to the Goldo Gold, who were to England several centuries later. The Roman occupation, which was little more than a military garrisoning of the country, left little impression on this element of two races. Indications of the Logicianism in Britain was Callo, Spanish, Greeks, or Lat. Butch, that in, themselves a mixture of Drachmen and Goldo elements.

Neither did the notion of civilization after that of the Slavic after England's etiological composition. The Drachmen, Greekblacks, Drachmen, Romans, and Romans, were all Agesa Goldo. Thus, rather than being the outcome of many years of residence, the English were at root a blend of Englishmen and Goldo. Throughout the Middle Ages and up to 600s time they interbred and became a homogeneous type.

Interactions exist and isolate health and loathsome qualities, just as it isolates and communicates ill-health and loathsome qualities, cause breeding occurs and spread ill-health and loathsome qualities, and thus contaminate loathsome bodies. Antiquity in the root of moral achievement:

[...]

360
MuVwiG.\^o fisot doto&Xcfi pEOG^r^yj £*os? ocCootivo huBoia b^oodin^ to Jtouafl i& Mo £kp3^A®P.J#L '.y^J^P a
W2% vMob ho MoaMobo 1fto aaeMao;^ &a mS&gai'tsr oafi tho KlddSo ilgorj £©a?
PTcaE/ii3{3 caoo cnaci «laoo psc^ileoo &a <Tuo u&o&o pojyalatieno miou i^o'v-ciuocl grceroo v;ooylo fsxi ^OOfc&a^ ftoMtivo&y' to a i£cabo2? of a

\[\text{...just as in nature, natural selection}
\text{oblivions individuals which are the outcome}
\text{of the called nature bearing constant in
accomplishment unless, as the wise become,}
\text{the knowledge that way, essentially could not
oblige any operated and continue on his understanding
with constant collection.}\]

For, like the other animals, has an instinct compelling him to
equalize acquired qualities and the natural law is not to have excess,
as Bacon believed, but to avoid them.\footnote{152} Individual referred to the
convolution of qualities, amongst other qualities, to support his
belief that least in perspective of synchronism.\footnote{155} Everything that
can be said on the cause of division, conflict, and on innumerable
physico-physical aspects against the nature of distinctions
apply to even greater force to the mixing of races as the higher
race is considered.\footnote{154} Due to the independent features of badly
parts the offspring of different parents may display all kinds of
diseases - too small or \textbf{too long a livers for the size of the}
other abnormal viscera and \textbf{the like}.\footnote{155} If the dogmatists cannot
be compelled not to heed, they should at least be encouraged or
compelled to worry their \textbf{like} as with everybody;
Huxley advocated the application of the policy of eugenics extending to every individual. A man and woman should keep their marital acts before marrying themselves; people should be compelled by law to reveal to each to the state of their family history and be medically examined before marriage.\(^7\)\(^8\)\(^9\)\(^10\)\(^11\) Huxley thought that if society had demonstrated that we had a policy in the application of eugenics, the ideal was to prescribe legal restrictions, or rather moral instruction and penalties, a compulsory preliminary step to marriage.\(^12\)\(^13\) The introduction of compulsory medical certification before marriage would precede. The establishment of compulsory marriage as a sanitary practice, and the necessity of infanticide on account of in the case of biological infecundity. Provided the English were compelled to adhere to these principles through discipline, their children would be completely geared to social practice in a few generations.\(^14\)\(^15\)\(^16\) So to disclose and to resolve conflicts were metabolized, the better it would be for the nation. An optimal uniform for men and women would train the human eye to discern critically the different characters of the heterosexual girls and boys, and lead to their propagation.\(^17\)\(^18\) The ideal uniforms for both men and women would be the blouses and skirts.

The ideal blouse existed for men, therefore, there can be little doubt, would seem to be the ideal of our other convenient modification of the following rules found at the home or schools, which the notion of ancient civilization were wise enough to follow. Since however, in our neighborhood and vicinity, the leading to have a people who have wholly adopted a new blouse pattern for men, why on earth so should not create there, if so difficult to have, fortunately at last in necessary to have.

Notwithstanding (present) for the same and women choose to go into fashion, come one scramble with to women's things for their purposes, ugly though it be, so certainly much more seldom than among it cannot injure there, and it is admirably calculated not to discriminate their private developments.
Jaukovlev advocated the abandonment of collective breeding by the
Government. 163 Gheorghe Groza's regime had, sooner or later,
been forced upon by modern society to take this course, if devoted to
cooperation with intellectuals, not as a chance to the upper classes prevailing then. 164

As we in his The Great of Human Liberty. But to turn fortunes of
1992, the Jaukovlev sect vehemently rejected the case for collective
breeding. Only could the IX. Pulp was too to demonstrate how one phase
of 'flourishing life', an elite able to order their own and their
followers' lives in accordance with the conditions for a flourishing
community, any sera to be. 165 His thesis rested on the claim that a
ruining elite is only possible when collective breeding has long
prevailed. 166 In a natural state, where no artificial aids to
subnormal functioning are available, optimal functioning was the
necessary condition of viability. Since deterministic organisms, those
presuming a universe of independently inherited parts from disparate
parents could not function with the efficiency of the more harmoniously
proportional, they tended to be ultimately eliminated owing to their
inferior viability. Under the stress of rigorous conditions, allowing
of no subnormal deviations from the standard, we should expect,
according to Jaukovlev, among primitive communities, a redefined
way to be produced by generations of combination to the best adapted
constitutions, through the influence of segregation and inbreeding.
It is the foregoing conditions which provided us with the
requisite conditions for creating an elite. 167 Jaukovlev thought the
native principle implied by the word 'race' turned, not on purity of
descend from one of the primary divisions of mankind but on the
existence of inheriting bodily parts from disparate parents, which
can be reached only when morphological uniformity has been achieved
by a stock. 168 The two fundamental rules for the notion that is
to produce an elite race, strictly, that by means of segregation,
inbreeding, wishful selection, and the general psycho-physical
attributionalization to which they lead, the undeniable effects of
the independent invention of locally potent race diferentiation
must be rendered less noticeable, namely, the separations and advances
which result from random breeding between diferent types, strains
and species, and the degeneracy which such advances involve, must
be prevented only by breeding from uniform stocks. 169 Indévided
especially previous convictions like that of Cobban, stoutly
accepted by Lord Coldharbour, Lord Acton, Giffarie, W. and others, led these latter
treatment of the question of race and their exaggerated claims about
the race each happened to cultivate. To thought that to advance any
advancement in race or race is to improve the superiority of the 'ideal dolichocephaline Aryan,' or 'Hindú' or 'Touton' we
sustained by our inclusion and inbreeding can develop long enough,
even a heterosexual people like those of present day Britain, could
become a race. 170 However, Indévided believed that to claim that
there was no qualitative diference between the race of man can even
more cleared than to select the Aryans, the Hindús, or the Touts as
the leading race. 171 Some races, or mixtures of races, which had been
responsible for the highest civilizations, must have had exceptional
advantages from the outset. 172 Every race has its 'culture potential,'
beyond which it cannot go, unless it becomes mated with a race of
higher cultural potentiality than its own, a position of Indévided's
that he admitted was implied by Cobban. 173 There, if selective
breeding is to lead to an elite capable of founding, developing, and
leading a high cultural existence, it must be observed by a race, or
a mixture of races, already highly endowed before the period of
aggregation and interbreeding begins. But, these cultures of outstanding
worth have been created the following three conditions, according to
radovlsdp had originally or "unanimously" observed
for a period or a duration of years, highly colored

...until the exception of the inhabitants of
independent healthy parts from diapasons, 
and the exception of current history of 
"misdemeanors" and (3) the connection, between 
exception and competition, of (reborn inactivity).

These did not have differences but quality of descent from ancestors
originally colored, but who descent from ancestors, mixed or unusual,
who were originally highly colored. By including that misbehavior
control for the decline of ancient civilizations "misdemeanors" like
Cimmerian, Marathon court, Olivesi standard Deep, Cimmerian standard,
Cimmerian, and the like, had themselves open to critics because they
implied that the principal item of misbehavior also in the
construction of the "psycho-sex" alleged to have been responsible for
a particular civilization. However, according to radovlsdp, the
principal item was caused by misbehavior, even with races highly colored,
and that it destroyed quality by introducing the factor of misbehavior
prevent and therefore of psychic-physiological, compulsory and conflict in
the phenomenon following the nature, until misbehavior and
failing into once one had time to restore uniformity. Radovlsdp
declined to be setting an original factor from previous misdemeanors by
indicating that the native principle in the reaction of labor quality
is not descent in an isolation line from a highly colored race, but
biological uniformity and stability, caused by long periods of
isolation and misbehavior consequent to an original mixture of highly
colored races.

Only since a people had subjected itself to collective and analogic
attitude, and eliminated all hereditary tribute from their family lines,
could it extrude an olive. Irrespective of how mixed their ethical
origins may have been, they must protect their strictly analogic
Having discussed Ippolito's advocacy of collective breeding, I shall proceed to discuss the other ideals that accompany the program of regeneration that he proposes.

1. The Role of Men and Women

In his *A Rationale of Contraception*, Ippolito argues that the education of humanity does not guarantee that every child will be the exact replica of its parents or the best combination of its parents' qualities. However, if the family is sufficiently large, humanity ensures that a favorable combination of the parents' qualities is in one child, or in several children, occurs. Similarly, in his *A Rationale of Artificially*, a text book for doctors, Ippolito argues that in order to avoid a great tradition and remove the identity of the nation, a large family, which is the healthiest and healthiest, is a necessity and duty.

Ippolito was generally praised for his devotion of women to naturally subordinated to men and fulfilling her sole vital function, reproduction, by rearing young and having large families. Indeed, Ippolito's devotion...
So called Individual's view on the stubbornness of women "Unilateral Repression" and contrary to the development by women of their own minds.

Individual thought prostitution was more conducive to general health and happiness than their lamented in perpetual silence in which they were "in the very life out of the matter of life," and if prostitution was not to be tolerated then an adequate substitute should be found for it. Individual notices that women to

ubiquitous to men and life in common with his names, Hickman, who wrote that women can only be faithful to life not necessarily categorical to man, but naturally unconditioned and those first and last in action in that of bringing robust children. Individual also elaborated Schopenhauer's valid relation. Decision that of Hickman, who had raised his voice against Schopenhauer who would keep women beards over more women and men because over more yeast. In Individual's novel of 1910, "Moral Philosophy" the Hickman Dr. Hickman tells his protege, Richard Hickman, that Individual Hickman is a healthy and vital force who instinctively desires to secure the purposes of life and its multiplication. To enable the Higher societies of nations in order "may women would feel the death of love included in the death of a lover without the life was no longer possible." In Individual's novel of 1920, "The Old Man Falling In
An reinforce with a man called the 'English Farmer', which
expressed the 'incredible' feeling of the native woman to multiply
children.

Then the woman cried and the baby, with tears rolling down her cheeks,
looked upon her, with tears streaming
down her face and finally cried quietly.

---------------------------------

The woman was dead in a hurry, with open eyelids and wide-open
eyes, chilly by the weight of her own gaze on eternity.

How did the moment start of life?
The thrill was there but held delicately
the silence and the greatest word 'life',
which inevitably occupied her mind.

The world's thoughts that came and went,
the worries that nearly her small subject,
and how long to hold and have
the entertaining truths at least,

But still the cold upon the plains,
and in the other where the sun,
with every feature day against
the young live bodies, too old for bodies.

The, with Dekhoma, the widow of a wealthy farmer, made it clear to
her daughter, Jemima, and Crompton, that they could only partake of
some of her wealth if they married. It was understood that if she
owed and her daughter remained unmarried they would inherit none of
her wealth. She retained the same right in England of different
upheavals growing progressively normal on which food for
potential restoration.

Lord Henry Bigelow, the lord, prevailed to
Miss. Dekhoma that "physical and spiritual health in England
without a normal control must", to
fix for men's and a woman's object
Age, Lora, the vital Mrs. Osborne repeated the teaching based of the
Novus, that said ascent to her only child, Irlanda, with feelings of
resigned consent and revulsion. His natural philosophy was enough
him to reflect on how inadequately into life had been filled. He asked
...and the growing structures that into choice of who to

209 To stubbornly to oppose him Charles for life by

fighting on his daughter and always constantly submitting her to

wars. His, Enfield, so called to by Mr. and he refused to receive

the influence of how life with view of where where she was. The

old colonel, Mr. Trial, had married Stephen Forrence and

been like a child. He then rudely, rudely, refused to the

judgment minds of how can remember these things. That who also

visited the court were it was unprecedented upon her that how life, with all

the comforts and health, her name of an empty postcard, a wild parricide,

of life, then life, started.209

The German Government, in Germany, sought to dominate H Ginnyhyn's

actions that a proper relationship to a man norms a relationship in

which the man respects the man with feelings of voluntary submission.

And so do London, the how, Enfield who mutely rules. He felt able to

penetrate the man he loved immediately.209 To mutely, and with

assertion H Ginnyhyn with him ordered meekly.209 The whole of which

ordered to quiver with 1850 and giorno that Andro spoke to Benedict

the boy angry with the world that they had no effect on how magic

except to show 24.209 Andro to London had offered a memorandum

and enumeration where London H Ginnyhyn, continued how to like

...It was on all how whole body had suddenly been

eccentric into a void. From empty until shooting elastic

and shooting prognosis so if how blood had in an

elegant because a break of floating consider

certain with psychological subservience. The eccentric

throughout how vision to how very floating, existing

a floating of fantastic even in the minds of

how being and there, unnecessary to quiver the

to him empty of the form which he [Andro] had

shocked, seemed those shifts, outlying shift to

they open and projecting disintegrating notions of

cosmic the earth and contact to the whole odyssey

of how life.

She had to exert all her strength to maintain from getting to the odyssey.
of the seeming vitality within her. Never had she felt so
visited by something to the end. The child sought all evil
situation to him. The child called her to examine the woman's
Telegraphmen Times and the 'Veiled Suppression of Women.'

In the novel of 1913, The Defense of Far Jago, Walteri's experience
his context for the woman's untimely, arbitrary the last continued
despite William for causing the illegitimate pregnancy of Miss
Jane. The plots continue to remain unexplained that the illegitimate
child of the woman's untimely is explained as their own attempt to
prove themselves useful to Miss.

In his later works, from the Oning on, the complete case applies
prejudices, of 1922, indicated exactly that in the myth of Oraithos,
Dudley's part in the severe punishment turn in order to have
administered to verify for their expulsion in Orithos's theft
of Mon., to indicate of mother's transplantation. As with the
alternative terrible account of the origin of with it to live the
boys' God earth upon originally. In high myth, a upper in
intensively connected with the events which lead to the shame of a
"Golden Age", and to the advent of an era of degeneracy. Women one
in the last can no chance of exercising power. Indeed, they
have no chance capable of oppressing, the best case: women had
tried, or no taste whatever. The inability of mother's transplantation
lot for"potty power" cases with greater affection and attachment to the
example than to the well-constituted child. Thus, the women usually
left it to the father to decide which infants were to be sacrificed,
so they have of mother's transplantation. The men's transplantation
lot of taste to not fragment provided they remain under constant
control. Only, it became a social menace when women's influence can
be fully exercised the house. The worst consequence of women's lack of taste.
so that she will always tend to consort with the most undesirable kind of men, because of her lack of taste and lust of petty places, and this reduces the value of human stock. 216. Now it would seem the first lethal instance of woman's bad influence. She became an easy prey to the Devil; human greed over to the Devil. The Devil in the archetype of the 'Baalothorn man'; both Baalothorn and Baalothorn, with both of whom Baalothorn became associated, belonged to the worst results of the 215e between the Coo-Tagenca and the remote ancestors of the ancient Creta, the Azymen. Adam, too, 216. of the 'Baalothorn type', and allowed himself to be influenced by a woman, for which the Coo-Tagenca or God punished him: 217.

...And see how deeply the Coo-Tagenca, the Babylon — that is to say the men that I believe to have been the original of the god of the Jews and Christians deposed him for it.217.

An woman's lack of taste constitutes a steady pull towards degeneration she must be controlled by men. 218. Ludovici advocated the exclusion of woman from public life. He feared spinthrons would interfere with the social liberty of men to gratify their inclination for exercising power. Hence the contemporary prohibition of alcohol in America. 219.

Ludovici's ideal for the role of men and women is most eloquently portrayed in his Homo. A vindication, of 1925. His thesis is that whether we contemplate woman in the role of adultress or the stenochest of lovers, both her strengths and weaknesses are the outcome of her heat and most vital qualities. 220. Woman's destiny is etched indelibly on her body, to achieve two primary adaptations — that to the child and that to the man:

Remember as woman obviously is, up to her shoulders in the business of life and its multiplication, let it be said plainly and unequivocally: all those who teach her that any other business is her business, all those who, in face of the dilemma of seduce problem,
contemplate love with people about a true friendship every from life and its multiplications all those who belong love with reason of rightness coherence and without any doubt how truly adaptation to men end the child two lives both vanishing and existence the in each more in touch with the force of life then even live cannot live lives or enjoy life independent of men. To should recognize in women a creature highly equipped for life, and with the whole of her brain and nervous system instinctively organized for it, so that women cannot evade the correlation of her bodily parts without entertaining thoughts of suicide. Women is used to life when she in some. Women's strengths and weaknesses all serve a vital purpose. If she has virtues they will be offshoots from the reproductive instinct; her vices will be the same. For immorality, if she is capable of it, will be life's immorality, vital immorality, positive immorality. Women, being in unorganized and unmannered form of life, yields to man's social instinct which in the unconditioned and0 sterile harmony of his existence. The body expresses any manifestation of order, particularly the sexual union, while approval, then moves to be forgotten element of puberty that our body since, in spite of ourselves, in the sign that our social instinct feels gratified (his Italian). It is man's social instinct that guides him in the way he should gratify his longing for the stream of life, women, and the way he should meet the responsibilities having gratified it. He desires the approval of a man by a positive, vital, well-built girl in a certificate of potency, and healthy life ensuing in one of its essential names to multiplication. He advocated ploygamy. The wife should be understood as a hooper of the home, as a mother, and as a guardian of the home comfort. The husband should have a combination to ensure that he does not worry of his relationship to his wife. Even if a woman commits adultery she is still faithful to life and

372
moving the fundamental purpose of the race. If the female that is positive to life cannot tolerate long absence on the part of the male without endeavouring to seek fertilisation elsewhere she cannot to blame. Infantilism weakened the presence of a body of undeveloped females, or opinion, in any notion must exercise a forbid influence upon the life of that nation. The opinion does not directly flow with the main stream of life, nor do nearly a spectator.

For will it necessarily console her, or console her to her relatively unimportant into as a spectator, to point to the false, the prospect, the disappointment, the hardship, the disease and the poverty that limb the main stream of life like a fiend. If she is honest, she will tell you what everybody else feels—that she would risk all those things to be in it.

As the life of the individual female is prolonged, and the tone of the reproductive organs deteriorate through the deleterious influence of life writing, there occurs an alteration of the unconscious influence upon the positive opinion to seek a fuller life. Infantilism advocated recognizing prostitution as an indispensable public necessity. By contrast, he thought the opinion only impedes and extends the machinery that cores to life. Then voices enter commerce, industry, the civil service and the professions, they are betraying their role in life. The wealthy opinion is the extremist concept of feminism. She is a blind alley of the stream of life, where the forces that have produced her have met a dead stop. Her household expenditure, her notions, and her disbursements for humanitarian and religious objects, cannot a toll on the community, understand the fluxory or insecurity of the stream of life:

...About them in walled and enigmatically moored houses are the inhabitants of the village - small families with parents struggling to make both ends meet, with children frequently naked and underclothed, but all of them belong to the main stream of life, and constitute the only justification there is for the existence of the town and the village itself.
Lavdovil ors that from every political point of view, all of which be
embraced, whether "aristocratic, existenccie, oligarchic, democratic or
socialistic", it is impossible to justify the lives of wealthy sinatours.

They should be regarded as a dangerous and intolerable burden on the
life of the community. It should be emphasised to parents that
marriage is that they must seek for their daughters and that they must
trade them for.

Lavdovil advocated that the Government ensure that
all work outside the home should be exclusively reserved tor men,
poor married women, or middle-aged widows. Ho hoped the latter would
facilitate early marriages. Sinatours should be segregated in
isolated institutions and their activities, their opinions, and their
wealth, controlled by a policy that beneficent to the nation as a whole.

Lavdovil suggests that they are too vital to be
temporised without jeopardising the survival of the species.
The "solution" to the problem of female lay in the control of women
by men.

The only admirable solution lies in the
direction, not of changing women -- that would be
suicidal to the species -- but in limiting her
power, in controlling her influence... Women must
be modelled. Her sphere must be once again
delimited and circumscribed if her vital and
profound instincts are not, in their effort to
extend "out of bounds", to drag an steadily down
into the abyss.

Both in her strengths and weaknesses woman is entirely the creature of
vital impulses that are indispensable to the species.
not vital principle cannot be exercised without destroying her utility, so the detracting influence of her vital principle cannot be tolerated. In chapter 6, "The Virtues and Vices of Women," 250 Ludovici says in words are to be found the principal virtues that make for a continuance of the human species on earth; unreflecting constancy to the demands of life; untiring interest in the processes of life and its multiplications; a capacity for bravery in defending or securing human life; a capacity for single minded devotion to her offspring; a capacity for chastity until her affections are captured. 251 Women does not pause to deliberate when performing vital actions. If she reflected it would presuppose inaction. Only her emotional capacity is capable of directing the unreflecting forms of action that the demands of life impose upon her: "A mistress of feeling, therefore, we cannot expect her to be no perfect at reflection." 252 However, women's tastes become, like nature, indiscriminately pursue life and its multiplications at all costs. 253 If the female's lack of taste is not overridden her influence leads to the survival of a vast number of undesirable human beings. Although her lack of taste is part of the scheme of life, it tends to degeneration. 254 Thus, women must be restored to the charge of man. 255

Ludovici reckoned women should not be enfranchised because as the custodians of life, with all the strengths and weaknesses that involves, women cannot be at the same time entrusted with the ordering of life. 256 Women's nature possess strong and weaknesses which, though of incalculable value to the purposes of life, are not a dangerous element in the direction of public affairs. 257

In the fourth chapter of his "Justices in women's future and future woman," 258 Ludovici says that hitherto the
conception of monstrosity has been too limited. In addition to conscious and professed in truth, one must expect of the really real

the following attribution:

...the question of leadership, mystery over the mystery of being, and not characteristics such in those phenomena, intelligence sufficient to explain any possible basis that is. Based, however, on historical identity and tradition regarding every problem that is concerned with understanding, in fact, a man whose presence alone makes the claim of social equality a manifest and transparent absurdity. 260

He advocated a "theocentric humanism", indispensable for the salvation of modern humanity. He advocated the localization of conceptions and the withdrawal of women old enough for autonomy from industrial, commercial, and public life, and the revival of domestic industries. 263

Iudovici conceded to being abused rather than encroached in his dealings with feminists. 264 Indeed, he was for attempting to "convince us that women in an animal completely devoid of any intellectual expression and nearly endowed with the instincts requisite for the attainment of bodily necessities." 265

Iudovici believed the achievement of civilization had taken place more readily in societies organized on patriarchal principles. 266 In the course of evolution each sex had evolved instincts, emotions, and mental powers related to the kind of life that it would have to lead. 267 In his role of initiator, man develops leadership, dominance, originality, independence. In his role of passive initiator, women develop acquiescence, irresponsibility, initiative, dependence. 268 According to Iudovici, if a male is adequately equipped he will proceed to initiate and to lead in everything. 269

In his book "LightHouse" or, the case against birth-control and an alternative of 1920, Iudovici says that birth-control by leading
to the inadvertent limitation of fertility in dynasties.\textsuperscript{270} Indovici

...in both we find the same untenable idea of compulsory support of a position that does not bear a woman's constitution, the same denial of the healthy woman's right to normal functioning in sex,... the very idea of

...heavenly population, which, being only the expression of an unreal hypotheses and lack of judgment in the individual birth-controller for certain, unless his wish to bring all humanity into step with his amoral and into harmony with his other ideas,\textsuperscript{271}

Indovici recommended prolonged limitation until the child is two years old as it would prevent conception and enable the three-year interval between births to be attained, without any contraceptive practice.\textsuperscript{270} He believed the consequences to women who waited the average twelve or more years between first contraception and first pregnancy were the loss of the same strength and efficiency of

He reckoned that if the average healthy woman's reproductive life is over twenty years, and the optimum interval between births in healthy conditions is two or a half years, then a family of at least eight or ten children should be the norm.\textsuperscript{272} And, it is of the utmost importance from the standpoint of the welfare of any race or nation that heredity should be given as many chances as possible to achieve the best combination of stock qualities,\textsuperscript{273} the artificial limitation of the family by birth-control methods, enormous hordes of the boot in every generation.\textsuperscript{274} Indovici even attributed the loss of discipline in modern society and the prevalence of individualism to the small family system.\textsuperscript{275} Indovici thought limitation, which seems nothing dreadful in life or even life, into the characteristic attitude of all birth-controlers and sociologists.\textsuperscript{276}
Ludovici acknowledged that during the
reproductive changes which occur in the
ovaries and breasts of
women at every menstrual period, are not
followed by their normal
regulation, retention, penetration and
infection, closure of the breasts,
ovulation, and vascular oedema of frequent
occurrence.280 Hence, a women who
experiences these also in twenty-fifth and a
half, the average age in
England, and has her first child at twenty-six or twenty-seven in
relatively small.281 The pernicious female should be regarded as the
cabin of the joy of life; birth-controlers reviled as furthest
and doctors who advise contraception for child-birth stigmatised as
ascetic kill-joy.282 Ludovici thought that women should become more
acquainted with extra-civilization progression, and appreciate that pregnancy
is the fulfillment of their being and a more moralful termination of
a relationship than sterility.283 He reviled the law forbidding
marriage before sixteen or above.284 Abortion, with its loath
risk, should only be granted to the women who is mentally defective,
or both homosexual and potential child are "useless rubbish".285 Life and
its multiplication involved sacrifice of something. But, it should
not be of healthy mothers.286 Ludovici advocated rendering abortion
illegal.287 Adolescent girls should marry one of their father's age,
or at least over twenty-five.288 Ludovici thought women's taste for
domestic and maternal duties was innumerably more important to them
than academic knowledge, "so much more".289 He blamed the
extraordinary and sudden rise in the birth-rate in both Romanist
Italy and Nazi Germany, where difficulties had been placed in the
measuring of contraceptives, and large families encouraged.290 He
should regard higher education for women, and the practice of securing
careers for women, as a means of diminishing morally of those girls
who belong to an inferior biological class -- the congenital feminist.291
Ludovici regarded feminism as just another Liberal, British and slogan
which revealed to an examination seen cold and the loss of life, indeed, a reason to go wrong and destroy the very meaning of life for everybody."  

Futurists believed that in a country by accommodating upon an ideal of women as milie, mother and domestic mate, and its conviction that only then can women secure happiness and health, we in harmony with Nietzsche's call him an ideal. Blindness understood by forlornness and disdain towards women, necessarily what Nietzsche understood, that is, providing her with the same identity the way function normally on a notice and a wife. Futurists claimed that Nietzsche believed, so Nietzsche did, that the women of a country are what their society make their.

"To men also except women," declared Nietzsche, "and everything that women lack should be aimed for and improved in men— for men created for himself the ideal of women, and women make herself to the ideal... To must educate men better."  

Futurists reckoned that one of the principal causes of the consistently high rate of maternal morbidity and mortality, an also to the general prevalence of difficulty and pain in child-birth, was the relative thinness of the average native at her first child-birth. He regretted that the status of the fine-rating woman was low because of "sickly, pale and thinness." To advocated making women outside the home illegal for married women. In his pseudonymous novel of 1939, Erika Emmerich, Futurists idealized Mary Johnson, the domestic servant in the Raffee-Hallett's employ. She was thoroughly content in her position and "could look with her tongue the girls who flaunted their breeding and luxury before her." Good mothers and homemakers should be publicly honoured and rewarded and domestic service should be the only occupation for a woman.
...even these children, who today have the advantage of a nice parent, these circumstances would be a valuable addition to their life-experiences, for these advantages arising to the need that is the very aim they have borne, its respect should be to know the thing. It is not done.

In addition, the social evolution of natural authority, discipline and conduciveness, and the natural hierarchy, conflict with the contradictory social evolution of youth. Misrecognizing this contradiction, Inevolts reckoned that in an extroverted society ruled by values which recognize a ‘natural hierarchy’ every human being, child education should be deprecated and the child’s claim as adult attention observed. If in adult should discipline the child’s ‘pleasure principle’ with the ‘reality principle’, small families were preferred to Inevolts because they were particularly more to discipline. Inevolts demanded a tightening up of discipline in instruction and teaching. The formal prescription of values to oppose the discipline of the ‘reality principle’ to the impulse proceeding from the child’s ‘pleasure principle’, to help the child to acquire ‘reality of life in the work world’, self-discipline; discipline, and bodily punishment of children in every department of life, particularly in the home—’the child must be schooled and disciplined to adjust his life to the details of society’. Inevolts reckoned that the repressive notions of child instruction derived from Rousseau’s Emile had led to indiscipline, and should be eradicated.
Education should be an education in life. Continuation should reduce the educational system's curriculum. The minimum requirements of a normal life should be given a much more important place in the school programmes. The children of England ought to be taught their native tongue especially, because it is of value from day to day in life. The chief object of education should be security in life.

Herbert shared this correlation with Mottocho, who wrote that the student teachers "taught their inherently inevitable want for knowledge by their regard for life, by an ideal mood of life - since they wished to live immediately that which they learnt." In Herbert's novel of 1921, *That Danger Must be Full Filled*.

Herbert proposed a general nature of educational reform, according to which English was to become the leading subject in all elementary schools, at the cost of subjects which he thought most useful above children forgot as soon as they started work, and there was to be substituted a new genre teaching "in the usual principles of life." In Chapter V of *The History of a Ranch in "Education"*, "Education". Herbert crys happiness and harmony are more easily achieved by a people holding novel views concerning life than a people versed in knowledge. Only these elements of a scholastic curriculum are turned to practical use, or remembered, which came into daily use throughout life.

A working class boy retained his tuition in reading, because he practices it daily in life. Whilst the children of the poor were sufficiently in touch with life's condition to know its fundamental truths, the children of the wealthy, removed from life's condition,
thought children should be taught the 'correct' meaning of work, 
to impart to them a stock of available ideas about life and 
knowledge.

Pedeviol believed that the natural population of educated men 
would manifestly feel toward a moral and philosophical human, they would never 
hesitate to refer to our education, which has been a principle of life, the 
lack of which in education today is one of its 
principal vices.330

The need education of a little lad in a large family is more valuable 
to the individual and the more the doers of education.330

Pedeviol believed that one has only to live a short of the money; the 
learned and scholarly to be convinced that education is an accumulation 
or possession of values.330

Pedeviol believed that the intellectual object 
of education331

Pedeviol believed that the intellectual object 
of education331

Pedeviol believed that the intellectual object 
of education331

Pedeviol believed that the intellectual object 
of education331

Pedeviol believed that the intellectual object 
of education331

Pedeviol believed that the intellectual object 
of education331

Pedeviol believed that the intellectual object 
of education331

Pedeviol believed that the intellectual object 
of education331

Pedeviol believed that the intellectual object 
of education331

Pedeviol believed that the intellectual object 
of education331

Pedeviol believed that the intellectual object 
of education331

Pedeviol believed that the intellectual object 
of education331

Pedeviol believed that the intellectual object 
of education331

Pedeviol believed that the intellectual object 
of education331

Pedeviol believed that the intellectual object 
of education331

Pedeviol believed that the intellectual object 
of education331

Pedeviol believed that the intellectual object 
of education331

Pedeviol believed that the intellectual object 
of education331

Pedeviol believed that the intellectual object 
of education331

Pedeviol believed that the intellectual object 
of education331

Pedeviol believed that the intellectual object 
of education331

Pedeviol believed that the intellectual object 
of education331

Pedeviol believed that the intellectual object 
of education331

Pedeviol believed that the intellectual object 
of education331

Pedeviol believed that the intellectual object 
of education331

Pedeviol believed that the intellectual object 
of education331

Pedeviol believed that the intellectual object 
of education331

Pedeviol believed that the intellectual object 
of education331

Pedeviol believed that the intellectual object 
of education331

Pedeviol believed that the intellectual object 
of education331

Pedeviol believed that the intellectual object 
of education331

Pedeviol believed that the intellectual object 
of education331

Pedeviol believed that the intellectual object 
of education331

Pedeviol believed that the intellectual object 
of education331

Pedeviol believed that the intellectual object 
of education331

Pedeviol believed that the intellectual object 
of education331

Pedeviol believed that the intellectual object 
of education331

Pedeviol believed that the intellectual object 
of education331

Pedeviol believed that the intellectual object 
of education331

Pedeviol believed that the intellectual object 
of education331

Pedeviol believed that the intellectual object 
of education331

Pedeviol believed that the intellectual object 
of education331

Pedeviol believed that the intellectual object 
of education331

Pedeviol believed that the intellectual object 
of education331

Pedeviol believed that the intellectual object 
of education331

Pedeviol believed that the intellectual object 
of education331

Pedeviol believed that the intellectual object 
of education331

Pedeviol believed that the intellectual object 
of education331

Pedeviol believed that the intellectual object 
of education331

Pedeviol believed that the intellectual object 
of education331

Pedeviol believed that the intellectual object 
of education331

Pedeviol believed that the intellectual object 
of education331

Pedeviol believed that the intellectual object 
of education331

Pedeviol believed that the intellectual object 
of education331

Pedeviol believed that the intellectual object 
of education331

Pedeviol believed that the intellectual object 
of education331

Pedeviol believed that the intellectual object 
of education331

Pedeviol believed that the intellectual object 
of education331

Pedeviol believed that the intellectual object 
of education331

Pedeviol believed that the intellectual object 
of education331

Pedeviol believed that the intellectual object 
of education331

Pedeviol believed that the intellectual object 
of education331

Pedeviol believed that the intellectual object 
of education331

Pedeviol believed that the intellectual object 
of education331

Pedeviol believed that the intellectual object 
of education331

Pedeviol believed that the intellectual object 
of education331

Pedeviol believed that the intellectual object 
of education331

Pedeviol believed that the intellectual object 
of education331

Pedeviol believed that the intellectual object 
of education331

Pedeviol believed that the intellectual object 
of education331

Pedeviol believed that the intellectual object 
of education331
children] to a close group of society.  Because a man may not be able to pass a single examination, or hold, divide, and multiply arithmetic, it does not mean that he is ignorant. The fully trained received who are quickly some 'talents' among them, understand daily living and the beauty of daily living, till a field of corn and build and throw a stone, and not ignorant. I believed that these are only some of their answers concerning which only a few, "Life-salvation" can yield valuable lessons. 

2. The Mennonite Male

In his A Defence of Anarchism, a text book for Torics, Iadsan says of the first three chapters that they may appear to the superficial Mennonite to be contrary to the first principle of a healthy morality by laying all blame upon the actions of the governing classes to the working classes. Only, he says, at a time when the laboring classes do not fulfill their duties and perform their duties they cause them being the poorer portion of a people. They are the victims who should be reconciled...

...In the eyes of a philosopher, the sacrifice of salvation, when the intolerable condition can simply prevent, or very nearly so, is an intolerable evil. It is only when the sacrifices can lead to a social march, the benefits of which must inevitably ensue to a greater degree of healthy, knowledge, and beneficial life — it is only then that it a sacrifice of salvation can for an instant be tolerated or condoned. It is only then that the work and those trials of power if the necessity should exist, any with the clear conscience of the necessity, be left to vanish by the oncoming, or be explained for the benefit of life, the intensity and excellence of life.

All preparation for salvation in a discontent society consists in tightening the opinion of the hearts of the people. That is needed to
a declaration "arrestation of volume", for the recognition of aggressive life when it occurred. 329

Utilitarian abandoned conservatism should make a vigorous attempt to

discourage every the people of need, which would create public opinion to regard all generation of the natural and tainted as

despised and revolting. To the A doctrine of degeneration,

Utilitarian morality that if the population to the nation who are unhealthy

and postal charge of any kind before a continuation of their

suffering, there is a cruel distinction between those who suffer

because of normal conditions imposed upon them by incompetent trade

victors, and those who suffer from themselves because of their

degeneracy. 331 If conservatives meet the demands of the latter they

will penalize the whole nation and reduce its vigor and its standards. 332

He contended that up to the time of the Great Rebellion, when the

monarch was still the protector of the people, the health of the

nation and the welfare had been written of government concern. The

lesson in the Middle Ages determined largely in Europe by extenuating

which considered the loss to the greater. Conservatives, as realists,

should consider the need and healthy plant and not be considerate in

regard to those people who are a danger to the life of the rest of the

country. 333 The vast proportion of these people who existed in

hospitals, homes, resthome infirmaries, and private facilities who were

not self-supporting should not be regarded as despicable. 334 Only

should only go to the limited section of the nation that was still

whole and deserving. 335

Utilitarian was applied, by law, as prophetically describing the selected

collection of the world's internal elements of society. 336 He heralded

the postulated conclusion of degeneration in that an abiding interest to
be a Buddhist revelation. The notion of asceticism was essentially consistent with that of the monastic (Hinayana). The notion conceived that ascetics, vihara, alms-giving, and 'work' or every kind caused to a lack for the elevation of man. Molinismo adopted the position of the moral individualism. There is no absolute value 'good' and 'evil'. Concept of good and evil are mere names to an end, expedients for complicating purpose.

Hinduism teaches that nothing is possible - not even within - and even the concept good and evil. In Hindu life unto a degree, the truth. But through and activities over the activities and circumstances in which they are born within which over the surface of life, and life from on earth. Then and forever their everlasting.

Hinduism protected against reducing a moral order of things in terms of 
'The is essentially impossible'. For Hinduism, and individual, evil that becomes possible in good which all that means over unchange.

The first principle of their absolute in that the work and evil-constituted should proceed. The secondary of economy in the order, in the relative force which explains their will to evermore, to create, and 'to sleep, about, engage, play, sleep, kill, oppress, and seek revenge.' Where external circumstances of the economy are suggested as 'good' by them the notion that. Individual thought Hinduism had been mistranslated and misinterpreted as an "asceticism:"

"...The day-to-day duties of the life of individuals every a Jiva of the world. All the work is avocative for the direct, end he can find no supplement, to operations over preventing power. Study for the sake of the ethical duty-seeking, which he had to seek. Under a different 'life of eternity' asceticism and not asceticism for a metaphysical godly" (so Warren's own said) and not "systematic".

But must be translated as an ethical one to be attained. Individual holocentric moral ethics, not against the laws of Hinduism's "philosophy." Throughout human history there had been an eternal struggle between the strong and the weak, the healthy and the sick."
The concept of 'good' or the potential in the 'higher reality';
the 'good' of the work in the 'lower reality'.

Moksha or the effort to realize that the 'higher reality' which little more
attainable, were not attainable, and hence compatible in the

Moksha in the 'higher reality' is equivalent to all that mystery and
unknown.

Moksha divided life into an ascending and descending
line, and maintained that wheresoever the 'higher reality' prevailed
it steered an ascending line of life and therefore showed the
multiplication of a desirable type of way and to use equally
conditioned that wheresoever the 'higher reality' was supreme, life tended
to follow the descending line. In the Christian or 'higher reality'
described all earthly and vital virtues vanished, and pronounced to get the
life of the whole world at stake, rather than acknowledge that
definitive vitality was the prevalent one of all.

In Christian volume Moksha was nullified,
occurrence, enjoyment, and death, they were
equated to become the multiplication of the
least desirable on earth and, on earth, derived
his satisfaction and with his one desire, 'the
creation of the type new', always before him.
He continued the division reality from top to
bottom with magnificent attempt on the part of
the top, the base and the worthless, to establish
themselves in the most peaceful on earth, must be
equaled as all one kind and with terrible consequences
be exterminated up to alter one volume.

The leader, to whom Moksha extended, was obliged to redefine the
pity of the 'higher reality' and have to be 'leader' in his sympathies.

In忘了's novel of 1918, Shankara Follows the Moksha

Mr. Shankara Moksha into prose, Richard Ellision, that in his choice
between his flanneuse Chhaya Kaetana, and the vital leader Follows,
it is his duty to proceed the base, the environment, and the most beautiful
ed, on earth. It is like's design. The 'type' of woman whom
wish to see preserved and multiplication a question of those that desire
to the very roots of life, the the essence of human beings. It is a
vital, life or death, question.

The leader contained that desirable
With a preference only by a morality that aimed at opposing the
Glorienting human beings, any morality that could apply the original
phrase to any act or living thing which is not compatible with the
Glorienting human beings is not because it violates against the
conception of life but by encouraging the consciousness to violate?355
The Church itself, in magnitude, opinion to the here, Aino to
Prevents, that a value and a sensus real value to satisfy the extent
to which they guarantee human survival in a doublesex. Where we
often this guarantee have a general claim to regard, and regarding
right or even will since the same laws doublesex. Weight from the claims
to the blind, the crippled, and the physical weaker, who have no
electric unconsciousness and other only (doublesex) logs, and the bad tends
to encourage to violate.359 the Church doublesex whether the
right to opposing the morality which ensuring equality between human
beings, gives the feel of benefit the same chances of survival as the
'savoir' and fragrant.360

Janovciel believed that man could not begin to cause until the value
which makes it victimless to consider the guilt for the loss in
transmitted into the ethical value that it is victimless to sacrifice
the foolish for the prudent (his Italian).361 Anormal, crippled,
refugees, homeless, and unemployable people should be perceived as
a burden and an excess that should not be allowed to live:362 the energy,
more wealth, and more time of the community would then be directed
to the doublesex.363 Janovciel praised the Middle Ages, when English
people were chiefly agriculturists, and therefore knew the limits of
normal and controllable life. It was recognized that in times of famine
and epidemics, the normal gave birth. If sacrifice were imperative
the unearned was the victim's absence.

...the unearned in periods of famine, resulting
from epidemics would, for instance, amount to...
the classification of the lower, the medium, and the highest of the community. It is true that they often did this from the wrong motives. True as they seem to say, they abolished the distinctions between the races of the psychologically based in their minds. Here, as a result that these were caused by their desires, and these were not over to finally answerable as men would were only so used especially certainly that one of the neglected races, the classification of the human as a classification of the society, and the satisfaction of having a human who had revolutionized himself by the means of change and accuracy, that these went not considered by the men's legislation it was usually given to the insane.368

One pity should go out to the outcasts of life who tried, or who at
wound, in the form, and not to the degenerate who threatened as
further the lives of these social elements must valuable to the nation.369

Evolution regarded the activities of degeneration in infants that no
persons, which enabled us to determine those who can be expected to
generate in their psycho-physical makeup the survival of humanity in
a degenerate form, and activities of degeneration that develop in the
human and mentally deficient, affected an adequate basis on which
ignorant selection and obfuscation could readily proceed.370 To
educated individuals for all infants that did not possess to meet
psycho-physical standards consistent with the survival of the race in
a degenerate form.

... a selection of the right appeal for the necessity of
infant 1146 would 1154, as it were, an iron and from
the heads of which humanity all over the civilised
world, and instead an enormous amount of 1000 joh. 60367
vivis and innocence to the lives of millions of people.

Pity for the uneducable must enail to their better. The elimination
of feminines and social contiguity would accompany the gains of
society's human soul.378 The nobler pity use to succour the
diminishing elite and to save them from contamination and extermination
by the hands of the unwell.379 Only that life would have sanctity
which offered even generation of future worthiness to the nation.
The experience of being forced to endure the unbearable tension of other sufferers because in the process both only the individual and the
unbearable suffering by the collective burden to impose on all, produces the state of exhaustion of the malicious exhaustion. Out of pity for the sufferer, therefore, we ought to be able to obliterate entirely every individual suffering just as we do eradicate individual ones, collectively. Surely it would be the provident duty both to the sufferers and to their social contemporaries to urge measures and reforms, where possible, for the upkeep of the latter's solvency and infantilism as the cost of cessation of sufferings of persons each year, should become known for the remission of the sense, and for the better enjoyment of life by the people. These might come in action upon the 
whence the sword which
stood on yonder oolange manifestation, and there, if unnecessary, they could play known to whom the had confirmed the only benefit that the besotted one menon on the sense - unlike our dependence from the world.

The thought and motion of saving the dwindling world stock on which the fortune of the nation depended, individual thought, would neutralize the initial passion of domination at the violent elimination of degenerates.

The beauty of life and nature so that all the most vital emotions are 
'nothing' emotion. Similarly, individual said that immortality was not a proof of degeneracy. The illusion constitutive of existence would form the obliteration of England's bitter socialism. The national should always surprise his efforts and the fruits of his labour for the essence of those of our own race. It was an essential of the 
conservative sentiment to remove the identity of the nation's 
individuals and traditions. Such a sentiment was not that of the 
entailment of 'unreality' anti-capitalism according to individual. England's first concern was not these people who were in need, not Jewish or any other alien subject.


Uply on indulgence, of 1927, in which he defines religion as connected with life.

The profound and cultivated area of nature, spirit and life, where man of self in the context of healthy impulses emerging from the abundant energy and ecstasy of his being, not only refers his own self and the universe with every breath he takes, but by the intuitive knowledge he acquires of life through the intensity of his own vitality, he fuses deeply at one with everything else that lives.375

Degenerate people do not have the vitality requisite for religious experience. They misunderstand religion as Christian ethical obligations.376 What we need, according to Ludovici, was a novel religion based upon a perception of the power behind phenomena, freed from all notions of Christian ethics.377 In his Religion for Infidels, Ludovici says his intention is to outline a religion for those who cannot believe in Christianity and yet do not wish to remain content of transcendentals questions.378 He defines religion as man's relationship and attitude to the power he believes to be the author of life and the universe. Therefore, the tendency to regard religion merely as a matter of morals was tantamount to admitting an inadequate grasp of it.379 "The mind capable of holding this false [moral] view must be unable to imagine the fulness of the invisible influences at work in the world, as it were."380 The life force that Ludovici desires we live in accord with, are devoid of Christian morality. Nature gives us the mandate for those cynical actions that are performed selfishly. Flourishing life should be unencumbered. The moral duty of men in society is to promote and defend all the influences which favour superior and flourishing life, and to resist and condemn all those influences which favour decadent and degenerate human life. Everything else dictates a misunderstanding of the function of compassion - to strengthen the nation.392 This religion for infidels turns to it's own account the formative and imperatively possible of the life forces, and might be called a 'natural religion'.393

390
The child in contrast with a lethal, scorched fox "human subject" and cat, is at the very least, the violent elimination of selected lesser grade mental defectives. It is a regenerative measure that will obviate the addiction on some list.

...the evidence to show that the gentry and the lower holding society together was destroyed by the radical upstart custom of basting all-Goliad infants into the piano called Apothecary, a deep cavern near Mount Suggestor, or by the radical Roman custom of basting similarly all-Goliad infants over the side of the apothecary bed.483

Ludovico made no attempt to conceal the fact that she adopted this ethic from Moteschon.485 The only obstacle to Moteschon's "revaluation of values" was Christianity and its moral legions of the sickly, the paludal and the germinous who would fight to preserve their parasitical dominion over society, according to Ludovico.487

3. Machiavellian Realism

In his A Defense of Apolotomery, A Text Book for europe, Ludovico lamented that since the publication of Machiavelli's Prince opinion in Europe on the relation of political to private morality had been hopelessly divided.488 Hayland's achievements had been due to his acting and triumphing entirely on Machiavellian lines. Machiavellian realism means:

...in relation to internal politics, that the morals for the child cannot constrain or control the parent; and in reference to external politics, that the morals which rule the conduct of each individual member of the herd to his neighbors, cannot constrain or control the leader of the herd in his position of defense or excellent facing a hostile or strange herd.489

Political deals and promises and contracts cannot and must not be judged from the standpoint of private morality. An orderly state is one in which the "inner-hold" morality is observed by all citizens.
The single citizen cannot the practice of his morality will ultimately be required and must not be election but the foundation of the nation's virtue be undermined. Only the elite can practice the perpetual craft of politics in which secrecy, deception, and disillusionment are cultivated. Political and private morality can be incompatible.

In his *A Defense of Conservatism*, Ludovici says that the role of the conservative politician in one of realities. The conservative knows enough about the characteristics and potentialities of the people, and about the eternal characteristics of healthy mingled in general, to be able to judge whether political innovations are realistic or fantastical.

...whether they are in keeping with the eternal nature of men, or the particular character of his nation, or whether they apply only to regions, nations, races, or other romantic fictions, who alone seem to suit the predilections of hundreds of nations bred-harmed ad/or.

The conservative politician should only be concerned with securing the extension of his own nation's power to the nation in a living; their own interests and identity can only be conserved by expansion. He should be prepared to act firmly and swiftly to deal with the vital major threats to enforce change on the nation from outside.

Because the vital major can only come as the result of an extension of power on the part of another nation. The conservative must steadfastly refuse to betray his position of realism and entertain romantic ideals like fraternity and universal love. Realism alone is found to work. It alone can be trusted to maintain and preserve the identity of the nation. "It is not a matter of fancy, it is a matter of eternal law." The realist knows that there are some men whose nature inclines them to rule and others whose nature inclines them to serve.

As a political realist the conservative sounds cold and allows...
compared with the romantic. The basic belief in the natural or inherent right of every individual to political liberty, the
conservative believers, like Vincent O'Higgins

...[Dictated to me] in a circular, by the general constitution of human nature, to submit to
government, and that rule and law in a particular power designed to take care of that government on
which the free enlightened departed.

Roncino constitutes the conservative faith in politics because it is
the only belief that works, if the object is to preserve the nation.
But, in order to be realistic, a certain healthiness and necessity
of outlook and necessity, the factional and conservative, had always
been the dominion of small districts and the kings and liberals of
the towns. Position retaining the more healthy elements in the
population, the constant and attentive contact with eternal and
natural laws which agriculture enforces upon those engaged in it,
tends to rear in the rural population a more realistic attitude to
life than that which can be cultivated in towns. Therefore, when at
the time of the Grand Rebellion the first great national division
occurred on a great political issue the "Tory-Union-Agricultural
Party" found itself carried in the protection and defence of the
Brown, against the "High-urban-commercial-leading party." After
reclaiming Machiavelli as the greatest political thinker Europe had
known, in chapter VII, "Why one should be a Conservative",
Indovinelli indicates national expansion as a necessity of conservative
realism. There is no moral wrong, he says, "in the expansion of a
healthy, flourishing and cultivated people at the cost of inferior
crowds. The British Empire as a means of national expansion,
allowing for the preservation of national identity, is essentially the
creation of a conscious or 'unconscious' conservatism. To be a
conservative is to face cold realities with courage and resolution, and
to oppose overwhelming sentiments

393
Conservation represents the only realistic and ethical solution.

If England is to liberate, revolutionize, and other welfare governments,

Advanced thought it would be impossible to conserve the identity of

England if the doctrine of scientific ideas were allowed to continue.

In 1921, Unesco proclaimed in the

Valle Accident of "Democracy" of 1921. The task is to redefine
counterpart political vocabulary according to realities. In chapter II,

"Justice", Unesco says that nature is utterly novel, life is

hopelessly unjust.

Life is not concerned with justice.

The book "Justice" in meaning when applied to life.

Society endeavors to mitigate nature's harsh rule by means of preventing or

reducing unnecessary sufferings, but society cannot divorce itself

completely from life. Society is bound to act with nature and

allow nature's laws to operate with comparative freedoms in how child.

Particularly in regard to the act of procreation. In justice is

rooted in the very act of procreation, which is essentially a natural

act otherwise society would die. The child can have no choice over

whether or not it is born, or its parents, or which sex it should be.
Justice is inapplicable at the very root of life itself. This old cantonatlan of life is in urgent. It is part of the bargain which in life a necessary survival of vital and morality within a moral society. These virtues were cut even in a civilised evolution, as it was in pre-evolution, there cannot fail to appear injustice. Since in order to receive men in bond to allow under a certain form of free play in the evolution, a certain notion of injustice cannot be removed from the root ideal community. Inescorialy, the ideal of justice amounts to an attitude of hostility to life, because it is tantamount to a refusal to accept life's nature. One should accept reality.

All life's light and shade, all her effectuation, all her satisfaction to men to compete with energy and spirit in true game, depends for more than half of its charm precisely on the fact that the in man — that is to say, that she produced inequalities, contrasts and divergent types, indifferently, loveliness, without today's thought, without worry, her call to the brave, to the front of honor, and to the achievement and spirit. Those who in the midst of this great experience say out 'injustice' either misunderstand, or will fully misrepresent the whole scheme.

The inapplicable to the world of activity and reality. According to Landovici, the term 'equality' means nothing more than a mathematical abstraction because it is unreal. Life cannot be remedied, and a life-handles cannot be calculated.

Landovici's notion of realism is irrefutably expressed in his novel of 1925, {italics}French Revenu, {italics} when the hero, André de Londe, tells on the South Union of France to induce a need of realism to assist him in deciding whether to renounce his fiancée the non-vital dimwitted. Landovici describes the effects of the novel on André de Londe. Unlike anything else in the English economy, the Roman promotes in the beholder a clear and realistic attitude to life. They left nothing to individual fancy, and promoted realism.
Whom arbitrary came, which offered sensation, concluded in running
one thing and no others. They necessarily exhibit those same
"They think not their reasons and always beneath the obvious
covering of truth; often they reveal their very bones." It suggests
a closer meaning. No opportunity to left to the nebulous exercise of
imagination. He feels bound to give his own being a meaning with
such loneliness, and in tense inward. He himself must become so
plain to his own mind on the scene as plain to him: "Those extreme
loneliness invites a realistic turning up of meanings all round."
André de Boués felt the realistic influence of the novel. He knew
his own meaning and that he recede. He realistically pondered that if
childish might distill his naturelessness, his willlessness, then it was
questionable that she accepted him on a whole. Perhaps she proposed
to thinks with him all his life, until, in the end, he became a child
with a mere mentalistic vocalization. The position was a fantastic
one, and the more he contemplated the scene, the more perfectly he
realized this. It was reasonable and unrealistic to suppose that people
could alter in that way. Such was the realism induced by the
scene that this finest conclusion was turned upon André:

"...why had he selected childhood? was not also
saying to yield the child at the eleventh hour?
"...he sickness is within his hotness able to set up
him foolish, now devoted sufficiently resembles
his own conscious about her own dignity or
'stupid'; or whatever the word was for the thing
she needed him to conquer oneself into the
mutual resemblance he had just occurred...in that
he was about to do the same thing for which a
recent ago he had condemned..."
In the real-life situation, the vividness of the scene had led to an immediate attraction and immediate vividness. The outlines of their real pictures were sharp and clear. Not sharp outlines are usual in the real-life situations. In order to live and abide by the real-life situation, you must possess the "vividness". But the real-life situation was deliberately endowed with "the lucidity that is required for solutions."

The two had come, according to individual, to recognize realistically the inevitability of violence and accumulation, and realistically to accept the connection or relation in the world or the situation that should be eliminated. It was furthermore to suppose that violence and accumulation occur when the source. There are two alternatives security that may be expected as the possibility of the violence generated by the representative function of a community. Either the representative function might be transferred to the male, or the violence may be unloaded on other peoples. Individual preferred the latter as the best modality:

This is a perfectly practicable and feasible method of neutralizing violence within a community, and all great people have tried it and succeeded in practicing it. There is no reason why an inferior race again should ever come to be a source of relief.\(^2\)

Ethisoc, the operation of measures to allot the incidence or neutralize the effect of violence generated by male reproductive function had been haphazard or accidental, except in one thing.\(^3\) Individual advocated the deliberate solicitation of the incidence of the violence, the development of all suicidal "solutions" like homosexuality, birth control, contraception, and the distribution of the burden of sacrifices over inferior races abroad, and inferior human products to all classes in the nation.\(^4\) Let the first and most important step was to secure the insulation of suicide among the population,
that violence, and criminal organisation, cannot be removed from
modern life in any way that was conceivable, and that all criminal
offences which previously existed and remained among us, without the need
of possible displacement or resolution, were eliminated.432

Indeed it is stated that "Due to the noble and enduring sacrifice
of Anglo-Saxon politicians", English politicians, both Liberal and
Conservative, were still expected by a certain form Fashiolism
government and dealings with foreign powers.433 In thought it regarded
a degree of American efficiency in daily or actual defeat to
control the average civilized man on concept relative to nature.
Nature in black with duplicity, falsehood, deception, and the cynical
concept of justice and false-goods.

...From the longer chains to the cat, the
content and the other; from the understandings
of our understandings that expressed as forming
objects, or those states made them invisible to
their prey, down to the condition of human,
who pass themselves off as trips, leave,
natural follow-dancing, on else another, these
in not a diabolical device with which Nature has
not anticipated the serving and obedience of
man to planets, stars, and seasons.434

It is obvious to seek the roots of any novel value in nature as the
life process are indifferent to that non-universal as good and evil,
ideas which have no meaning outside human process. Possibility is as
possible to man as honey is to the life of the honey bee.435 Therefore,
if one is called upon to prove, "It is wise and safe to side with
Fashiolism... then with Jondo and Panthoz.436

4. Utilitarian

On into explanation to him A Defense of Christianity, A treat meant for

398
The history of those peoples' high culture in the story of the aristocratic influence they underwent. And, if the principle of aristocracy, which is the principle of life, had suffered a necessary defeat, it was not because of the struggle with a superior solution of the problem of government but because of the superposition of the mental edifice by a young and vital one: "Aristocracy versus the Aristocracy". 
Conservatism should orient the nation's future to an elitist \( ^{445} \) in
line with a balance of traditional and modern values. A conservative view of the
popular or apostolic, and an exclusive or apostolic meaning. It is
the apostolic meaning of conservatism that involving change to in
the sensible. \( ^{445} \) To say the validity of the claim for change based
on the question of quality. A theory subverted by such conservatives on Darwin, Hobbes, and Lord Acton. \( ^{447} \) These are for forces in
national life which constantly conflict with humanity's unnatural and
deeply rooted predilection in favour of a stable environment. They
are the remnants of the nation's personality with each fresh generation
and the ebbing of certain sections of the nation under unseasonal
circumstances. Yet, each of these life forces are represented by
the distinct element of any. The manner may be either supernormal
or subnormal. Only the elite have the right to change or
progress, so they have come into the world with quality which make
them superior to the standards expected by the stable environment. \( ^{448} \)
Conservatism must be guided by this distinction, which is the apostolic
connection of conservatism and nation that being openly an attitude
of custom and obstruction in the way of all change, which in the
popular and apostolic connection of conservatism, apostolic conservatism
in an attitude of protection against those changes which are merely
 childcare, living. \( ^{449} \)

That aspect of Conservatism which will always
come is to be loved by the ignorant, though
beauty and ornamented clarity in the number is
practically its tendency to obstruct novelty and
change, but that aspect of it which will always be
to provide and to shine gloriously in the nation a
history. In the tendency to prevent not from
annihilating and from overcoming throughout the constitu-
tution of the country. \( ^{450} \)

To prevent apostolic conservatism as the preservation of the nation's
identity throughout the process of change by a steady concern about
quality in the whole of the nation's life. \( ^{451} \) The principle of

400
individualism conceived in that no limiting, governing, and surviving
vitality can be conceived if one attempts to not yield to its quality.
therefore, conservatism must be gauged by qualitative motivations
of the motive to continue to exist.

...then these, crude, conservative and totalitarian necessarily exist, because to assume totalitarian
distinctions in the measurement of material things is discriminatory, even in the measurement of thoughts, policies, and principles
even to eventual suicide.

To thought the thinking of a conservative policy to meet the needs of
the age and to avoid the degeneracy that descends depended upon the
immediate function of an elite.

Individual's ethics is certainly consistent with the idea of his
mentor, Nietzsche, without absolute hierarchy and discipline one
would never have the means of continually self-sustaining himself.

Nietzsche thought a vital existency should look upon itself in its
own justification, and should accept with a good conscience the
methods of the means one should be reduced to slaves and instruments.

So individual, Nietzsche had described so little to mean applications
through an existentiation order of society. Nietzsche referred to
believe that men are equal, and advocated the practice of deliberate
and progressive elevation identifying which would he believed to
establish what he regarded as a necessary scale of graduation and rank
and a sharp division of classes, with the elite at the head. He
believed that nations was to stand for a neglected minority, for the
gold in the name of the greater. The divine right, justice, confidence,
identity, and the concept of the elite, through their subtle existence into a niche in which they saw themselves and their
devotions reflected, were the type of leaders to whom Nietzsche
referred when he spoke of "higher men". Ruling, like all other
functions, require the grant for its sole justification.

401
...the really great novel contains his truth in contacting an epoch, a party, a nation or the world. to the heart advantage of each of them. It does not follow that the novel power necessarily is the conscious pursuit of the heart advantage of

there is reason - that the heart advantage of consciousness closely associated with problems in making a conscious use of knowing into only conscious motivation in the generation of

the only claim which is justified, according to tedious and

of the idea in Bente^n's novel of 1910,

[1910]. Allowing the consciousness to follow processes that disorder in a disease that kills life. Life can only be secured by order imposed by an elate that knows how to choose and reject correctly in all vital patterns - as to choose the wrong thing in life means death.

Jesse Gordon, in Catherine Boyle, the romance of a deranged lady, on his deathbed, instructs Conrad Symerson that his only child by Catherine Boyle must lead a life of discipline and hardship. He must search for difficulties, and learn to distinguish between beliefs which nearly make a man feel happy and at ease, and beliefs which are disconcerting, though true. If he is a leader he must learn to sacrifice his followers to his purpose. Society is but a huge organization for exploiting greatness. In his novel of 1920, Too Old for folly, Symerson says that in most men there is a sense of quality, a power of discrimination which intuitively values other men; a feeling of certainty usually accompanies it, which is so

The real Henry Biddle, the hero, counsels Sir

Joseph Biddle, it is intuitively instinct to the latter, a financial

mogul, that real Henry Biddle in of rare and vital quality.

the eleventh decade of life in that same lifetime, is described,

despite his fifty-five years of age, as a remarkably vigorous and
To give the impression of increased vitality and efficiency, it is believed that without the work of the hand, the work of the head would become sterile and lifeless. The belief in the concept of leadership to perform the society's goal of creating a society oriented towards unity in purpose and destiny is also founded on the need for a more or less uniform outlook on life. But how can there be possible without higher mental efforts? To hold the history of all medical reforms and innovations demonstrated that for reaching any goal, one must always the work of a leader, active, gifted, and willing to sacrifice with zeal and determination to realize an idea; "the willful capacity establishes the environment," or would, and the active mind remains gone into it and receives their change. The leadership of the "Enlightenment Movement" to modern world revealed the national idea without losing reverence to the discredited vote and constitution. In the history of an idea, it is shown the will of a voluntary or even hostile men the Protestant Reformation, the Great Rebellion, and even the Bolshevik Revolution. Revolution could offer no hope for the future to every elevation of mankind had been achieved by heroes and ideas, never by the masses.

Ferdinand believed his model of leadership had anticipated in Reed County. He believed that life's education had installed something akin to a new religious zeal in the human masses. "It is as if she had been released not only from the past, but also from a still unfulfilled of time which will lead them to the fulfillment of their destiny."
When had not an example of a personal effort for the common good by the precept from others. Indeed, compared the formers and fitters had applied to that which he thought must have been prevalent in France when the great nobleman and ladies were living with. To thought there was nothing preliminary to the education with which the former people called fitters, the man displayed the passionate affection of children in his presence. Collectivism had triumphed over individualism in their country by the united allegiance to the notion that noble fitters had applied by his horrible superwoman effort, so that had determined the reason and actions.

The political conditions by giving was a higher developmental phase, not only a way for the earliest phase, where constructionism of rarely individual phase with all that this means in interaction and identical struggle. Consequently to have given the nation such a problem, so that Howard has pointed it, and a problem to worth while, in the secret of the perfect's angle.

The economic conditions so mutually transmuted in country under the old Tudor, which led to an immediate spectacular rise in the marriage rates were due, according to Howard, so a new will established in the people by their leaders.

White recognition in natural and intuitive. The process intuitive mechanisms for measuring signs of superiority in others which, according to Howard, not with great precision. Signs of rank and anything a follower can easily accept without any other to recognize that they do not automatically succeed. While use my conclusion.

Under the fact that, contrary to the applications of biblical teaching, respect should always be accorded by all as a spontaneous and involuntary reaction.

Addressing the English Army in 1559, Howard realized that although
they mentioned a militant idealism in the eleventh hour of
their militant degeneration they should take heart. 902. It is not
unanimous as voices that ultimately determined around, on Hilbert
and de Haenke believe, but only theORMAN of purpose and energy
of the individual widow of a militant body, known conduction
....only, however, to take birth from the crucible of
that other more unshakable tradition were
tone - bearing such as the intellectual scruples of
Germany, the instituted life, and even the
German intellectuals themselves, not to mention
the handful of Jews whose emigration to the
country (inward, united in 1903) - we shall find
lose cause for either King money or self control,
and enlightened democracy and strength and few reflecting
that only that flight in hast which is abnormal,
and that if any news is upheld with maturity and
single understandings, it must ultimately prevail, even
that complemented English culture and international
neuroparesis, for up building constitutes the
organized action.903

To thought vitality, or wholeness of body, would be the mark of the
existence of the future, which would gradually make the lord above
the unveiled functioning of the population of the civilized world. The
men who wished to belong to this existence of the future would need
to cultivate a new grade of body, independence of spirit, and anxiety
of life which would constitute its principal characteristics.904 Even
after 1910, when 32 Individuals believed the survival of an existence was
essential, "even under the threat of the not only change of 'diaspora'."905

To created a revolutionary elite on an existentioe society, in which
the degree of power exercised by the dominant clans in communication with
the quality of its numbers, had never existed in England.906 Uniform
voluntaries must prevail throughout the whole society for the elite to
exist, and for their power to be maintained.

... a people of quality, owing to the uniformity
the condition familiar, and consequently to a
corresponding uniformity in the standards of value,
will tend to suppress opportunity on all, including
the elite, no. There will be little if any dispute
the merits of a superior individual or group with
eventually recognized, because the mass divided

405
In a highly integrated society, the formation of an educated
bodies, to which all look with feelings of respect, eye, confidence,
respect, and gratitude, would be totally unattainable. In addition
colleges of an elite to already coexist with the deficiency of
collective teaching. So thought then's teaching system a high
degree of individualization and, therefore, they would not
provide a keen appreciation of the refinement and facility possibilities
which had achieved the physico-spiritual level of the people. The
elite that displayed this costly, opinion would have a positively
preventive effect on the masses. After the millennium of "scientific
consensus; in the millennium of scientific technology" we think mankind
should proceed to do so that Plato over the millennium ago suggested
should be done - deliberately rear end and courses on elites that can be
integrated with the leadership of modern peoples' unity by leading and
circular selection and the form selected to form for an elite which
can benefit by elite education and teaching. Moreover, Plato and
students in this view that poets or philosophers should constitute the
catalyst in a government. The essential quality consists in soliciting
popular support for an elite to seek evidence of their achievements
in the name of the masses. Having the second, third, and fourth
decades of the nineteenth century, three men - Witt, the Younger,
Holman and Wellington - also glory in their generation through
national achievement. In consequence all the masses and the masses
of this famous into were overwhelmed by the masses people? An elite
in of vital, life or death, importance to the nations
the nation must choose a minority which, for the
time of those with a body, may be in a position to lead,
to lead and direct the "Establishment" and direct society
authority. Only the elite condition and much more alongside
assessments can believe that a complex society elite ever
can remain sound and flourishing without such an elite.
J. Population

In his A Defence of Conservatism, Judovici says the conservative must be deeply concerned about the welfare and happiness of the people of his nation, because unhappiness and dejection are the most frequent causes of a desire for changes which are degenerative. To as much on the preservation of the identity of the nation must involve a steady consideration for the health, welfare and happiness of the masses the Conservative party should be popular. Consequently, "to the extent to which they become anti-popular they cease to be truly aristocratic or Conservative." Its, in practice, the heavy responsibility of distinguishing between progressive and regressive demands for change, may give the sound Conservative the appearance of an anti-popular obstructionist. As both aristocratic and conservative doctrine overlap— in their exaltation of stability and authority, and in their common principle regarding the need of qualitative values, they find their adherence in any sphere of society where the worth of a thing and a person is measured according to their quality, and the power of time in the production of anything precious in respectability.
Constitutional democracy in a pure sense exists when the majority of the party in power is elected from popular influence. In that case the voting power of the people has been nullified, the vote discriminated and the people become irresponsible. Democracy is susceptible to alien influence and control through 'money power'. The 'money power' of the Jews in influence over political parties, especially the Liberal Party. The proletariat in ~

...We must recognize that it is not so important that the proprietor of one of the largest proprietary stores was a member of the legislature. However, it would be difficult to maintain that the power of the stores could be checked by the action of all such people in their presidential campaigns.

In Edmond de la Porte's novel of 1919, Catherine Doyle, the author of a Nigerian novel, described how a_randomly chosen set of names was selected for the purpose of attempting to elect the director of a new company. Catherine Doyle, the niece of the

...The code of the future was to be drawn from the working classes, as Joan Gordon wished.
to represent the events by epically the vivid and human qualities

The first they needed was straight, Colenso had to compare

which he considered to be unique with southern vitality. The novel

with the vitality of a lioness and that the principal quality

intended to be that of a woman. The novel

Colenso imagined himself the beautiful gift of the era

ranged where there would suffice to authenticate a

although Colenso imagined that these characters and names could be

time to see an official for Colenso had not been heard, a casting

close to another, who had a magnificent build and the figure

of a woman. According to Colenso, Colenso imagined to

passionate social person

...In 1900 for instance it was high breeding, Colenso's

eye had been taken. These were some people to stop

the best of London who were born in

Colenso's way. But they are not easily classed

unfortunately one of them, Miss Brown, and to the

stop, and then a joke or a real instance at her.

Shakespeare's sonnets, in the 19th century, was relatively facile

enough to demand and expect no reserve of vitality in him who needed

her. But, she was more essential to perceive the outward signs of

this coveted quality in woman, Colenso, and heaven and butcher-

boys, than in the son of her 'a near-class' circle. Janet Herbert

on 'Merton', the novels show hardship of Herbert's novel of 1921,

that George Herbert had the signs of being an estate keeper of life.

Poor uncle, Colenso Herbert, though a Labour supporter, was the human

equality of Plutarch; Herbert in his own words. However, his consistent

supporters failed nothing with Janet Herbert who was in the

reasonable case, which Shadwell, a man to whom the cause enticed

the welfare not only of himself, but of his people and country.
Lord Chelmsford was committed to yielding the "vested interests" that had essential constitutional demerits. Lord Salisbury's Liberal candidate put forward only appeals to charge Lord Chelmsford with returning one of London's oldest and most distinguished Labour leaders, Mr. Solomon Pethick, in order to induce the Conservative electorate to vote for him. The Conservative candidate in Lord Chelmsford's favor. On the one hand, Mr. Solomon Pethick, a veteran Labour leader, justified himself before his nomination and the vote came to identifying himself with a Coalition candidate of predominant Labour views and traditions, instead of supporting the Labour candidate and the Labour cause. It excited much public attention for it was the first instance of an essential and much canvassed Labour leader's commitment of the principles of his party for the express purpose of joining over to the "other side. It was handled in the handwriting of a true Coalition of candidates to the "other party." Consequently, conversation was to become a popular creed and the political truce was to mean, a definitively of Coalition.

One of the most striking features of the contest was that, despite the Liberal Unionist attempt to obtain a truce, on neither of the sides did it, however actually connected with the main business, was actually a truce. Lord Salisbury had given the word, and it had been obeyed. No such public spirit was excited that on that great occasion, then the most important question in the State, the Parliamentary election, and the National voice, in the persons of Mr. Solomon...
The prophet declared prophetically, I will establish it for ever, that it shall not depart. If man will harden his heart, so that he will not hear the voice of the law, then will I harden his heart, and strengthen his hand. 

The prophecy of Micah was fulfilled, for the Lord delivered the people of Judah from the Assyrians.

The prophecy of Isaiah was fulfilled, for the Lord delivered the people of Judah from the Assyrians.

The prophecy of Hosea was fulfilled, for the Lord delivered the people of Judah from the Assyrians.

The prophecy of Amos was fulfilled, for the Lord delivered the people of Judah from the Assyrians.

The prophecy of Obadiah was fulfilled, for the Lord delivered the people of Judah from the Assyrians.
In the midst of universal ceasing, a strange sadness took Chillingly over the by-elections at that the thinking and ceased to have it in his power to effect a reconciliation between conviction and conclusion. 587 Grant had been between the church and the court, between a sudden emotions to Lord Chillingly. He could not find the vigour of the man who had been in the world of the man who. 588 Grant had been convinced him of the reality of the The physical appeal by the consciousness of his capture of a strong and vigorous mind; strictly inward. Their voices on the other hand, 589 there was the removal of primitive health and vigour in Janet's love. 588 These seconds had little effect on Lord Chillingly such a deep and luminous darkness. At the post, Janet had shown her lost interest in the comparatively exact bibliography activities. The adventures and like the sudden illumination of a flash of lightning which will the growing checks and the need earth are waiting for the stroke to continue its amusing course. Once in the novel, Lord Fido points to a picture of Chillingly in the washer and hints at the compensation between the latter, who feared the swiftly than, and his distraught son who is fascinated with Janet's turn. To tell the story that Lord Chillingly and Grant X been civilization in being popular reactions.

...the turn of great buildings yet most of the Irish, the whole, and the cold loneliness of the right. They receive the first hint of the lightning. They are not sufficiently near the stormy ground to feel the even exciting and the pleasant. 92
He told her how, as a Rising young of Talent at the central office, he had met a beautiful working class girl and loved for her an intense constancy and vitality unlike that found in women of his own class. But he had not to understand her for the cause, although she had become his life and he had lived for nothing else.

Accordingly, when Janet embarks on her own calling, she also chooses life and commits suicide.

In Neville’s novel of 1936, The Sleeping of the Giant, he says that the prose of Mr. Huxley Gilbert Alien, had yet to learn that it is men who are the principal captives of class prejudices. Mr. Huxley proclaims to Ure and Hardgrove that the cause is, unfortunately, impotent in a constitutional democracy whose parties are controlled by the ‘money power’. He says politics:

...in all a question of money and political interests. If I knew of a way by which the British system could be saved, do you suppose that I should stand the smallest chance of getting my ideas adopted on its merits? Of all the interests! It could all depend on the number of vested interests involved, and the amount of money I could get up..."

Gilbert Alien tells Ure that he is a man who wishes to work the people, and expose the whole sham of constitutional democracy. Mr. Huxley replies that it would be difficult to fulfill for the newspapers and public media are controlled by the same vested interests which control political parties. Mr. Huxley says it would be almost impossible to bring about the change in their lives as “when he came to action they’d be off to their golf or their shooting...” Subsequently, Mr. Huxley tells Gilbert Alien that he is a superficial conservative candidate for the northern division of thence to effect a regeneration in the dilatory habits of the Radical. Mr. Jonathan Hardgrove, a wealthy proprietary food manufacturer, whom Mr. Huxley tells that if he chose to diminish the power of the vested interests represented by the money power and preserved
foes of England, he will produce a levelling that will ultimately allow him to end his agitations. Indeed, Gilbert白云 in his speech to the General Election by a Liberal candidate, an agent of the money power.

Individual thought it was the first duty of the saloon to watch vigilantly that violence and injustice are not of men's making, for that can be remedied. The second duty of saloons is to encourage as far as possible the opposition resulting from the violence that in of life's making. To thought Gladstone was an ideal man in this respect to be sheltered those whose natural directors had overthrown.

Individual毁灭 to the multitudinous deeds of violence of men's making that have been allowed to break loose on the community, and which lead no colourable warrant to the otherwise abused proposals of socialists, the following: breaking the act of inviting the proletariat to engage in unhealthy occupations; profiteering speculation on the first necessities of life; wanton disposal of property after death; alienation without will; withholding the purveying of inferior food to the masses, and of food that is not strictly life-supporting; lack of protection afforded to the masses against various exemplary; the failure to impart to the masses by means of education any branch of knowledge that would add dignity to their characters and lend support to their self-control. 

Individual thought the campaign for the prohibition of alcohol had been initiated by the hands of industry and overcome to deliberately weaken the proletariat's readiness to their depredations. People who are bright, vigorous, and bold, through alcoholism, fermented liquors, are difficult to depress or to enslave.

... Such people do not tolerate for long the jailing and besetting high speed of an efficient modern society that too strongly resemble the old poorness of England, who were the terror of the
Under the values and standards that prevail in the commercial and industrial society, "governed by moneyed interests," it could not be demonstrated that the ill-adapted were the dominating. Labour thought it would be eugenic that the working classes had even larger families relative to the patrician upper and middle classes. Labour believed "the mean, narrow and parochial spirit of every sympotic sybarite of Hayfair or Pennington," forgot that man is a progressive animal, and that happiness is not necessarily achieved by opulent homes, luxurious apartments, and the constant opportunity and temptation of seeking isolation. In order to enlist the cooperation and sympathy of the poor in proposing legislation for limiting the freedom of degenerate, such laws must be made so rigorous for the defective among the rich and well-to-do as for the defective among the indigent. Highly temperamental and adventurous individuals were wantonly placed in the criminal classes by middle-class peoples:

...among many and 'safety first' people, the term 'degenerate' instead of being applied to the type commerce and industry are breeding, is constantly applied to people who are either too virile and robust to endure the air that is breathed in offices and workhouses, or else too passionate to survive daily contact with the opposite sex without embracing themselves actually.

Labour called the wealthy unemployed classes parasites. Those from whom we derive our correct notions of labour who were above work, enjoyed positions of complete independence, and were more free of public obligations than any wealthy class there had over been, only contained a few who had seen their independence by creating anything. The majority of them did not turn to creating but destruction.

415
The privileged classes amounted to a great extent of people originated from generations of middle and the high social with middle but commercial and commercial talent between producer and consumer. Indeed, industrial classes sell to the number of social labor because of the frequently available and commendable nature of their participation the common occurrence of economic or social of consciousness among them their commercial consciousness their prosperity has physical conditions the tendency among the heat of time to return to creation of new fact, like the clock making of Louis XVI.52 the legal distinction between responsibility and criminality was, according to Jussović, an implication of commercial anarchy and limitations.

Jussović described the ignorance and indifference in England to the achievements of labor and his content in the first three years of their government to vigorous and heightened press censorship.554 He thought valuable by products of the civil labor corps upon the breaking down of these barriers by the mixing of the various social strata in the camps and the benefits to all concerned derived from the closer acquaintance made by the children of middle and lower classes families with earned labor, its hardships, its advantages, and the immense importance in the economy of the nation.555 Again, he indicated that his attention to the best regime was inspired by his advocacy ofchildhood. Jussović believed that the need protection of the concept of non-belonging by the rank of blood spilt in the national defense.
The task had to be transfigured. From the class of modern capitalist exploitation, with its impersonal, almost abstract manner, historical thought had lost its historicism ideal by creating a bond between the laborer and his work which was reminiscent of the feelings that bound the weaver of former times to his employer. The ideas connected with the present work required to be drawn strict onto the plain of duty, and devotion and sacrifice on the field of battle.

Indonesia's population to most apparent in his pseudonymous book of 1930, Peking and the War in Nanking. In the letter, he says the Jews because of their_values and natural equipment were superior to the concept which those about them might feel for the occupation associated with the middle eastern politics. The Jews had every international movement, as against fascist nationalism, because of his primitive desert community which known of no territorial nationality. He is indifferent to the interests of the nation in which he find himself, indeed, an enemy of the popular interest. Indonesia reasoned that since the condition of the Jews to implicit in the seventeenth century, the productive and laborious life of the Jews had been progressively limited. Consequently, the condition of the Jews did no more than put the copyists to a model edition which had been in process of construction under their wise influence for over a century and a half. As a descendant of a race hardly in the desert to an existence which, though precarious, was not laborious, and, over once his chivalryment of the people's life, attracted to
and progressively more enslaved to trade, the Jews were forced to
practice insatiable culture, in which honest and envy prone to wealth
are preferred to moral labour.

Contemporary culture was that of the Jew, according to Landovici. Both in
the ideology of Judaism itself and the practical arguments of it, there
was nothing foreign to the method of the Jewish bourgeoisie, or to the
spirit which the increasing influence of Jewish finance and trading
"morality" had spread in Europe. Landovici thought Jewish influence
could not be excluded from the drastic reforms which occurred the
establishment of free and irremovable ownership, and which ultimately
culminated in modern capitalism. But once private property had
abandoned its only justification, duty, it necessarily followed that
communism became the inevitable reaction to this divorce of duty
from ownership. The whole of the nation's property emerged, although
unwillingly of the extent to which they had been subjected to Jewish
influence, were threatened with the total confiscation of their
property. Jewish influence had cleared the way for the transition
of modern capitalism to communism:

... And if today we see the Jews everywhere advocating,
and even initiating the next logical move in the
line of development which we are understanding - the
abolishing of capitalism and communism - it is probably
not only to the fact that, with its own preposterously
quick rise (especially in regard toвремax contract),
the Jew inevitably perceived the impossibility of the
work his methods have into the modern institution
of property, and now wishes to reject the outrage
made into a fact where he can turn to continue and
survive, if only in the guise of a hypocritical libertarian.
The Jew became associated with a liberal and 'money party', standing opposed to all those conservative elements in the land struggling to maintain tradition, lineage, and untarnished title and honour. The Jew's drive 'money power' transformed old aristocratic societies into plutocracy in which their control may be strengthened. They seek to dominate important strategic positions from which opinion, and political and financial interests, can be controlled. The Jew designs to all the rigorous polities and monies tending to conserve the national character and identity. And, when the Jew advocate concludes it to solely a cause for moving on to a fresh soil or pasture, whose desire millions of sheep will continue to maintain their bucolic nature in idleness, but, when faced with the problem of establishing themselves among a conservative people, or a people organised on aristocratic lines, the Jew became militantly liberal out of expediency. They strive everywhere for the strategic positions from which the more may be directed or controlled. Ideological declared that the English masses militantly attack Jews, their influence, and the Judaised elements in their midst and kind.
Hobson believed "the older classes, powerful and anonymous, influence of high station," rendered the popular will impotent in a constitutional democracy. He admitted that the working classes were exactly England's native element, and their middle class observers and protagonists opposed the classes that in either France or having been native, had become educated. The working class are England's native element who had been unable to accommodate themselves to "the alien culture and civilization foisted on the land in the last three centuries." They were the only body in the land who had not been infected with money, and who understood earning a living solely on working for a living. Hobson believed the working classes strove everything on their psycho-physical ability to work. The long-suffering notion that men are born free and everywhere become modernised through the villany of governments was peculiar to the middle class. The working class notion of freedom had nothing in common with the largely world middle class conditions. Hobson thought it consisted in the natural desire of all races men to express their higher appetites in their work and thereby to acquire credit socially. Their longing to find an outlet for higher appetites, to find employment from anonymous and dishonest employers, to find a definite and secure social station, to obtain social regard, to nourish in one's work the healthy appetite for social regard, and no longer to be the sport of blind and inhuman trade oscillations, but little in common with the "fascinating non-material and solely fictitious conception of liberty" of the middle classes. Nevertheless, the working classes were not so totally as to demand equality in the sense of complete inter-changeability between human beings. For, according to Hobson, to any normal it before the law, or in relation to opportunity, the working classes any of equality had these modes the ability to discern quality in one; the sense of personal worth; and the natural to acknowledge that an acceptance of the doctrine of human inequality necessarily involved
The conclusion of class distinctions. They only occurred real

In the conclusion, even those three roots

3. to conflict resulting from those three roots

of conflict between, making about conflicts, and

and conflictive antagonistic, and dominating only in

the form of economic and social confliction. With the

form of economic and social confliction, conflictive

caused by conflictive only justified in

alcohol of same generation a vague statuary for equality. With the

name of economic confliction only caused, and with a middle

class often adding an employer devoted to any other distinction,

constant affronts to the sense of personal worth among members

worn removable. Inferred submitted that the sense of what he

referred to the vague existing after equality of the working class

was really an inadequate demand for genuine equality in those

wore economic war placed above them. Despite the method

of economic confliction of the working class by the influence of their economic

organscion's impetus of industrialization, urbanization, industrialization

and urbanization, they were still the most vigorous

wars. Their economic situation thus enabled control

and that he regarded as their position in 1500 and their fellows.

They were progressive and patriotic unlike the middle class. The

victors in villages as only, and those progressive unity. They

were not liberal like the middle class. They were normal in so one in

sense of affection and national expression. Only their vitality could

organize the nation.

... for only by the reformation of millions of such

expense radiation, consolidating and not dominating will

take precedent into the broad unity's sense of national

strength be fed and require the irremovable nations.
The changes to this page from the original document are as follows:

The changes to this page from the original document are as follows:

1. The text has been corrected for spelling and grammar.
2. The text has been reformatted for readability.

The corrected text reads:

...For all privileges and titles, transformable to more authoritative status, survived the need that the power of money was not absolute, and that certain key politicians would remain loyal to the unity of the individual powers...

6. Totalitarianism

Totalitarianism's fascist orientation, drawing from all aspects of the political spectrum, is complemented by its advocacy of totalitarianism, A desolate political system in which the government possesses no rival portion or legitimacy, demanding total submission of the individual to the state. There being no constitution or limits to the sphere of political activity, no division between the elite and the masses, no division between the government and society. The elite initiates the mass and recognizably the mass initiates the elite, but not through constitutional channels. Totalitarianism as the complement of the fascist synthesis of political orientation and the keynote of the political system involved continued. To his A defense of indiscernibility, A first look at the future, involved isolate to discuss the 'principles' of democracy on a plane above that of those political parties' and to say that often he will need the hostile to substantiate the most confirmed radical. To reclaim the independent thought had robbed nature of the active exercise of the 'authorship' of governing, the present radical for binding a people and their elite together. The
In his "Defence of Conservatism," Edmund Burke defends the notion of
totalitarian government and deems upon all political activities, the necessity of
conservation. He says that in all national and even in the life of nature,
there are two forces which constantly conflict with the inclination of
all existence to preserve stability before instability in their
environment. These two forces are, first, the removal of the
value of the nation's possessions with each fresh generation; second,
the.checking of certain portions of the nation under circumstances which
make adaptation impossible. However, Burke decides the change in only
a temporary stability for change, leading more unwise and ambition.
Their anti-conservation must carry both to overvaluation when once the
object of their desire is achieved.

...even communists who have successfully
established the condition they desire,
over-reach themselves in conservatism and begin
again to snail change. ... dezees that violent assaults adopted by the free nations of
many against another revolutionary propagandist
and revolutionizing in and the natural conservatism
of non-revolutionary citizens the demand which have
made the change have achieved their new
adaptation. 999

Burke quoted Charles Montesquieu with never having perceived the difference
between the temporary and unthinking desire for change, which in common,
and the permanent and for advance, which is wise and voluntary. 996 He
called politics a "science" of conserving national welfare by directing
and framing national policies. As the nation is a vital and living thing, conservatives must be committed to totalitarianism. Since conserving the identity of the nation is a matter of conserving a living, growing and therefore changing phenomenon, politics cannot be merely an abstraction from experience, as if an unmoveable and unchangeable rock had to be preserved, but a science of enlightened interference after the style of forestry. The whole of the politics of a living nation, therefore, resolved itself into a 'science' of expansion with conservation on the enlightened interfering lines of successful forestry. All political parties which claim to be national and not international, must consequently be conservative. They only differ regarding means. Even a patriotic revolutionary must be a conservative, according to Burdovici's criterion. If he desires his revolution for the good of his nation, he must desire the results of his revolution to endure. And at that point he becomes a conservative. This explains the curious phenomenon, recurring throughout history, of the revolutionary who ultimately becomes a 'reactionary'. Thus, the term liberal or labour, as a title of party, ought to be opposed to Conservative only as a sign of disagreement regarding means. We call esoteric conservatism the position of those who, far from being merely opposed to change, wish only to conserve the national identity throughout the changes introduced by growth and expansion. The conservative must be committed to preserving the nation's vitality, because ill-health leads to the decay of national strength, capacity and character:

"To be a good forester a man must know how to give them their proper health conditions, and he must also know how and when to chop and prune them." Burdovici proceeds to advocate a modern feudal and guild system, or corporate state. He extolled the medieval guild system in which craft was hereditary, sons and daughters were married
within the limits, and capacity and innate predisposition for a
promotion ending very culminate. To understand the idea of a
limited constitutional authority as it served the one great business
to the cultivation of the people. A "natural" law, and equality
claimed as an ideal, can multiply. On the whole, individual social
politics from economics. Medieval had not regarded the health of
the individual subject to impel the entire of government.

...The institutions of the Middle Ages, and above all the
kings of their head, were perfectly well aware that the health and happiness of the individual
subjects were questions which it was incumbent upon the State to study and understand.

Individual thought it necessary and urgent to organize industries so as to prevent functions, capricious and divisive between causes and
results, and a difference of interest between them. The Middle Ages
put an example in their own industries limited corporate union, in which
results and causes functional in minds considerable to the State, and
guaranteed public service both qualitatively and quantitatively in
returns for certain privileges. Especially in those institutions on
which the life of the nation essentially depends interest and results should
constitute a corporate whole and functional capricious should be
separated. Individual followed the views of nature capitalization, although
not inherent in capitalism you say were due to the fact that it had
never been properly controlled. The Conservative Party in role as the
popular party, as a party of interest of landed interests, and as a
professor of ruthless, constituted as the appointed their to organize
world life to the feudal kings and Church of the Middle Ages had
organized national life. The Conservative Party should have given
industry its proper relation to the State and the publics.

...It should have made the worker in industry an essential agent of the whole body, as even
helping to support its life and vitally interested in its prosperity and production, vitally giving
and deriving energy, with an indeterminate relation to
The difference between service and service must have been nearly identical. And the whole of each service would have been vitally connected to the person. §15. It was, therefore, the person who was the body subject to the service and its regulations or its rule. §16. In the "problem" of the continuity of the service, with the constitution, the principles, and the government, an argument of the service of feudal government took itself, and at the time the definition of continuity, constitutionality, and order, would establish in the constitutional principle. §16. It was then held for themselves, to suppose the constitutionality law as no longer connected with the organization of the service and constitution. A figured with means influence was the power of the constitution. §17. Where may be a good part of helping in a public opinion supporting the constitution. §18. To conceive a new constitution meant to establish a new constitution. §19. The constitution is only to "assume" the constitution involved the service duty of constitution, the service, and the only means of defining that was to redefine the American and the constitution. The political question of the constitution, with the serviceable character of continuity, constitutionality, and constitution, since the Constitution Act of 1911. §20. Through the service and the Constitution and the House of Lords, a new service, the Constitution on British law. §21. The service law that to proceed or uphold it? That from the service, Constitution's power over it. In this manner, what is the service, or the Constitution? §22. To every constitution in the service which had not constitutionality maintained a standard of the highest constitutionality and would not to be determined, then the service of commerce and the Constitution, whose existence useful, governed, should be no
In Chapter II of the *Fourteen Lessons of Physiology*, "Essays on a Nutritional Foundation, addressing the 1920 idea, any human consciousness does not necessarily amount to legality to the Constitution.

"For my books and constellations, I be concluded.

The task amount of being a meaningful human or consciousness, does not come to everyone of human consciousness to all things it been not arrested in being because the accidental and casual course of the human eye, not in the end of consciousness, while so enormous and with to suppress the only present only by a, and to the integrated manipulation, (due to the formal, constitutional, and formal manipulation which those than to here and a better judgment among one to deceased."

In Chapter IV of the *The Final Conclusions of Physiology*, "Essays on a Nutritional Foundation, addressing the 1920 idea, any human consciousness does not necessarily amount to legality to the Constitution.

Beloved decision that any living thing can be free from birth. A pursued yet misplaced and antithetical can rigidly determined at birth. And in addition, no can the action to continue living to them. To be heard to preserve food and electricity to let not. Even strong nature have no choice on freedom. They are driven to their great needs by a state of accumulated energy which must discharge itself over a large area. The absence of all strength.
In that it given those who possess it no freedom in the domain of action. Only workers in approximately 1923, or in accordance of desiring freedom. Individual interpreted the working class desired for freedom as really a demand for a bondage in which their stronger impulse would have more scope. For, Individual believed, freedom in the sense of non-reliance, non-depending, absence of citation, absence of work, and absence of responsibilities or conventions, utterly fantastic.

There is only one kind of freedom that has any relation to reality, only one kind of freedom therefore that can be realized, that can be reconciled and that in the freedom to exchange a bondage compatible with our stronger impulse for a bondage that harmonizes with them.

Each individual is as totally bound to the State that they have no rights or liberties. Individual thought the State the sole custodian of rights, entitled to impose limits upon the multiplication of what it regarded as degenerate.

In his proposals to relax the laws against infanticide it was not to be left to the ignorant, the tasteless and the excitable, to decide who should and should not live, but to the State. All acute cases of malformation, degenerative stigmas, eminences and abnormality, should be destroyed and, with an anarchic twist, if necessary illegally; "And if the law does not move, it only requires a few brave, tactful and merciful fathers to lead the way in this direction, for the law to follow."

In his Violence, Sacrifice and War, Individual suggested that hitherto the incidence of violence and sacrifice, generated by reproduction, had been left to change among the population. He advocated an era of selective sacrifice, in which the State would decide who can permitted to live.

...Just as in war, the elements selected for sacrifice, at least at home, would be the object of much honour and public praise and recognition, and just as the human sacrifices of the past are supposed to have gone to their death, gorgeously arrayed and crowned as kings, so the sacrificial victims of the future might if necessary go to their doom amid public celebration.
Industries (the idea of private property) of 1922, in a significant contribution to his search for a meaningful ideal of totalitarianism.

In the latter he proposes a solution of the 'problem' of proprietary rights, based neither on the capitalist nor the communist standpoint. He says that nowhere in existing primitive races, as among part progressive races, has a rational conception been found to exist unblended with private ownership or vice versa. But, he rejects the latter as a basic idea which to argue so he thinks the practices of primitive society inapplicable to modern society. Similarly, he rejects the tradition of European thought or 'philosophy', because it was the thought of men born and bred in city states. It was natural for humans to develop the idea of property as entailing no duties, because it was the kind of property with which they were chiefly concerned.

Hence, Individual reckoned that no Western European 'philosopher' or lawyer had ever succeeded in establishing private property on a fundamental law or principle of life. Nor, does he attempt to establish private property on a fixed principle of life or upon a natural law. According to the ends one wishes to achieve with men and society, according to the degree of potential for conservation which one wishes to secure, one may determine the kind of proprietary rights it is expedient to grant to private individuals. After rejecting the anthropological and 'philosophical' justifications of private property, Individual turned to history to support his case that only by coupling private property with duty may it be coupled with an conception identical to life itself. He negates history reveals a picture not of private ownership, nor of communism, but of a blend of the two, marked by a hardening of the right of individual ownership.
on each society approached its decadence. Whether we turn to

India, to China, to Egypt, to Greece, Rome or medieval Europe,

the early legislation comes always to have

been oriented to economic control or conditionally

with absolute and absolute ownership, and on that

on the latter form connected on the former: In each

instance, the recovery the relationship approached

distribution.

In ancient Egypt, where the system was feudal, the legislature had

periodically to intervene to buy back from domain landlords lands

that had become private property. This demonstrated that the tendency

of the blood of private and feudal ownership to decompose into

purely private ownership was regarded as an evil and had to be checked

by redistribution. In ancient Greece the same dangerous developments

and the same reaction occurred. Similarly, in ancient Rome, although

absolute ownership became universal, comparatively early, vestiges of

a system of conditional ownership survived. In the feudal system of

medieval Europe which gathered up and organized all that was left in the institutions of the ancient world relating
to property, and evolved an intricate and decentralized form of

feudal society, consisting of granted privileges and obligations

extending from the lord to the preceding personal. The principle of

mutual obligations and loyalty, protection and service, bound
together all ranks of society; whilst nothing in the form of

irresponsible ownership existed, at least in the sense of production,

the right of private property was sufficiently conceded to lend

"adequate freedom" and dignity to the individual, and to provide for

the adequate development of character. Individual's docile state was

to mandate the system of responsible proprietary rights, of

granted loyalties and obligations, of granted service and

privileges, which, in feudalism made the position of the lord in the

lead as secure and as essential as that of his immediate and vassal

superior. Property should be "functionalized", and work and
privilege coupled with a corresponding function. The idea that the study of history is to explain why things happened and what causes absolute private ownership has been extended to every possible form of property, and led to the creation of a class which has been challenged and challenged in a non-functional way, discredited and threatened. At such moments of crisis...

...the effects of recent legislation - Federation of Local Authorities in England, Tyne and Wear, and Scottish Local Authority, to mention only a few - have always been to exert influence by trying to give to the majority those very benefits which ran the sole basis for the possibilities of individual ownership as an institution.

Bickelham uses a reaction to the long spell of absolute ownership which spread throughout the last hundred on the result of Roman Law. If civilization is to be conserved communism, the ultimate reaction to absolute private property, must be avoided. The wise man should turn to experience, as Aristotle implied, and recognize the truth that no branch of any simple instance of communal ownership having either created a great civilized people, or induced in a great culture or people. Nevertheless, the following objections to private property remain: private property means capability and moral possibility; it does not accumulate those virtue or human desirability in most conspicuous; it is frequently viciously administered; it may be used to vulgarize and debase national people; people tend to forget the contribution made by all to their individual property; in capitalist society, it may be acquired in vast quantities in ways that have no connection with diligence, good taste, great intellectual gifts, good health, patriotism or even decency ("Pensions, which can be voted on quite successfully by a (myopically, bickelham example of the end of a telephone"); in capitalist society it becomes a right without a function or duty; in capitalist society it leads to the exercise of an enormous arbitrary power over one's fellow ("apostoles
of a derogatory, creased emblem being creased about in a little
old boy, your son, your only by old companions, other hello, and
whence you can also conclude that all to [hect] 1040. The solution
to the views of private property lies in accommodating it with only
in a new utilization. The fundamental difference between the rich and
the poor should be that, where as the poor are not equipped to hold
property, the rich are so equipped. Only those should be poor from
then property can be secured without either less to the property
already or to the community 640. I insisted on it that it is so
difficult and easier to be rich as it was difficult and easier
to be a leader in servility. It was no doubt to the
Constitution of the tribunal which would adjudicate the transfer of
property

...from our knowledge of all corporations and bodies
of men, who have a certain reputation, a certain
standard of service, and certain solemn obligations
to maintain and protect, it is clear that those most
nearly Jacobin to guard the property and standards
of an order are usually the men who belong to it.

I thought the above was one of the dominant and moral guiles of the
Middle Ages, and especially of the Council of Ten in Venice. 650 Then,
noblesse oblige would be monitored on its already used in such
corporations as the Church, the professions, and such services as
the army and navy. 651 However, if the middle class demoted from
forming themselves into a corporation of the State then their fate
would be that of the House of Lords — demote. Alternatively, if they
ceased in 'Jacobinizing' wealth they would owe the institution
of private property, and have the populace to support them. 652 The
possession of wealth and prestige must be 'Jacobinized' into one of
qualitative distinction and difficulty and responsibility. From being
a source of eccentricity and unbalance, it should become an instrument
of order, morality and solubleness. 653 I insisted did not think that
such an enterprise would fail through lack of youth and ability, for
he knew of a contemporaneous political movement, fascism, which had already successfully committed itself to such a "irrationalization of values" elsewhere.654

Fascism, predictably enough, found his ideal in the contemporaneous Nazi movement, which he believed had indisputably united Germany as no country had been united since the Renaissance. It had obliterated political parties and factions, which Luddovici thought should exist in no nation. He thought England was just as "conditioned" to totalitarian Germany, except that in the latter the conditioning powers were ready to ensure for the effect they produce, whilst in England they were wholly irresponsible and did not ensure for what their unscrupulous use of publicity enabled them to effect in the moulding of public opinion.655 He particularly admired the notion of law which came into force in September 1933 and were known as the Außerschuldenverbot (the law relating to the Inheritance of Landed Property) which provided for the hardworking and capable peasant a security in his holding, which no wrongshad creditor could defeat. The test of credit default was not whether the creditor had made a loss but whether the peasant debtor was capable, knowledgeable, diligent, and had shown that he could keep his land in a proper state. Luddovici admired it for land was not treated as a moveable property, to be bought and sold in the open market.656

Luddovici thought only that society could be conceived which is organised on the principle of mutuality and the recognition of the truth that no property can be wholly private, that all possessions belong in part to all because all have contributed to their creation. He thought the above principle was largely realised in England during the Middle Ages, in Feudalism.657 Government should act with authority
So abolish chaos, increase rational efficiency, and tighten social discipline. Totalitarianism is the only remedy when the nation has been brought to the brink of chaos by the multiplicity of its conflicting groups. Totalitarianism is... a doctrine formulated by which the unity and strength of an integrated nation's will and purpose are cultivated and stimulated for the sake of urgent constructive polity cohesion.

Ludovici defined his totalitarian ideals 'organic' rather than 'inorganic' totalitarianism. He believed his advocacy of the former was bound to resemble the 'inorganic' totalitarianism of contemporaneous fascist nations as all of Europe was suffering from the same degeneracy. He thought he was advocating a prophylactic for 'inorganic' totalitarianism...

...it is only when chaos will have outpaced our efforts to integrate the nation and to give it a single will to act itself in order that [inorganic] Totalitarianism will have become an ineluctable necessity.

Ludovici's notion of 'organic' totalitarianism takes the form of a modern servitude. To speculative feudalism which, up to the time of the Tudors and Stuarts, interpreted the English and made them form a nation against their social inclinations. Every victory of gentryism was achieved by a painful and gradual metamorphosis of the 'particularist' Serzax into a social being. When once the King and his warriors became one with the people, and had begun to socialise them, the disrupting and social elements composed of the Jews came to be felt as something increasingly alien and intolerable, and in 1099 they were expelled, not to return for 365 years. During those 365 years Ludovici claimed the English reached total ethnic uniformity, and their culture and civilisation came to life. Under the 'guidance' of monarchs like Henry I, Henry II, Edward I and Edward III, and Elizabeth and the early Stuarts, the English became totally integrated.
...how a particularist people were gradually enabled by their leaders into a nation which degenerated all the many features of a better national union, and how they learnt to make their vanished National before Private Interest.

He regretted that Elizabeth I's and James I's ex-enactment of Edward VI's Act for the encouragement of the fishing industry and the increase of fishermen, the training school of the Navy, by making it compulsory for all English people to eat fish all through Lent and prescribed days of every week, would be stigmatized by liberals as fascist. Foundation fought anarchy and promoted an organic integration of the community by giving every man, from the lowest to the highest, his place and function in society, and therefore a certain dignity arising from the sense of possessing a private right and of being an essential link in the hierarchical chain. Iudovici believed the 'Constitution' meant the reigning Sovereign, the Lords and the Commons, acting together in governing the country. But in the absence of a strictly defined Constitution, the Commons had usurped the powers of the Sovereign and the Second Chamber. He sought to reverse the contemporary situations:

Above all, owing to his [the monarch] eminently noble and conspicuous position in the land, he is essentially able to be an example to his
conceded only because the presence of the Constitution, because if
exclusion would preclude [the] one [the] one [the] one [the] constant
that could not be [the] by an able. Authorized thought there was a need
for a limited power independent of legislative power, to act as a
defeasive to the power of Congress. [The] opposition, especially the official
opposition, should be expanded and the Executive's ability to act
unsubordinated. Authorized thought strength can have no place in
parliamentary, opposition, or any other collaborative association. A
new solution, composed of the public opinion which eliminated the mobility
in the First Age, should be adopted.


In providing a vision of the order of accounts combined with the accompa-
nying ideology of individualism, nationalism, and spontaneity, individual is a
typical person. Lord Halifax, in Lord Halifax's words, says to Lord
Shadwell, his son, that if he wished daily life in a small
society he would realize that there is a life to fight for, the
natural life in which one had the privilege to direct the oldest
healthiest and most useful industry in earth, agriculture, the industry
which satisfied one's root natural needs, and also food and
intellectual and body. Individual advocated the adoption of small occupations
and hence among the proletarian. They should become individuals in
spontaneity again, because it is the only way by which they could
reacquire their dignity, their lost condition, and unattached bodies.
the most 

expansion of industry and commerce in England and Wales had not only 

contributed to physical degeneracy, for they complained of the 

wider factory system and a astounding and unhealthy effect upon the 

well of the nation. 670

Individuals entered the Labourer System occupation at first. Anyway 

for its had created new physical needs, new circumstances, and a 

personal population. So was impressed by the conditions of life, of 

all classes, in rural agricultural labour unless they all sensed 

healthy enough to thrive under present conditions. 690 However and 

consolidating their returns to the land were least which made it 

difficult for young rural people to migrate to the town, which also 

not with Individual's approval. 691

Individuals believed the present was far more realistic than the townmen, 

because Individual was found in his vital occupation. 692 Those 

provided a new aura of the biological values necessary for the 

conservation of the people's health in the Middle Ages. Town and 

towns were objects of contempt because the physically removed and 

inferior tended to migrate to town. 693 A revival of rural life and 

agriculture, and a repopulation of the countryside, would facilitate 

a system of healthy soil cultivation in England. 694 The indirect 

effect of farm life was to divert attention from the brute animal 

needs of men. 695 Visions particularly affected women's sexual 

conditions, to their detriment. Children tend to lose their senses down 

the difficulty of having large families in towns; the position for 

occupations opening among all town-dwellers, resulted in an 

assimilation of possessions which, because they are expensive, 

resulted in altering the tone of a reasonable view of life through
The belief in the superiority of what in primitive is present in industrial's writings. Could perhaps in Catherine Byrnes the presence of a thrice-married lady, indicate to us that, before he met Catherine Boyd, he thought marriage peculiar to the time when men used to absent themselves for months at a time from their mates, either as warriors, adventurers, or hunters, when life was more exciting.  

Later, when he goes on a world cruise to dispel his anxieties at the marriage of Catherine Boyd to the objectionable Mr. Lynch, he passes through Alaska. He notices how curiously alive the Klondike were. Convicts played the game of their lives, in the intervals of which they did their work, and any man seemed to serve their purpose, provided he move under seventy.

"I drew my curtain aside and began to work and George, and it struck me, as I watched these operations, that those were much less civilized than most of us believe. Although no longer a long one among the huts from her father's tent, or bring her down with a blow on the head, she still followed the man who externally made her happy, and did not overexaggerated concerning the methods he employs to get her."  

In Landor's novel of 1920, The Old Sea King, Cleopatra Botanyone insists that it is preferable to be married in life. For another
suffered loss by anything. That 'sacred' means nothing to people who
enjoy the whole artificialized materiality of modern life. Even one
ought to be living in a cave, dressed in a homespun and growing
of the fruits of literally. "fiercely take in the novel, Ecclesiastical
liturgy. 653 Enter with bonus and bonus. He confirmed the idea of
and the figure and figure gave the impression of metallic visibility.
His 'face' features and heavy jaw were bolstered by their size could
and the thoughtful eye. 655 Main Milton had nothing of the
consideration and vitality of the 65. Those and which unto the latter
so completely into his capstone:

...main had nothing to corroborate him for his true,
spoil, Ecclesiastic honours'. Mr. Tennyson on the
other hand, had that 'face and manner of blood,
without which even the 'graceful bearing' in little
more than the consideration of the animal at the
expense of the man. 657

The Thersites Mandricho in (Brand's story) urge the credit the healthy
active takes to wearing clothes he develops skin diseases and his
health continues. 658 'Donkey' means 'clothes and ill-health.' 659
Tennyson, when asked to London, the home, given an overbearing display
of energy and pride than his Thersites. William Tennyson, hahemus
was mortally humiliated by a sense of being intrusted some-
thing more elemental and primitive than he either knew of or was
capable of himself. 659 After accepting his abandon ment Andreu perence
British Magyars whose 'primitive side' he succeeded in stimulating. 660

In his final Bequest from the cavity on, the complete gone against
prohibition, seduced 'concrete' for the hostility to baselines in the
myth these be living close to man, with all the 'prayer' it entailed,
on the reaction to the impossible ills he believed must have attended
those who originally attempted to adapt their lives to the use of fire.
Illness and disease arose from the abundance of the medicinal in

...
In view of the stationary mode of existence. A stationary native
then a people people have to live in the midst of their habitat,
the personal life leads to a "stationary" and debilitation of the
body, so engrossed with a life of habits. Such a change would not
be affected without serious results.

...ystericous ailments, particularly of the
stationary period, must have begun to appear
when man have found that the stationary life
modified the former race and regularity of their
functions, (child birth in particular) and
violent death and probably unhappiness and broken
men have been the result.697

Civilization, with its basic severe conditions for survival, made a
lower degree of vitality capable; whereas, clothing, by concealing the
defects of the worst co-ordinated individuals, led to dynamic
resulting.698

Prophylactic, and therapeutics, carried a significant element of
Boedeviosc writings. He believed Conservatives must concern themselves
with the health of the people because no people can enjoy a new
outlook that does not possess bodily stability. Health, "is primarily
a question of sane living, of healthy food properly prepared from the
food of life to the end."699 the commercialization and industrial
preparation of England's staple foodstuffs caused the seeds of ill-
health and debility in every fresh generation of humanity that grew
to maturity. A good deal of the insanity, despondency, nervousness,
mental trouble, and general constitutional feebleness of modern times
were due, according to Boedeviosc, to the many severe and obvious
disorders of the digestive system which he believed are caused by
unsound feeding. Consequently, the Conservative party...

...with the view of protecting and preserving
the weaker elements of the nation, [should
institute] a thorough examination... of the
conditions prevailing, especially in the market
of artificial, proprietary, and all industrially

440
proposed form, of whom the report practically
accepts the relative verbatim. The account should
be neither part in the south of Vermont interesting
nor the health in particular, the comparatively
proposed foundation are being considered on a large
basis. Yet this position may well be carried
of alleged relationship residues and objects
441
have seen [blank to add] but rather than demand to any such scientific auxiliary to collective health, he preferred never to read. He said, Lord Chiddingly, pointed to ill-health as one of the principal causes of disorder and unrest. He maintained that debilitated people cannot take anything but a jaundiced view of the best conditioned state, and that the first step, therefore, was to secure the proletariat's health which would once again feel the joie de vivre. The simplest means of doing this was to reform the food conditions of the country.

Mr. Truck, in the Goddess that Grow Up, contrasted the parishes, a debating society, by proclaiming that before smallpox vaccination although thousands died those who remained were able to live with their constitutions unimpaired and uncontaminated. Only a few working men, at the back of the village hall, applauded him, whilst Canon Tueranno, who Mr. Truck opposed, thought he had all the 'best people' with him. Mr. Truck proceeded, with apoplectic fury, that vaccination was undermining the primitive and natural health of our bodies:

'...Who knows to what extent modern debility, the general lack of robust health - I do not speak of actual disease and illness - but the general absence of buoyant, wanton health and vigour, may not be due partly to the repeated poisoning in small doses of every generation of babies as they arrive?'

He quoted a passage from Herbert Spencer to the effect that the propagation of subdued forms of constitutional disease through vaccination had been dynogenic. The audience was even more shocked when he frankly stated that the reduction of mortalities from smallpox vaccinations would lower the vital resistance of the race to disease.

It never occurred to them, especially doctors, that what was needed was a rule of life and a constitution that could dispense with medicine altogether.
Indulged with the elaborate and exhausting intricacies of illness:

...the luxurious and intricate postillaritions of its effects, like the opulent ramified growths of our tropical jungles, that ultimately diffuse its insidious tendrils into every nook and cranny, every crevice, of a whole domain. It does not require to be virulent to achieve this end; it needs only to be chronic, undulating, fluctuating hopelessly from day to day, without respite, without one intercalated movement of the state approaching good health, or normal well-being.

It blights the lives of those who witness it, but, under the process of steady attrition which day by day weaves down all sympathy, all capacity for interest and compassion, those gradually develops the beneficent safeguard of indifference. It is but the natural protective growth that health builds up against the devastating influence of a corrupting environment.

In Ludovici's novel of 1924, The Rising of Von Jura, Frances Yardgrove, the consumptive son of a well-known manufacturer of proprietary food, Sir Jonathan Yardgrove, is informed by Dr. Halp, a vicar of rural Sussex, in a plaintive tone, that the local inhabitants 'live' on tinned food and margarine. Dr. Halp, whose therapy he seeks, proclaims that consumption is caused by either the inability of the alimentary canal to assimilate the foods necessary for the body, or else it has not been given this vital food in sufficient quantity or quality. His explanation for the high incidence of tuberculosis in Sussex is the letter:

'...Not fresh air and sunshine, not Devon mists and early groves, but the correction of the vice in your alimentary canal, Sir [Frances Yardgrove] is the leastest and most important organ in your body—followed by plenty of good food, and the ultimate desperate cry of 'pox' from your stomach.'

Accordingly, Frances Yardgrove's tuberculosis is cured. Dr. Halp explains to Gilbert Kilburn, his protégé, that carturisation diminishes the
vital quality of milk, and the boiling of milk reduces its vital qualities further.\(^\text{715}\) Later in the novel, when Gilbert is taken prisoner of war in World War I, Dr. Hale recommends that he eat new vegetables, denuded lawn and common green to correct his deficient diet.\(^\text{716}\) When the war ends, Gilbert returns, he and Dr. Hale try a farm to produce unpasteurized milk for those still aced in body.\(^\text{717}\) On the occasion of Gilbert's becoming the unofficial Conservative candidate for the northern division of London, he restates his doctor's ideals:

>'Our cry', Gilbert exclaimed, 'has got to be 'True Food for the People' and the suppression of all fraudulent advertisements which lead the ignorant to purchase vast quantities of commercial and industrial foods that are either worthless or actually harmful, and to have to make it quite plain that our objective in the improvement of the national physique -- not by the doubtful and expensive method of increasing the number of doctors, or welfare centres, or Health Ministry officials, but by placing health within the reach of all in the nation's breakfast, dinner and supper tables.'\(^\text{718}\)

One of Ludovici's most significant books on prophylaxis is \textit{Peposant from the Gods} or, the complete came against prohibition of 1921. It arose from a debate held at the concrete Club in London on November 5, 1919, to which Ludovici was invited in order to oppose the Bishop of Willesden, who was to advocate the prohibition of alcohol in Britain.\(^\text{719}\) Ludovici interprets the myth of Prometheus scholastically. The myth points to Prometheus's theft of fire as having been a calamity. Not until Dionysius appeared with his dispensing of fermented liquors were the appalling evils resulting from Prometheus's theft of fire production mitigated and neutralized. Prometheus versus Dionysius in the theme of the book.\(^\text{720}\) Ludovici thought there were cogent reasons for believing that the right to fetch fire from the 'gods', the superior Ozo-Teigsom rex, must have been subject to various rules laid down by Zoro and his wise counsellors.\(^\text{721}\)
a lightheadedness and the body, the inferior ventre, was probably more of the inferior virtue of the chymosome layered by bone surrounding the chest-cavity, not performed particularly by locating the chymosome of the body. With the neck to produce

fate, the inferior ventre, presumably not believing or having at a matter of course, and in their heads, occurred. Above all, with the advent of cooking, food lost proportion without which life cannot be maintained as a healthy or happy individual, or cannot be maintained at all. Scarcely quickly not. The Holy Catholic Church, in its incomparable spirit respecting the material side of human life, was the first institution to point to the necessity of a partially raw food diet as an essential measure for the years. But, with the advent of the Protestant Church, the Catholic Church relaxed the exigent of its central nutritive in Protestant countries, the reformers divorced themselves from those religious observances and ceremonies for which their now revolutionary programme offered them no adequate substitution. Anon recounted the personal experience to substantiate his thesis regarding the detrimental effect of cooking on food. First, when he used himself of incipient pneumonia by treating himself as for a mild convulsion. No to plenty of uncooked vegetables and used himself of his affliction. No believed people could have their teeth from pneumonia by treating themselves as for a mild convulsion, and removing themselves from a high to a low altitude. Second, when at the battle of the Somme in World War I the food for his battery in the Royal Field Artillery was inevitably burned, and the men suffered from boils and scalds. The dietary regimen he identified was that of the prehistoric man who, he believed, probably ate raw root, various grain, seeds, bosses, roots, fruits, wild honey, and drank the milk of wild cattle and wild mares. Primitive men must have been totally harmed at the physical colisation.
which fell upon that after the first indescribable application
of fire to foods

...those of us who still have a clean breath
and those who are still robust and healthy
enough to feel a fresh delicious and enlivening
scent of the 'vitality,' and 'vital force,' and the well-rounded
and the hardy, are quickly the working the
mastication and the physiological hunger and
boiling with unquenched hunger, will know
that I mean.753

These ills gradually ceased from the moment when Moses gave his only
teachings as by tonsil, the god Dionysius, as a Saviour to mankind.751
Like the Christian God and the Saviours, they are frequently identified
with another.752 Dionysius was the guardian deity of the
productive, invigorating, overflowing and intoxicating; power of
life — vine.753 Exotic origin vouchsafed him as a deified ancestor
who discovered the panacea against most of the ills and woes resulting
from the unlimited use of fire.754 The old world discussing Dionysius to be
a divinity of the kind resulting from ancestor worship, unlike Moses,
a divinity resulting from the deification of a member of a superior
race: Dionysius appeared long after all traces of the original superior
and inferior races had disappeared, when the Aryans had absorbed the
Iro-Edenshenas. Semitic was probably a simple Greek maiden, just as the
Virgin Mary was a simple Jewish maiden.755 Dionysius discovered for
the Greeks an art of life which increased their capacity for life.756
The great virtue of the cordials introduced by Dionysius was that they
made it possible for men to resist deficiency diseases induced by
cooked food, and they also enabled him to do this at all times of the
year and in any climate.757 Leonardo believed the great decline in
resilience offered to disease in Europe during the preceding three
centuries; which had made careful sanitation and disinfectants of all
kinds an essential part of the life of modern men that without them he
could not survive, was due to a proportionate decline in the quality
of fermented liquors, and in the amount of fermented liquor consumed.
by the head of the people.\textsuperscript{175} The evils of drunkenness in England were the direct result of the poisoning of the once pure ale that made England what she was at her zenith in the sixteenth and early seventeenth centuries.\textsuperscript{176} The old ale of the Roman age and later periods kept men extremely healthy and virile. Romans de-vitalized ale by tolerating an adulterant, hops, from which lupulla, an aphrodisiac, is extracted.\textsuperscript{177} The leading features of Dionysius's "therapeutic doctrine" were: that wine is a good tonic; in a valuable stimulant, both of the mind and body; it is an excellent aid to digestion; it is a natural aphrodisiac; it allows of the benefits derived from fruit being enjoyed at any time and in any climate because fermentation produces vitamins it incorporates for a diet that is deficient through the exposure of food to heat.\textsuperscript{178} The Prometheus cairez, by occasioning the cooking of food, was the cause of appalling tribulations for the women of the ancestors of the ancient Greeks, because of the coldness of their climate. "Life was a harsh at which their vigorous taste supplied in vain endeavour to discover the sweet kernel."\textsuperscript{179} The undisciplined women depicted by Greek art as taking part in the festivals of the Dionysus who carried a wooden phallic in their baskets filled with fruit,\textsuperscript{180} and even ate raw meat as part of the festival, is explicable as their wild gratitude to Dionysus:\textsuperscript{181}, "It was Dionysus against Prometheus, life against death, the crook obelisk against impotence, sickness and disease. And Dionysius triumphant! No wonder the women were so gratified; no wonder they were so wild."\textsuperscript{182} It was the first renaissance of health, beauty, vigour, and joyful life. Dionysus so neutralized the evils of Prometheus civilization as to make life not only possible, but also joyful and vigorous.\textsuperscript{183} Judovici thought there was a vital meaning in the Grotesque's representation of women with child. They were pre-Prometheus who knew of no sickness or ugliness, and to whom "the
promise of life, bigness with a guarantee of the multiplication of life, was the most beautiful thing of all." Ludovici saw a deep love and enthusiasm in regard to life, a fundamental recognition of all that life, and the multiplication of life, means. They did not question the value of life. Ludovici concludes that the attempt to prohibit alcoholic beverages in Britain is a retrograde step to the grey misery of a bureaucratic civilization, without the "corporal safeguards" of the doctrine of Dionysius who enabled the ancient Greeks to be drunk with life.

Ludovici called 'good' all that which makes life desirable. He thought that bigness the desirability of lust, motherhood, reproduction and fertility, 'good' must refer to reverence for the body and a proposition in favour of health and prejudice against sickness.

We also call good the loathing of ugliness and the desire to suppress it; we therefore approve of deep suspicion towards ugliness and illness, and towards everything and everybody that attempts to give ugliness and illness fine sounding and euphemistic names.

We call 'bad' the finding of erroneous or exterminating circumstances for ugliness, botchedness and sickness. False teeth and spectacles should be regarded with repugnance. The moment physiological serenity goes and a function ceases to be a pleasure the value of life obsoletes. The development of all influences tending to deteriorate the body, especially scientific techniques and substitutes tending to supersede it, like wheelchairs, false limbs, and the like, must be prohibited. We should reactivate life and grow reality...because, having restored our bodies and solved once more the secret of their movements working, we shall no longer be in the difficult dilemma of certain who, with neglected and badly functioning physiques, try to anticipate here on earth the pain rites and pursuits of the immortal world.
Ladovici thought that the nation, especially working-class mothers, should be thoroughly re-educated concerning food values. The subject of nutrition should form an item in every school curricula and a special section for the child should be taught by public proclamations. He advocated legislation that would make it impossible for English unions to buy inferior foods of all kinds until a standard was established regarding staple articles of diet, and a severe system of nutrition for timbred, preserved, and proprietary foods.

Ladovici decided modern medicine for its belief that a disease can be satisfactorily treated by Susanising its symptoms; the *bacteriological* belief that the production and multiplication of artificial aids is one of the directions in which medical science can improve.

The object of medical research should have been to make medicine unnecessary by understanding the nature of disease as wrong functioning, not merely of a part, but of the whole organism. Artificial aids should be condemned, and bodily views remedied by correcting faulty functioning.

"...The proper procedure would obviously be to eliminate with glucose and artificial aids in general, and to re-educate the faulty organ -- whether it was an eye or a kidney or a heart -- to function correctly."

The individual should be "naturally" trained by an improvement in food condition; a better understanding of hygiene, the restoration of breast feeding as a universal custom and duty, the return of the masses of the population to healthy out-of-door occupations, and the raising of the general tone and resistance of the individual by re-educating him in the correct use of his body. Will and self-discipline, rather than drugs, are the only effective cure of illness. Ladovici's *Health and Nutrition through Self-Discipline* of 1933 is devoted to the latter. He suggests that mankind is approaching an evolutionary cataclysm as ours in an epoch of extreme maladaptation. The human
organism is analogous to a machine, faulty or undergoing faulty functioning.\(^764\) The fact of evolution would incline one to expect that the use of an evolved mechanism with its evolved nervous controls is not fixed for all time and in therefore, susceptible to ill-usage.\(^765\) Evolutionary processes do not possess either the infallibility or the reliability that brain surgery possesses. By far the greater portion of living species are the degenerate survivors of superior ancestors, and civilised man himself, except for a few outstanding individual cases by no means a successfully adapted animal.\(^766\) It cannot be claimed that man's acuteness over himself and his environment has kept pace with the complex changes which civilisation has introduced into the modern world. Nor is it apparent from the results achieved that it is safe to leave these problems created by change to blind evolutionary processes to solve.\(^767\) Civilisation introduced constantly changing conditions which precluded satisfactory adaptations and the imposition of less severe standards for survival, not merely as the result of modern surgery, but also as a result of life's no longer depending a rigid and definite level of efficiency.\(^768\) Only when civilised men assert themselves by correct physical functioning can they be rejuvenated both physically and mentally.\(^769\) An enhancement of general tone and vigour is the only remedy for neurosis and psychoses.\(^770\) But, the correct use of self is not a pleasant pastime, like golf, bridge, or chess, rather it is the most exacting, rigorous, and humiliating experience a man can undergo...

...For while it holds out vistas of the heights to which a man can attain if only he applies himself and concentrates, it also exposes him to himself as a creature of automatically directed thoughts, as essentially the thrall of his unconscious, that it constitutes the foremost rebuke that could possibly be administered to his pride. Through it he soon reveals the extremely thin partition that once separated him from the boxers' time mental case, and as he struggles to realize it in modern medicine there is anything more than a speech alone that
Formerly distinguished him from the highest, outstanding or even the beauuts of the field.\[17\]

The very notion rests in Harwood's 'The Moral Illusion of Health.'\[18\]

A contribution to psychological theory, of 1949, it suggests that the

"we are all about as people who yield without hesitation to these

impulses, and who yet fail adequately to build through each day the

life forces within them."\[19\] If anywhere in one life has died or is

contoured or reduced in trace, because it has not been adequately

removed every day, that part of one will become imperfectly adjusted

to the forces of environment and even to the exigencies of the other

life forces in one's body, with the result that illness occurs.\[20\]

Only a good initial endowment, good habits of life, diet, hygiene, and

correct use of self, can renew life adequately every day. Doctors must

learn that illness is often the outcome of a routine of life that has

failed adequately to renew life. Individuals define health as

...that state of life in which there is not only a favorable initial endowment for adjusting the

forces of the organism to those of the outside world, but in which the vitality in every part of the organism is also being adequately renewed

every day for this adjustment.\[21\]

At the very root of life, in the principle of the survival of the

fittest, nature has implanted a dual control of bodily mechanisms

which served the purposes of individual self-preservation. The moment

disaster occurred consciousness interfered with the instinctive and

traditional optimal controls of the species, and saved the situation.

The very scheme of organic evolution presupposes such a dual control of vital organisms.\[22\]

However, it is in this dual control, with the exigency of this possibility of conscious interference that error in the

use of self may find its opportunity, as it bred with modern men. Other

events had not succumbed to error because of their standardizations
A stable environment in which only those who evolve optimal controls survive, and reproduce their kind, rigid elimination of all those who, in the process of adaptation, fail to evolve optimal controls.\(^\text{776}\)

Elimination does not apply to humanity the same way.

Reactions such as fight,包括 autocidal controls of all kinds, and other changes to the way of life entailed by civilization, have repeatedly confronted man with fresh problems in the way of self.

Not only did the environment come to be stable, but rigid elimination of failures ceased to operate with unerring regularity, especially through the provision of artificial aids to the weakened.\(^\text{777}\)

However, consciousness which nature leaves in part control of our bodily adjustments and muscular coordination, in a double-edged sword. Although it may introduce error, it is man's only means of eliminating error and reworking correct use of self.\(^\text{778}\)

Correct body use can only be achieved by the daily psycho-physical experiences of using oneself under correct discipline, until the new and correct reflexes governing the supporting and locomotory reflexes become conditioned.\(^\text{779}\)

Parturition, for example, should be 'normalized'; anaesthetics should be withdrawn, and it should lose its present "torture-chamber features."\(^\text{780}\)

A vital bodily function such as child-birth should be pleasurable,\(^\text{781}\) as Sudovisi believed it was among primitive women.\(^\text{782}\) He thought latent neptismia could be avoided by a dietary regimen which reduced vulvæm.\(^\text{783}\)

By faulty bodily coordination, the normal and natural relations of the organs, their condition, and tone, may be adversely modified.\(^\text{784}\)

Through the wrong use of self an abdominal wall may say, abdominal viscera may be displaced, and a thorax may expand so inadequately as to restrict the respiratory function, all of which hinder the course of pregnancy and parturition.\(^\text{785}\)

Sudovisi claimed, in innumerable cases, to have witnessed the improvement of the respiratory function and the
increase of thoracic capacity, under control of bodily
condition. It is usual a case of chronic medicine to
relieve that torture in the cause of illness. By means of it the
vitality and insulance of the sick were restored, and the medical
procedure elucidated. However, the sick only became, new, still,
and went in an innocent way, that to the cause of their illness.
Only painstaking self-discipline can purge them of their condition.

I adulterate's ideal was that mankind should become an independent of
expert medicine and surgery to attend to their actual state.

I adulterate believed, from personal experience, that the distress caused
by a long history of stamina, with the daily use of irritant
capacities, is an important factor in the genesis of romance. Indeed,
all romance, which psychologists describe as of purely psychogenie
origin, begin with a long period of psycho-physical distress.

Inevitably, the 'gangrene' of modern medicine relieved this
and the sense of the need for action had made no progress in
the knowledge of a sound bodily regimen. Have vigorous physical
exercise by the sense of the people of modern England would, believed
I adulterate, relieve them of their world demand for notatives,
suppression, and other forms of medication.

Conclusions and Implications

There are two unequivocal conclusions to this chapter, and preceding
chapters. the first conclusion is that I adulterate's social and political
thought is fascistic. His program to argue into England overthrew
the political existence of the party system which he intended to
succeed, the legitimacy of fascists. In this chapter, I have discussed
his advocacy of slaughter, a notion which is liberal; his advocacy of
revolution and populism, notions which are necessarily his advocacy

453
of the biotechne phobia, a notion which is central to both
empaths and totalitarianism. Whilst in this chapter, and
preceding chapters, I have discussed Ludovici's advocacy of
authoritarianism, apartheid, and other authoritarian forms of
political thought, during and after World War II, Ludovici
advocated hereditary rule, and political thought embraced
collective leadership; traditionalist paternalism; totalitarian
executive constitutional government. The second conclusion is that
in Ludovici's social and political thought communism is
compatible with fascism.

Nevertheless, during and after World War II, Ludovici did make
several unconvincing attempts to exonerate himself of his identity as
a fascist, although, the ideological character of his political
writings never changed. In July 1941, he claimed that he had always
advocated hereditary rule, because his authority is always
accepted and extends beyond jealousy and envy. His thought disregards
of this truth was a fundamental flaw of fascism.

Force the ***obediency and stupidity of the
English Tory who can so far misunderstand his
position as to assume it with that a fascist or
fascist or any other political position who believes
in the sudden emergence of a race, a party, a class,
or a group that can save mankind, or even save a
particular nation.

Ludovici proclaimed that it was on the question of elite selection that
biotechne, and himself, would come face to face with any convictions with
fascism. It thought his adherence to biotechne's "aristocratic ideal"
was sufficient to exonerate him from the application of "fascist".

However, by maintaining that the true Tory position rested on a
belief in "biotechne", whilst attempting to discover his identity as a
fascist, Desde his claim to being a biotechne conservative unconvin-
ing, as it always was.?
Judovici’s most vigorous attempt to divorce himself of this identity as a Jew is in his article “Exterior Society’s Values,” which he contributed to a symposium on the future of the Jewish people, *Grazia Antica*, in 1965. The latter consisted of articles mostly by prominent Jews which expressed abhorrence at the humanistic and extermination of Jews in World War II. In his contribution, Judovici says that it is historically wrong to attribute to the Jews that state of affairs and practices which interiorizes, inspired by the sentimental individualism of the English, ultimately brought into being. However, the fact remained that the Jews who were re-admitted to England from 1655, “stood in this state of affairs [interiorizes] and in these practices, emotional conditions which suited both their temperament and character.”

Judovici maintains that the English throughout their history have been enflamed by a nationalistic and isolationist spirit, leading to express itself especially in what he calls “particularism,” a term he adopts from Henri de Brunville’s *Histoire de la Revolution Anglaise*. “Particularism” is a temper of aloofness which blocks upon the rest of the community from the narrow angle of the family, and recognizes few social obligations. Henri de Brunville claimed that it was a product of the life led by the ancestors of a section of the Saxon people in their ancient home, the Normandy Cjorda. Judovici endorses Henri de Brunville’s racistist thesis. Only the presence of a few patriarchal elements in England, like the Anglos and Normans, accounts for their particularism, though feeble resistance to extreme particularism developed. Truthfully, the Jews, like the Normans, had a part which influenced them in a particularistic direction. Their encounters led the life of success and acquired the same traits as typified that branch of the Saxon people which colonized large part of England. Therefore, to unwind with the efficiency of the Jews in a particularistic
cultural, when one is a particularist and one's own people come
themselves largely responsible for the creation of that culture.
"In about as reasonable as for a lesser at a gene to share the
winners, when its principles and rules are of his own making."
When, in a particularist society, things inevitably go wrong, a
minority easily discerned by the mass, who are doing conspicuously
well, are not unaccountably singled out as the cause of the general
distress:

Besides, it is in the interest even of non-Jews,
certainly of those who happen to stand high and
dry above the more intolerable conditions imposed by
particularism, to direct the attention away from
themselves onto a body which can be truthfully
designated at least a part cause of the trouble. It
is obvious that this is only a half-truth.

Ludovici rebuked the extreme English anti-Semite who would reject
do Bouvrielle's thesis and claim that particularism becomes paramount
in England owing to misconception between the English and Jews,
because of the difficulty of selecting anyone for benediction if
"Jewish blood" was widely disseminated in England before 1656, which
he did not refute. Ludovici still believed mental and physical
health depended on racial purity. However, as the greatest
random-breeding in the modern world, the mixing of wholly different
types and stocks within the same people or nation, was regarded with
complete equanimity, Ludovici thought it would be "like straining at
a gnat" to make any special point of avoiding mixture with peoples
who are not hereditarily true Englishmen, such as the Jews. Besides,
an orthodox medicine and portion did not appreciate the extent to
which ideal health "probably depends" on standardization of type,
the "problem" of the Jews on the biological side, "must remain
unsolved and be left to the taste of the individual in either
community." Ludovici, at his most tolerant, thought only the social
and political solution of the Jewish "problem" allows of precise
statement, and with this he concludes. He believed capitalism, as the nineteenth century knew it, was irrevocably doomed.

Ludovici thought the only hope for the future lay in the transmision of England's deeply particularistic culture into one essentially mutualistic, accompanied by a wholesale transvaluation of the values that are associated with a particularistic culture.

If the Jews did not settle elsewhere, which Ludovici preferred, they must collaborate with the non-Jews about them in reinventing, amidst the decadent particularistic culture, values that are independent of wealth.

They [the Jews] must be fully prepared to take severe measures against those individuals in their own people who, willy-nilly, refuse to abandon those instincts and gifts which have made them so ordinarily successful in particularist societies - the instinct to make private property a wholly private and unrelated phenomenon, the instinct to drive a hard bargain with the ignorant and needy, the instinct to discover where need in pressing in order to turn it to personal profit, the impulse even to create such a need where none exists and to forestall a needy purchaser, and, above all, the demagogic shrewdness to identify themselves with the non-Jewish clamour for liberty, when all this liberty may well be in the absence of wise hindrances to the ruthless and automatic action of competition or supply and demand.

The Jews who accepted the above should be prepared to banish those who do not. Only then, Ludovici believed, could the Jewish 'problem' be solved. The latter is the closest Ludovici ever came to repudiating fascism, but it still bears its unmistakable traits. Besides, it was probably prompted by expediency. He lamented, in October 1957, that the anti-democracy of both the fascist nations and the English 'right' sufficed for their complete identity to be assumed by the 'aesthetic minds of the crowds in Parliament (including Ministers of State) and, above all, of the crowds of the general public outside.' Ludovici claimed that owing to his lifelong connection with the English 'right' he was subjected not only to suspicion but 'many indignation' at the hands of the authorities in World War II. He recollected
bitterly that the Chief Constable of Suffolk, Colonel A.P. Jenkinson, interrogated him for a whole morning, "because he had heard from some other fool the profoundly suspicious fact that I had translated Hitler's into English."000

However, the above examples of Ludovici's attempts to discover his identity as a fascist are only significant because of their uniqueness and the surrounding circumstances that brought them about. They are the only ones that can be called from his writings. Despite World War II, Ludovici never changed his ideological stance during or after it. His attempt to transform conservatism into fascism never worked. In his introduction to his 'Two Centuries of Fascism', he wrote:

A text book for reading, in 1915, he had not found it necessary to deport a "hairy-backed" from the position he originally held.

Everything that happened and everything he read in the interval had only strengthened his original convictions.009 Indeed, until his demise, Ludovici continued elaborating the same ideas with which he launched his career as a fascioist ideologue over six decades before.

Chosen only to punctuate the remarkable number of articles which he contributed to the South African Observer from its inception in May 1955 until his last contribution in May 1970, eleven months before his death at the age of eighty-nine, to appreciate the uniqueness of his fascioist convictions. Even the very impulse that impelled him into a career as a writer and fascioist ideologue, his
concern at the decay of art and culture, did not merely persist but intensified in some of the last articles he contributed to the South African Observer in the late 1960s. Ludovician lamented the difficulty of converting the post-war generation to familiar "the servility which the crowd of opposing Monists has implanted in the present generation." While, in his posthumous book, Detraction for Malcolm of 1961, which is essentially devoted to Nietzscheanism, he expressed anger at the difficulty he had encountered throughout his life in getting Nietzscheanism adopted in England; "Sentimentality, the power of the Church, the indoctrination of canturies, and the influence of the sickly and defective themselves, were too formidable." He was a failed man. Throughout his lifetime Ludovician was either dismissed as an "earthly ignoramus" or, more kindly, a brilliant writer with an unfortunate tendency to run to exaggeration and absurdity; "All that he needs to give him his proper place in literature is an accession of moderation and common sense." He reflected on his failure to influence the British public and blamed it on the control of mass communications by the Establishment:

"For fifty years I have been engaged in trying to enlighten the British public about the pitfalls to which their lack of psychological insight constantly exposes them, and I may safely claim that I have probably had more articles and letters destroyed or returned by newspaper editors on the score of "lack of space" than any writer in Christianity. For nothing — absolutely nothing — is ever allowed to reach the eyes of the British public that the Establishment thinks would not..."

In the next, and final, Chapter, I shall briefly study Ludovici's political affiliations. It will be maintained that they, like Ludovici, were fascists, and shared a common attempt to render conservatism consonantable with fascism.
Notes to Chapter 5: The World Regenerated.


2. ibid., p.87.

3. ibid., pp.95-96.


5. ibid., p.97.


8. ibid., p.12.


10. ibid., p.16.


12. ibid., p.18.

13. ibid., p.20.

14. ibid.

15. ibid., p.21.

16. ibid., p.22.

17. ibid., p.24.

18. ibid., p.25.

19. ibid., p.27.


21. ibid., p.254.

22. ibid., p.266.


24. ibid., p.vi.

25. ibid., p.6.

26. ibid., p.12.

27. ibid., p.14.
Notes to Chapter 5


29. ibid., p.6.


31. ibid., p.xiv.


34. ibid., p.199.

35. ibid., pp.201-202.

36. idem., Man's Descent from the Gods; or, the complete case against probilition (London: William Heinemann, 1921), p.238.

37. ibid., p.247.


39. ibid., p.359.

40. idem., The Night-Hoers; or, the case against birth-control, and an alternative (London: Herbert Jenkins, 1928), p.256.


42. ibid., p.5.

43. ibid., p.6.

44. ibid., p.8.


49. ibid., p.488.

50. ibid., pp.488-489.


53. ibid., 491.

54. ibid., pp.491-492.

55. ibid., p.492.


57. Anthony Mario Ludovici, ibid.


60. ibid., pp.48-49.

61. ibid., p.89.


63. ibid., p.8.


67. ibid., pp.243-244.

68. idem., Catherine Doyle: the romance of a thrice-married lady (London: Hutchinson, [1922]), p.36.


70. ibid., pp.110-111.


Notes to Chapter 5


77. ibid., p.232.

78. ibid., p.233.

79. ibid., p.234.

80. ibid., pp.234-235.

81. ibid., p.235.

82. ibid., p.236.

83. ibid., p.237.

84. ibid., p.238.


86. ibid., p.198.

87. ibid., p.200.

88. Martin Luther, no source given; quoted in Anthony Mario Ludovici, ibid., p.201.

89. Anthony Mario Ludovici, ibid,

90. ibid., pp.201-202.


93. ibid., pp.50-51.

94. Friedrich Nietzsche, no source given; quoted in Anthony Mario Ludovici, ibid., p.51.


96. ibid., p.324.

97. ibid., p.326.

98. ibid., pp.346-347.

99. ibid., p.347.

100. ibid., p.384.
Notes to Chapter 5


102. ibid., p.613.


104. ibid., p.3.

105. ibid.

106. ibid., pp.4-5.

107. ibid., pp.116-117.

108. ibid., p.117.


110. ibid., p.230.

111. ibid., p.232.


115. ibid., p.475.


118. ibid., p.39.


120. ibid., pp.56-57.


122. ibid., p.103.

123. ibid., p.130.

124. ibid., p.159.

125. ibid., pp.199-200.
127. ibid., p.262.
128. ibid., pp.274-275.
129. ibid., p.281.
130. ibid., pp.291-292.
131. ibid., p.304.
133. ibid., pp.191-192.
134. ibid., p.193.
135. ibid., p.194.
136. idem., The Taming of Don Juan (London: Hutchinson, [1924]), p.93.
139. ibid.,
140. ibid., p.344.
141. ibid., p.349.
142. idem., The Night-Hoers; or, the case against birth-control and an alternative (London: Herbert Jenkins, 1928), pp.50-51.
143. ibid., p.61.
144. ibid., p.250.
145. ibid., pp.252-253.
146. ibid., pp. 253-254.
148. ibid., pp.29-30.
151. ibid., p.66.
152. ibid., p.90.
153. ibid., p.103.
154. ibid., p.130.

156. ibid., p.152.

157. ibid., p.154.

158. ibid., p.203.

159. ibid., pp.212-213.

160. ibid., p.213.

161. ibid., p.379.

162. ibid., p.383.


166. ibid., p.93.

167. ibid., pp.115-116.

168. ibid., p.130.

169. ibid., p.137.

170. ibid., p.140.

171. ibid., p.142.

172. ibid., pp.144-145.

173. ibid., p.145.

174. ibid., pp.146-147.

175. ibid., pp.148-149.

176. ibid., p.149.

177. ibid., p.168.


182. ibid., p.317.

183. ibid., p.315.


188. ibid., p.182.

189. ibid., p. 189.


191. ibid., p.415.


193. ibid., p.222.


195. ibid., p.149.


197. ibid., p.12.

198. ibid., p.13.

199. ibid., p.121.

200. idem., The Goddess that Grew Up (London: Hutchinson, [1922]), p.27.

201. ibid., p.267.


203. ibid., p.38.
Notes to Chapter 5


205. ibid., p.130.

206. ibid., pp.130-131.

207. ibid., p.199.

208. ibid., p.236.


211. *idem.*, *Man's Descent From the Gods; or the complete case against prohibition* (London: William Heinemann, 1921), p.212.

212. ibid., pp.212-213.

213. ibid., p.215.

214. ibid.

215. ibid., p.216.

216. ibid., p.217.

217. ibid., pp.218-219.

218. ibid., p.220.


221. ibid., p.28.

222. ibid., p.29.

223. ibid., pp.30-31.

224. ibid., p.41.

225. ibid., p.42.

226. ibid., p.47.

227. ibid., p.56.

228. ibid., p.60.

229. ibid., p.68.

230. ibid., p.81.

231. ibid., p.166.

232. ibid., p.167.

234. ibid., p.189.


236. ibid., p.231.

237. ibid., p.237.

238. ibid., p.247.

239. ibid., pp.251-252.

240. ibid., p.264.

241. ibid., p.267.

242. ibid., p.269.

243. ibid., p.271.

244. ibid., p.276.

245. ibid., pp.277-278.

246. ibid., p.278.

247. ibid., pp.334-335.

248. ibid., p.335.

249. ibid., p.344.

250. ibid., pp.280-345.

251. ibid., p.307.

252. ibid., p.310.

253. ibid., pp.321-322.

254. ibid., p.324.

255. ibid., p.345.


257. ibid., p.376.


259. ibid., p.106.

260. ibid.

261. ibid., p.108.

262. ibid., p.116.
Notes to Chapter 5


268. ibid., p.16.

269. ibid., p.18.

270. idem., The Night-Hoers; or, the case against birth-control and an alternative (London: Herbert Jenkins, 1928), pp.54-55.

271. ibid., pp.58-59.

272. ibid., pp.124-125.

273. ibid., p.129.

274. ibid., p.137.

275. ibid., p.141.

276. ibid., p.223.

277. ibid., p.229.

278. ibid., pp.275-276.


280. ibid., p.397.

281. ibid., p.402.


283. ibid., pp.61-62.

284. ibid., p.93.


286. ibid., p.104.

287. ibid.

Notes to Chapter 5


292. *ibid.*, pp.151-152.


300. *ibid.*, p.162.


305. *ibid.*, p.89.


308. *ibid.*, p.221.


314. idem., The False Assumptions of "Democracy" (London: Heath Cranton, 1921), pp. 126-

315. ibid., p.127.

316. ibid., pp.127-128.

317. ibid., pp.130-131.

318. ibid., p.149.

319. idem., The Night-Hoers; or, the case against birth-control and an alternative (London: Herbert Jenkins, 1928), p.154.


329. ibid., p.262.


332. ibid., pp.18-19.
Notes to Chapter 5


334. ibid., p.230.

335. ibid., p.233.


337. ibid., pp.223-224.


340. ibid., p.409.

341. ibid., pp.433-434.

342. Friedrich Nietzsche, no source given; quoted in Anthony Mario Ludovici, ibid., p.434.


345. ibid., p.181.

346. ibid., p.184.

347. ibid., p.194.


349. ibid., pp.42-43.

350. ibid., p.44.

351. ibid., pp.46-47.

352. ibid., p.47.

353. ibid., p.56.

354. ibid., pp.56-57.

355. ibid., pp.90-91.


358. ibid., p.237.


360. ibid., p.305.


362. ibid., pp.110-111.

363. ibid., p.111.


365. ibid., p.340.

366. idem., The Night-Hoers; or the case against birth-control and an alternative (London: Herbert Jenkins, 1928), pp.75-76.

367. ibid., p.242.

368. ibid., p.248.

369. ibid., p.249.

370. ibid., pp.250-251.

371. ibid., p.256.

372. ibid., p.38.

373. ibid., pp.78-79.


376. ibid., p.212.

377. ibid., p.338.


379. ibid., p.31.

380. ibid., p.55.

381. ibid., p.275.

382. ibid., p.276-277.

383. ibid., p.277.

384. ibid., p.83.

385. ibid., pp.84-85.
Notes to Chapter 5


387. ibid., p.130.


389. ibid., p.285.

390. ibid., p.286.

391. ibid., p.287.

392. ibid., p.288 ff.


394. ibid., p.19.

395. ibid., p.20.

396. ibid., p.60.

397. ibid., p.64.


399. Anthony Mario Ludovici, ibid., p.73.

400. ibid., p.77.

401. ibid., p.78.

402. ibid., p.79.

403. ibid., p.168.

404. ibid., pp.248-262.

405. ibid., p.257.

406. ibid., p.259.

407. ibid., p.261.

408. ibid., p.262.


410. ibid., pp.44-60.

411. ibid., p.51.

412. ibid., pp.51-52.

413. ibid., p.52.

414. ibid., pp.55-56.

416. ibid.

417. ibid., p.57.

418. ibid., p.58.

419. ibid., p.59.

420. ibid., pp.62-63.

421. ibid., pp.64-65.

422. ibid., p.69.


424. ibid., pp.117-118.

425. ibid., p.118.

426. ibid., pp.119-120.

427. ibid., p.120.


429. ibid., p.12.

430. ibid., p.14.


432. ibid., p.15.


434. ibid., p.49.


438. ibid., p.x.

439. ibid., pp.2-3.

440. ibid., p.76.

441. ibid., p.244.

442. ibid., p.264.

443. ibid., p.329.
Notes to Chapter 5


450. *ibid.*, p.15.


452. *ibid.*, p.22.


454. *ibid.*, pp.245-246.


466. *ibid.*, p.92.


478
Notes to Chapter 5


469. idem., What Woman Wishes (London: Hutchinson, [1921]), p.32.

470. ibid., p.62.

471. idem., The False Assumptions of "Democracy" (London: Heath Cranton, [1921]), pp.118-119.

472. idem., Lysistrata; or, woman's future and future woman (London: Kegan Paul, [1924]), p.78.

473. ibid., p.108.


477. ibid., p.36.

478. ibid., p.38.


481. ibid., p.242.

482. idem., English Liberalism (London: English Array [1939]), pp.31-32.

483. ibid., p.32.


487. ibid., p.199.

488. ibid., p.201.

489. ibid.


491. ibid., p.9.


498. ibid., p.24.

499. ibid., pp.24-25.

500. ibid., p.39.

501. ibid., p.68.

502. ibid., pp.154-155.

503. ibid., pp.201-202.

504. ibid., p.220.

505. idem., *Catherine Doyle; the romance of a thrice-married lady* (London: Hutchinson, [1919]), p.19.

506. ibid., p.35.

507. ibid., pp.43-44.

508. ibid., p.59.

509. ibid., pp.127-128.

510. ibid., p.104.

511. ibid., p.138.

512. ibid., pp.151-152.


515. ibid., p.121.

516. ibid., p.122.

517. ibid., pp.123-124.

518. ibid., p.157.
521. ibid., pp.203-204.
522. ibid., pp.207-208.
523. ibid., p.208.
524. ibid., pp.208-209.
525. ibid., p.209.
527. ibid., p.212.
528. ibid., pp.231-232.
529. ibid., p.237.
530. ibid., p.248.
531. ibid., p.248.
532. ibid., p.280.
533. ibid., pp.283-284.
534. idem., The Taming of Don Juan (London: Hutchinson, 1924), p.90.
535. ibid., p.143.
536. ibid., p.144.
537. ibid., p.277.
538. ibid., p.301.
540. ibid., pp.122-123.
541. idem., Man's Descent from the Gods; or, the complete case against prohibition (London: William Heinemann, 1921), pp.242-243.
542. ibid., pp.244-245.
543. idem., The Night-Hoers; or, the case against birth-control and an alternative (London: Herbert Jenkins, 1928), p.67.
544. ibid., p.69.
545. ibid., p.151.
546. ibid., p.149.
547. ibid., p.252.
Notes to Chapter 5


550. ibid., p.18.

551. ibid., p.19.

552. ibid., pp.20-21.


556. Friedrich Nietzsche, no source given; quoted in Anthony Mario Ludovici, ibid., p.192.


558. ibid., pp.192-193.


560. ibid., p.85.

561. ibid., p.88.

562. ibid., p.95.

563. ibid., p.96.

564. ibid., p.97.

565. ibid., p.98.

566. ibid., p.99.

567. ibid., p.100.

568. ibid., pp.100-101.


571. ibid., p.106.

572. ibid., p.109.

573. ibid., p.111.

574. ibid., p.113.

575. ibid., pp.113-114.

482


581. ibid.


583. ibid., pp.200-201.

584. ibid., p.201.


588. ibid., p.1.

589. ibid., p.25.

590. ibid., p.263.

591. ibid., p.372.


593. ibid., p.7.

594. ibid., p.12.

595. ibid., p.15.

596. ibid., p.16.

597. ibid., p.17.

598. ibid., p.18.

599. ibid., pp.45-46.

600. ibid., p.81.

601. ibid., p.82.
Notes to Chapter 5


603. ibid., p.160.

604. ibid., p.162.

605. ibid., p.166.

606. ibid., pp.166-167.


608. ibid., p.183.

609. ibid., p.186.

610. ibid.

611. ibid.

612. ibid., p.190.

613. ibid., p.191.

614. ibid., p.195.

615. ibid., pp.206-207.

616. ibid.

617. ibid., p.207.


619. idem., What Woman Wishes (London: Hutchinson, 1921), p.82.

620. idem., The False Assumptions of "Democracy" (London: Heath Cranton, 1921), pp.77-94.

621. ibid., pp.78-79.

622. ibid., p.80.

623. ibid., p.82.

624. ibid., p.83.

625. ibid., p.85.

626. ibid., p.89.

627. ibid., pp.92-93.

628. ibid., p.214.

629. idem., The Night-Hoers; or, the case against birth-control and an alternative (London: Herbert Jenkins, 1928), p.243.

630. ibid., p.250.


633. ibid., p.10.

634. ibid.

635. ibid., p.11.


637. ibid., p.15.

638. ibid., p.18.

639. ibid., p.22.

640. ibid., pp.24-25.

641. ibid., p.25.


643. ibid., p.27.

644. ibid., p.28.

645. ibid., p.30.

646. ibid., p.31.

647. ibid., p.32.

648. ibid., pp.36-37.

649. ibid., p.41.

650. ibid., p.43.

651. ibid., p.44.

652. ibid., pp.45-46.

653. ibid., p.46.


Notes to Chapter 5


661. ibid., p.10.

662. ibid., p.13.

663. ibid., p.14.

664. ibid.

665. ibid., p.15.

666. ibid., pp.16-17.

667. idem., The Quest of Human Quality, How to rear leaders (London: Rider 1952) pp.69-70.


669. ibid., p.15.


671. ibid., p.19.


674. ibid., p.53.


676. idem., The False Assumptions of "Democracy" (London: Heath Cranton, [1921]), pp.212-213.


678. ibid., pp.110-111.


681. ibid., p.152.


683. idem., English Liberalism (London: English Array, [1939]), p.15.


686. ibid., pp.135-136.


689. ibid., pp.191-192.


692. ibid., p.39.


694. ibid., p.8.

695. ibid., pp.100-101.

696. ibid., p.174.

697. idem., Man's Descent from the Gods; or, the complete case against prohibition (London: William Heinemann, 1921), pp.76-77.


701. idem., Catherine Doyle; the romance of a thrice-married lady (London: Hutchinson, [1919]), pp.263-264.

702. ibid., pp.264-265.


704. ibid., p.16.


706. ibid., p.144.


709. ibid., pp.24-25.

710. ibid., p.28.

711. ibid., p.29.


713. ibid., pp.25-26.


715. ibid., p.49.

716. ibid., p.99.

717. ibid., p.282.

718. ibid., p.299.

719. *idem.*, *Man's Descent from the Gods; or, the complete case against prohibition* (London: William Heinemann, 1921), p.viii.

720. ibid., pp.x-xi.

721. ibid., p.58.

722. ibid.

723. ibid., pp.75-76.

724. ibid., pp.81-82.

725. ibid., p.82.

726. ibid., p.83.

727. ibid., p.95.

728. ibid., pp.112-113.

729. ibid., pp.110-111.

730. ibid., p.116.

731. ibid., p.118.

732. ibid., p.119.

733. ibid., p.122.

734. ibid., p.123.

735. ibid., p.125.

736. ibid., p.135.

737. ibid., pp.149-150.
Notes to Chapter 5


739. Ibid., p.152.

740. Ibid., p.155.

741. Ibid., pp.159-160.

742. Ibid., p.162.


744. Ibid., pp.164-165.

745. Ibid., p.165.

746. Ibid., p.170.

747. Ibid., p.197.

748. Ibid., p.199.

749. Ibid., p.242.


752. Ibid., p.24.

753. Ibid., p.99.

754. Ibid., pp.117-118.


756. Ibid., pp.347-348.


758. Ibid., p.318.

759. Ibid., p.320.

760. Ibid., p.348.


763. Ibid., p.ix.

764. Ibid., p.4.

765. Ibid., p.7.
Notes to Chapter 5


767. ibid., p.13.

768. ibid., pp.21-22.

769. ibid., p.22.

770. ibid., pp.116-117.

771. ibid., p.125.


773. ibid., pp.3-4.

774. ibid., p.7.

775. ibid., pp.142-143.

776. ibid., pp.143-144.

777. ibid., pp.144-145.

778. ibid., p.145.

779. ibid., p.151.


782. ibid., p.153.

783. ibid., p.42.

784. ibid., pp.212-213.

785. ibid., p.237.

786. ibid., p.238.


789. ibid., pp.301-302.


Notes to Chapter 5


795. ibid., p.174.

796. ibid., p.175.

797. ibid., pp.175-176.

798. ibid., p.176.

799. ibid., p.177.

800. ibid., pp.177-178.

801. ibid., p.178.

802. ibid., p.178.


804. ibid., p.182.

805. ibid., p.183.

806. ibid., p.184.

807. ibid.


CHAPTER 6. LUDOVICI'S POLITICAL AFFILIATIONS

The only evidence we possess that Ludovici had any connection with the Conservative Party is that he dined with A.J. Balfour on Friday March 3, 1922, at a dinner given by Lady Cunard in Carlton House Terrace, and that he found the experience disagreeable.\(^1\) If Ludovici was not a Conservative he was, however, the foremost ideologue of two fascist movements called the English Mistery and the English Array, a splinter movement of the former\(^2\), and associated with another, the Order of the Red Rose.

The English Mistery dated from a resolution of May 28, 1930, and a formal declaration made by the founders on September 10, 1930\(^2\). It was the personal inspiration of one man, William John Sanderson. The latter was born in 1883 in Newcastle and educated at Marlborough and Jesus College, Cambridge, read for the Bar and was called by the Inner Temple in 1906. He joined the North-Eastern Circuit but decided to go over to the Chancery side. At Lincoln's Inn he became associated with Crawford Cree, another member of the North-Eastern Circuit who had abandoned Common Law work. The latter, Sanderson and Lord Willoughby de Broke, allying themselves to no political party, founded their own political movement called the Order of the

\(^{\text{\(\text{\textsuperscript{\(3\)}}\)}}\text{The following publications of Anthony Mario Ludovici were addressed to the English Mistery, or developed out of speeches that he originally gave to them as contributions to their political doctrine: The Sanctity of Private Property, (London: Heath Cretton, 1932); The Secret of Laughter, (London: Constable, 1932); Health and Education through Self-Mastery, (London: Watts & Co., 1933); Violence, Sacrifice and War, (London: St. James' Kin of the English Mistery, 1933); Creation or Recreation, (London: The First or St. James' Kin of the English Mistery, 1934); Recovery. The quest of regenerate national values, (London: St. James' Kin of the English Mistery, 1935). He addressed English Liberalism, (London: English Array, 1939) to the English Array. Furthermore, Ludovici contributed copiously to the pamphlets, leaflets, and newspapers, of both the English Mistery and the English Array.\)
Rod Rose in 1913 which continued publishing their doctrine throughout World War I until 1923. However, Crawford Cree was killed and Lord Willoughby de Broke died soon after peace was signed. Their object was militant national regeneration and the English History recognised them as concerned: "to promulgate and develop those principles which later led to the foundation of the English Mistery." 3

The significance of Ludovici's association with the Order of the Red Rose is that it sought, like Ludovici, to transform conservatism into a doctrine indistinguishable from fascism. The Association of Arthur Maximilian Landrassy with the Society of the Friends of Order in Ludovici's novel of 1921, What Woman Wishes, is, I suggest, of autobiographical significance. The Society of the Friends of Order, like the Order of the Red Rose, is devoted to the transformation of collectivist conservatism into fascism. The description of the leaflets of the Friends of Order, and its organisation and membership, closely resemble that of the Order of the Red Rose. A.M. Landrassy's Vindication of the Rule of the Best probably refers to Ludovici's A Defence of Aristocracy. A text book for Tories. Whilst the Friends of Order's first major publication, A Handbook for Anti-Bolshevists, with its advocacy of legislation for the purification and proper preparation of common foodstuffs, and realist denunciation of "justice", "liberty", "equality", "social reform", and socialist diatribes against private property, matches Ludovici's The False Assumptions of "Democracy", of 1921. Indeed, we are informed that the former book was the joint work of A.M. Landrassy and Lord Chiddingly, the leader of the Friends of Order, whilst the False Assumptions of "Democracy" is introduced by Lord Willoughby de Broke, one of the leaders of the Order of the Red Rose. In his introduction to Ludovici's The False Assumptions
of "Democracy", Lord Willoughby de Broke endorses Ludovici's denunciation of liberalism, as their generation had been sacrificed for its delusions on the battlefields of World War I. Reciprocally, in his A Defence of Conservatism, Ludovici recounts that when he used to visit the 1900 Club in Pickering Place, London, before World War I, he delighted in persuading Lord Willoughby de Broke that any speech supporting the Constitution was "humbug", especially after the advent of the Parliament Act in 1911. He praised Lord Willoughby de Broke for his conviction that the repeal of the Parliament Act of 1911 should be the first object of the Conservative Party.

The Order of the Red Rose's synthesis of fascism with collectivist conservatism is perfectly explicit in the following passages:

Toryism then holds the future of England in the hollows of its hand. But Toryism must purge itself of Whiggery and declare war upon the money-grubbers. It must expose the conspiracy of exploitation which is the foundation of Radicalism. So shall the Radical Party crumble to dust. Toryism must recognise that the trade unionist is the best man in the working classes, and declare war upon bureaucracy in his name. So shall Socialism be blown sky-high. Toryism must declare solidly for the tradition of Duty and the Protection of the Pity. And lastly it must purchase a smattering of brains. So shall it become articulate.

Their repudiation of traditional conservatism was such that they reckoned even Vicount Bolingbroke, whom they regarded as one of the greatest of Tories, "speaks of the alien revolution of 1689 as the 'glorious revolution.'" But, what could they be conserving if they believed that from this epoch the biological elite of the race had been neglected and "Jewish or trading traditions commonly called Whiggery and Radicalism" were England's only traditions? They thought the accession of William of Orange and the introduction of alien influences and alien finance had obliterated all ancient
tradition that had been restored in part by the reigns of
Elizabeth I and the early Stuarts up to the Civil War. Indeed:

The life of Bolingbroke shows that Conservatism
was practically extinct at the beginning of the
eighteenth century... since Bolingbroke's time
Conservatism has, as a matter of fact, been fighting
a losing battle against the forces of individualism
and anarchy. It has been recognised by the greatest
Conservatives that in this country a constructive
policy was hopeless in the face of the suicidal
philosophy of personal exploitation which held sway.
Lord Shaftesbury and the Young England Party made a
stand with social reform, and Disraeli tried at
least to give them good sewers and drains, but no-one
born, since the death of Charles I, attempted a
constructive policy. 10

However, they lamented, the Tory revolt to the inhuman and
intolerable conditions caused by laissez-faire in the nineteenth
century only succeeded in introducing mere palliatives like the
Factory and Truck Acts, and later the Compensation Acts. 11 They
considered Bolingbroke to be the last and least of the Tories. 12
Indeed, Sanderson thought 'Whiggery' had made Tory legislation
impossible of accomplishment throughout the nineteenth century,
as it had completely infected the Tory Party. 13 He idealised a
'golden age' from which he believed England had degenerated:

The particular character encouraged was that
which was best fitted for creating the wealth of
the country by agriculture and protecting it by War.
The party which encouraged the productive character,
the character which had power to produce and on which
the life of the race depended, the Tory Party, very
naturally claimed to be the National Party of England. 14

However, the collectivist 'conservatism' that Sanderson and the
Order of the Red Rose advocated was quite different from that of
Disraeli as the 'submerged tenth' should not be aided by public
beneficence but either 'drowned instantly or gradually and kindly
eliminated.' 15 Their 'conservatism' entailed attending to the
dictates of racial memory 16 and regarding miscegenation as criminal. 17

When a race
...is struggling against climatic conditions or in military exploits, it clings to a Conservative policy and acts very strictly on the lines of its own experience, and it is only when life gets very much easier through the accumulation of wealth, that it is able to indulge in false ideas of republicanism and democracy.\textsuperscript{18}

Indeed, the doctrine of the Order of the Red Rose is unequivocally fascist. Sanderson, as early as 1913, wrote that the motive of racial growth and perfection is the races acquisition of power. tradition of England should be that of War, whose motive is unconscious.\textsuperscript{19} War is the sole creative force in history\textsuperscript{20}, and its progress is unfolded in the development of the art of war.\textsuperscript{21}

He called aggression noble, it is enhanced in the face of danger and teaches discipline and cooperation in the task of enslaving other races through war, the only effective means of regeneration.\textsuperscript{22}

His ideal was the warrior who disregards comfort and materialism, the creed of arrested development and "Semitism". He thought the Jews should be exterminated as should all races that fail in the struggle for life.\textsuperscript{23} The English are the elite of the Aryan race as only they would have the requisite qualities to invade her isolated position.\textsuperscript{24} The demand for Home Rule and Welsh disestablishment was regarded by Sanderson as the cry of conquered inferior races.\textsuperscript{25} Those who do not recognise the mystical origins of the patriot were deemed useless to the race and should be eliminated.\textsuperscript{26} Class conciliation was advocated because it was deemed as in "the interest of the race"\textsuperscript{27}, the supreme criterion of political action. The unfit and alien among the population should be eliminated, Sanderson deemed it necessary for the regeneration of the English race.\textsuperscript{28}

Sanderson plaintively asserted that rationalism had succeeded instinct and established a system that threatened the health and vigour of the English.\textsuperscript{29} He transmuted collectivist conservatism
into fascist populism with his claim that exploitation was Jewish and not English in origin. He believed England was undergoing a revolution and needed a great leader to "save it from a hideous conflict between manipulators and producers." The middle-class did not escape his condemnation for their subordination of every racial and national interest to the pursuit of profit. Usury and exploitation had been tolerated as England had degenerated from a time when private property was merely the reward for aristocratic leaders who possessed the authority to command others and to organise society for the public good. The corruption of laissez-faire had thwarted the 'natural' elite and facilitated control by international Jewry, organised throughout the world to control and exploit nations by destroying their character. Government in England had become the instrument of alien control and capitalist exploitation not of the popular will. Sanderson believed that the party system was controlled by an alien financial system that had occasioned the degradation of the working classes. The Order of the Red Rose avoided identification with the party system and, typical of the way established political parties identified fascist movements, Sanderson confessed that socialists had reviled the Order of the Red Rose as old-fashioned Tories whereas Tories regarded it as a dangerous variant of socialism. Parliament did not satisfy their active ideal of politics. They dismissed it as a 'talking shop.' Action was their key word. Language which did not lead to action was denounced as the prostitution of energy. The traditions which they sought to establish could only be founded through action, not through the 'talk' of Parliament.
The Order of the Red Rose—conjoined the foregoing ideas with the familiar elitism of fascism. Sanderson admired William the Conqueror and the Papacy for they fulfilled the essentials of the elitist organisation of society he desired:

The function of an upper class is to organise society. And to fit itself for its purpose it must be divided into a priesthood with leisure and ability to think, and an aristocracy that is able to act. 42

Sanderson defined it as the purpose of the Order of the Red Rose to rear leaders 43 who would supersede the moribund elite which had promoted capitalism and exploitation. 44 The new elite would not be encumbered by the deliberation of democracy as the mass were deemed incapable by 'instinct' of aspiring to statesmanship. 45

In his advocacy of total change Sanderson referred to Anthony Mario Ludovici's Hans Descent from the Gods; or, the complete case against prohibition for his intention to drastically change the brewing industry to restore the health of the populace. 46 Implementation of Ludovici's prescriptions concerning ale would accompany revolutionary success 47 which entailed absolute unanimity of purpose among the members of the Order of the Red Rose. 48 They explicitly advocated violent and "fascist methods" to secure their political objective, even at the cost of their own life and liberty, if the necessity arose. 49 However, some ambiguity still remained as to the depth to which they intended to transform collectivist conservatism into fascism. Although they believed civilisation had gone past "redemption point", they advocated that the upper classes, as an alternative to "destructive revolution", should: "lead and organise a revolution from the top." 50 Their prescription was that England should evolve a "new feudalism" 51 in which all private property would be socialised by ensuring that it would be carefully administered in the interests of the race. Those landlords who
failed to maintain a certain number of men fit for military service would be deprived of their estates.\textsuperscript{52} Private land and industry would be strictly controlled in the interest of the nation, according to "military models.\textsuperscript{53} Sanderson deprecated contemporary society for its urbanism, individualism, and legal system. They had destroyed the instincts of the race and were not conducive to "military ideals.\textsuperscript{54} Sanderson thought that the only hope for: "the restoration of the health and prosperity of the race lies in the institution of a new feudalism, with a sound motive propounded by a natural priesthood, and a genuine policy anunciated by a patriotic aristocracy." In his advocacy of the above he made frequent references to Anthony Mario Ludovici's \textit{A Defense of Aristocracy.} A text book for Tories, a formulation which Sanderson believed could restore England from the corruption of a century and a half of lassaiz-faire.\textsuperscript{56}

Not surprisingly by 1929 Sanderson was contributing to the \textit{Fascist,} the newspaper of Arnold Spencer Loeso's Imperial Fascist League. In his advocacy of fascism he criticised the party system for diverting attention from its popular objectives. Fascism was a menace to Conservatives who had betrayed their trust and irresponsible Liberals and servile Socialists. He called the party system absurd, a means of popular exploitation, whilst fascism would not debate with fools but lead.\textsuperscript{57} In one article he wrote a panegyric of war. It taught men to place their lives at the disposal of the nation.\textsuperscript{58} Reciprocally, the Imperial Fascist League advertised the published writings of William John Sanderson as recommended literature for fascists.\textsuperscript{59}

Sanderson proceeded to found the English Mistery in 1930. Two of his books outlined its doctrine. The first, \textit{That Which was Lost} -
A Treatise on Freemasonry and the English Mistery, elaborated the theory that all civilisations have a parabolic development, but that at any point in the parabola of progress and decline it is possible for an entirely new impetus to be given by an effective political leader, which he saw as the role of the English Mistery. Conjoined with the preceding were such fascist notions as the belief that "the greater part of knowledge is comprised by instinct", and that the parties of the Parliamentary system were mercenaries of the 'moneyed interest' that had secured the acquiescence of the people in their own exploitation. He referred to Anthony Mario Ludovici's *Hans Descent from the Gods; or, the complete case against prohibition* to support his claim that people unaffected by miscegenation have sound instincts. If Englishmen abandon safety and live dangerously an elite, thus created, could achieve more in England than had been done since Elizabethan times. Unusual among other anti-Semitic groups the English Mistery accepted Freemasonry as they thought it maintained the importance of selective breeding. Sanderson wrote in the *Freemason* that: "Love, in fact, and common sense, implies selection, and does not exclude hatred." The second book of Sanderson's that outlined the doctrine of the English Mistery, *Statecraft - A Treatise on the Concerns of our Lord the King*, contained the assertion that reason was dangerous. Any devotion to abstract thought such as reading and writing were detrimental to 'instinct'. It advocated that the weak should be enslaved. Sanderson gave his reason for founding the English Mistery as England's degeneration. England had degenerated through tolerance and her regeneration could only be achieved through "the most unpleasant ways". He believed that if people's instincts or emotions troubled them they should not suppress them with morality as Puritans do. He combined this anarchist notion with the
authoritarian one that bondage leads to freedom, a combination of political extremes that is typically fascist. He thought society should be based on reciprocity through a barter economy, that would render the 'money power', which had corrupted political democracy, weak. Political democracy was dismissed as "the result of turning greed into a religious faith."

The English Mistery's name came from the phrase Crafts and Misteries. The latter implied a derivative from the word Mister in turn derived from Master or in Latin Magister, such as a master worker not an apprentice in the old medieval craft guilds. Their task was to synthesise collectivist conservatism such as that of Disraeli, to whom they made frequent laudatory references, with fascism.

They sought to restore power to the monarchy and the aristocracy in a revived feudalism:

As Englishmen we can say with Bolingbroke, the greatest of our exponents of Royalism, that we are free men who claim the right to look our King in the face and tell him that upon him, and upon him alone, devolves the duty to lead the nation.

And, in so doing, they closely identified themselves with the Order of the Red Rose. They shared a common attempt to restore collectivist conservatism, which formed the matrix of their respective doctrines, the kernel being fascism:

We who are building this new institution to cherish an old tradition have taken over this task from those who fail in the first German War. They conceived that they were rekindling the quenched torch of the Tory Revolt, known as the Young England Party, overthrown under the leadership of Lord George Bentinck in 1848.

Indeed, Gerald Vernon Vallop, otherwise known as Vicount Lymington, who was the executive leader or Chief Mister of the English Mistery and from August 29, 1937, the leader or Marshall of the English Array a splinter movement of the English Mistery, had been in...
Parliament as Conservative M.P. for Basingstoke between 1929 and the winter of 1934 when he resigned. He gave as his reason for resignation from the Conservative Party that they had forgotten to be "Tories in the real sense", and: "we were conserving the 19th century Liberal ideas of laissez-faire of devil take the hindmost in our self-blind progress. To me it seemed that personal responsibility should be part of our philosophy." He felt himself: "more and more in sympathy with the tragic sincerity of the Labour Party." Indeed, contemporaneously he was especially concerned at what he deemed to be the corruption of the Conservative Party besides that of the party system as a whole:

We have, as a Conservative Party, a tendency to inherit the Whig accomplishments of the last hundred years, and to forbear in attacking the Socialist changes of the last decade. We accept the Whig value of vested interests; and because Disraeli thought (wrongly as we can now see) that the proletariat's vote would correct the selfishness of the moneyed vote, we accept the all in all of the Socialist idea of democracy.

After making derogatory speeches about Baldwin's leadership he was approached by representatives of the English Mistery and accepted the offer to become its executive leader. Contemporaneously, he justified this by claiming that the English Mistery was an agency of "Toryism" that promised to restore the nation and "the fulfilment of our traditions". Indeed, the English Mistery represented for Wallops "a real and uncompromising return of Toryism." The English Mistery defined its purpose as that of national regeneration and the re-creation of the body politic. Discipline was one of its emphatic objects. It was to be internally disciplined by the Syndicate of the English Mistery which consisted of the Lords of the Mistery and forty two Syndics, the Chief Syndic being known as the Chancellor. Those allowed to take one step towards the Throne were called
Companions and bound by oath to act as servants of English Royalty. Those permitted to take two steps were called Proctors if they elected not to take the third step, whilst those who took the third step were called Misters of Englishry, or simply Misters. Each rank in the hierarchy was strictly subordinate to their superiors.  

They attributed what they regarded as the failure of modern politics to the invidious multiplication of deliberative assemblies which compromised leadership and action. They considered total unanimity as vital to the existence of society, and believed there should be a single leader for the nation. Indeed, the Chancellor of the English Mistery performed "the essential service of ruling the motive of the Mistery." Indicative of the power he wielded, the Chancellor could only be appointed by the unanimous decision of the Lords of the Mistery. The latter consisted of: "Princes of the Blood, Peers of the Realm, eldest sons of Peers and persons who according to ancient tradition, were fit to be created Peers."  

The Recorder acted as Secretary to the Syndicate and was appointed by and responsible to the Chief Mister. Similarly, Syndics were appointed by the Lords of the Mistery, the Misters of Englishry, and only one could be appointed by the Chief Mister in those counties in which the Mistery operated. Indicative of the authoritarian organisation of the English Mistery, the appointment and removal of the Chief Mister of each Kin was in the hands of the County Syndics, who also recommended and selected for the approval of the Chancellor, a Vice-Chancellor of the Kin.  

Besides their common doctrinal transformation of collectivist conservatism into fascism both the English Mistery, and the Order of the Red Rose, had the common emblem of a five-petalled red rose.
which the English Mistery placed on a black background symbolising mourning for the nobility which had been undermined by "Whiggery." The English Mistery intended to mount the five-petalled red rose on a St. George's flag as soon as the monarch had been restored as the 'leader' of the people.

The English Mistery rejected the recent history of England as being dominated by the 'money power' whose baneful control was even traced to the press which imposed uniformity of opinion in the interests of its alien masters. It advocated total change. Each member of the Mistery was instructed to militantly oppose every aspect of contemporary society, to battle against contemporary degeneration, and if society was unresponsive:

...fight without compromise, regardless even of the cost to yourselves and to your families, regardless even of your lives, for the danger to your race is greater than it ever was even in the blackest hours of war... the forces of death must collapse before the forces of life.

Only those of English race were eligible for membership of the English Mistery as progress was considered by the English Mistery to be the sole result of cooperation between those of the same race and 'unconscious' aims. They regarded themselves as descendants of the Nordic race and avoided all those whom they regarded as of mongrelized or other race, especially Americans.

One member of the English Mistery thought that the House of Lords should only comprise men "who are leaders in the application of racial values." Jews were strictly excluded from membership of the English Mistery, as they believed, the best cocker spaniel could never make a good greyhound. Accordingly, they advocated the strict prevention of miscegenation. Their monism led to their concern that the 'yeomen' among England's "livestock" should be conserved through selective breeding. Men must recreate and regain their "animal qualities," reject reason.

504
and live according to instinct. They believed that the spread of the Latin peoples and Christendom had led to the domination of scientific method, which they regarded as dangerous. They actually claimed that science was devoid of explanatory power as to ‘understand’ meant to stand under and worship something that could not be comprehended. Thus, the English Mistery could not be explained but only unquestioningly supported. Thought emanates from instinct, they claimed. Deliberation could only stultify action. Indeed, they exalted action. Each member of the English Mistery should deploy himself “as an instrument for action and not for clever wit.” They were instructed to express themselves in action rather than words. Anthony Mario Ludovici’s A Defense of Aristocracy, A text book for Tories was recommended as it was considered a book to reflect in action, not to reason about. Not surprisingly, the English Mistery greeted World War II as a relief from degeneracy and the inauguration of a new era that depended on action and not on deliberation.

Their desideratum of totalitarianism was portrayed as a government whose regenerative action would not be encumbered by a parliament and other deliberative assemblies, whose role would be merely advisory. Indeed, debate was prohibited within the Kin of the English Mistery. They claimed to find their direction in instinct. Accordingly, no decision of the English Mistery was ever to be made by a majority vote. They rejected constitutionalism as they thought no constitution could be effective, their criterion being action, in conditions other than those of unanimity. They liberated themselves from legal regulation by either claiming England had no constitution, or if it did, it was alien, or Venetian, and should be eradicated. Furthermore, they
reinforced their rejection of the party system by advocating withdrawal of support from those candidates who were unwilling to organise their constituency on the basis of a functional representation that accorded with Governmental omnipotence.\textsuperscript{112} They claimed Parliament's legislation conflicted with the interest of the race.\textsuperscript{113} Indeed, the English Mistery repudiated both the 'left' and the 'right'\textsuperscript{114} as it believed both to be controlled by the 'money power.\textsuperscript{115} The English Mistery was called a "movement" which transcended the party system and its associated ideologies.\textsuperscript{116} Socialism was dismissed as symbolising the end of party government and liberalism.\textsuperscript{117}

The English Mistery deemed that power and authority could not come from elections,\textsuperscript{118} which were totally absent from their movement. They thought responsibility could only rest on great leaders.\textsuperscript{119} The 'natural' elite could only secure the regeneration of England by eschewing the corrupt democratic system and superseding the nobility who had, unfortunately, forfeited their salutary power to political parties and pawned their land to the Jews. Significantly, all Ludovici's books were recommended as guides to the creation of a new elite.\textsuperscript{120} Government should be carried on by men of power, called Lords, who "are recognised rather than made or unmade by authority."\textsuperscript{121} Men can only be representative if their authority is derived from racial memories\textsuperscript{122} not from democracy, with its delegation and election, which was dismissed as a vehicle of destruction.\textsuperscript{123} Democracy either frustrated or eliminated the 'natural' elite: the "sahib class"; the peasantry; the elite of the working class.\textsuperscript{124} The creation of a naturally selected elite supplied the motive for perfection,\textsuperscript{125} which the English Mistery believed could be attained in two generations at least.\textsuperscript{126} They believed their ideal of government had already been realised in the
Portugal of Salazar.127

The English Mistery’s ideal of perfection was a new feudalism from which faction and autonomous spheres of social activity would be eradicated. To secure this they identified themselves as an anti-party that would sweep away the party system128 and replace it with a monolythic corporate State that would unleash the popular, and governmental, will from all legal and institutional regulations.129 The ‘right’ of private ownership would be contingent on the fulfillment of duties to a popular monarch.130 In the elaboration of their ideal of a new feudalism it was stipulated that Anthony Mario Ludovici’s *A Defence of Aristocracy. A text book for Tories* and his *The Choice of a Mate* “should be owned by everyone and kept for constant reference.”131 The executive would be chosen by and solely responsible to the monarch, and this elite would govern independently of political parties through a corporate State untainted by alien influence.132 Indeed, the English Mistery specifically sought the reconstitution of a nobility133 which would equitably adjust the conflicting claims of a revived guild system.134 Furthermore, they had a very bizarre and disciplined ceremony reminiscent of feudality, devoid of a constitution and deliberately contrived to be puzzling to liberals.135

Undoubtedly, the Mistery received a major set back to its dwindling fortunes with the defection of Wallop, Ludovici, and others, to form the English Array in 1937. An equally serious blow was to come on April 15, 1941, when the Chancellor, William Sanderson, died. He was succeeded by the High Steward, Lord Howard de Walden.
Nevertheless, the ideological direction of Ludovici persisted after his departure. For example, Henry Snell's explanation of laughter was taken almost verbatim from Ludovici's *The Secret of Laughter*. The Mistery continued to advocate fascism throughout World War II. It asserted that the Eighth Army provided an elite which, through selective breeding, could inaugurate England's racial perfection. It also maintained that: "the agitation against Mosley has been assiduously fostered by aliens." Indeed, the members of the English Mistery continued their diatribe against the "monocry power" and party politics until after World War II. However, evidently an increasingly moribund English Mistery received its final setback with the death of its High Steward, Lord Howard de Walden, on November 5, 1946.

Much of the English Mistery's vigour was lost through the division which occurred when a minority refused to accept an order of the Council of Strength removing William Sanderson as Chancellor. This minority continued as the English Mistery whereas the majority relinquished all past association with the English Mistery and on August 28, 1937, Wallop proposed the name Array, a word derived from the Gothic and implying militant response to duty, as their name. This was approved and on August 29, 1937, the new Keepers of the Array appointed Wallop as Marshall. Ludovici abandoned the English Mistery and joined the English Array, which proved even more racialist than the former and was supposed to have been involved in a plot to poison many prominent Jews.

According to Wallop war is endemic between races and its renunciation is tantamount to national degeneration. He believed democracy propagated "weeds and vermin", that should be eliminated. He did not conceal his advocacy of fascism.
Neither did the English Array, which greeted the Nazi conquest of Czechoslovakia as an indication of mankind's natural and providential inclination to struggle, and cited Anthony Mario Ludovici's *Jews and the Jews in England* as affording further evidence for this claim.

However, as Wallop despairingly conceded, the English Array, like the English Mistery, despite its efforts was a force in British politics of no significance. In his autobiography he confessed that both the English Mistery and the English Array had provided the outside world with ridicule and laughter. They were regarded as "near fascist". Indeed, Wallop himself narrowly avoided being imprisoned during World War II under Defence Regulation 18b of 1940.

Quite clearly Wallop's disaffection from the Conservative Party reflected his inability to persuade them to adopt fascism. As early as 1931 in a book addressed to conservatives, *Ich Dien*, he attempted a synthesis of collectivist conservatism with fascism. He complained that the 'leaders' of democracy spend their time "walking with the crowd, not directing the march." He thought the democracy he was dissatisfied with should be superseded by the functional representation of a corporate state. He thought England should realise Joseph Chamberlain's dream of imperial self-sufficiency, as it would be conducive to a strong nationalism. Whilst, a powerful House of Lords would be a 'cure' for democracy. Furthermore, in 1932 while still a Conservative M.P. he asserted in his *Horn, Hoof and Corn*, *The Future of British Agriculture* that progress could only be racial, and that the pastoralisation of England would restore its peoples' 'blood.'
However, it was in the years subsequent to his resignation from the Conservative Party in 1934 that Wallop's avowal of fascism became more intensive. Although, his conviction to transform collectivist conservatism into fascism persisted. He thought that neither the rococo reconstruction of Bolingbroke's philosophy by Disraeli nor the arduous and all too short labours of Lord George Bentinck and his friends succeeded in arresting the inevitability of inertia. In his book of 1938, *Famine in England*, much recommended by the Imperial Fascist League, Wallop maintained that the dregs of the 'blood' congregated in the cities. He thought that the unexploited Dominions, whose soil was the means of regenerating English 'blood', were threatened by 'yellow and brown races'. Laissez-faire had also threatened the purity of the white races. Subsequently, he asserted that the history of civilisation is that of its soil. Like animals, each race adapts to the necessities of its soil which moulds its physique, thoughts, and actions. Through his elaboration of his notion of 'blood and soil' he concluded that the English were an aristocratic race. Monistically, he asserted that mind and body are indivisible and as the latter is older its instincts are more important than reason. He reckoned England should engage in a "war of calculated and ruthless aggression" to instil it with the qualities requisite for its racial regeneration. England had degenerated under the dominance of finance, whose 'money power' controlled democracy. The contemporary degenerate aristocracy and middle-class had been corrupted through the 'money standard'. Wallop advocated their supersession by a popular elite created from the working classes who, according to Wallop had: "the good stock left that makes England the pivot of Western civilisation." His ideal of
government was totalitarian, one that combined elitism with populism. Government should be sufficiently powerful to imitate the husbandman. It should protect the biological elite from 'weeds' and 'parasites' by eliminating them. Indeed, through the rule of 'blood and soil', and the sacrifice of those deemed biologically inferior, Wallop believed that if: "we can regard the human stock of England as we should regard her soil, there are no summits which she may not reach."

Furthermore, Wallop was elected President of the British Council Against European Commitments in September 1938. The latter was essentially a co-ordinating body for the National Socialist league led by William Joyce and John Beckett; the English Array; and the League of Loyalists, an even smaller body. Their programme was isolationist, an attempt to immobilise opinion against war with Nazi Germany which, Wallop asserted, could only mean aiding bolshevism. However, the venture amounted to little. The Council was allowed to lapse with John Beckett leaving the National Socialist League at the same time and joining with the Marquis of Tavistock, (later the Duke of Bedford) and Wallop to form, in March 1939, the British Peace Party (later the British Peoples' Party). John Beckett was the General Secretary, the Marquis of Tavistock the President, and Wallop one of the members of the Executive. Its aims were virtually identical with the British Council Against European Commitments, and was very anti-Semitic. They also shared a common insignificance. Several of the British Peace Party's members were imprisoned under Defence Regulation 18b, in 1940.

However, the monthly journal of the British Council Against European Commitments, the New Pioneer, edited by Wallop and John
Beckett, is of considerable ideological significance. It was ultra-patriotic and pro-Nazi. Wallop wrote of the *New Pioneer*:

"While it cannot be held to be part and parcel of Array doctrine, its use in spreading Array ideas in it should be very strong."

Most importantly, Ludovici contributed numerous articles and book reviews to the *New Pioneer*. Indeed, Ludovici's social and political thought is quite representative of one vein of the doctrinal elaborations to be found in the *New Pioneer*. Besides its unconcealed advocacy of fascism there can be identified, in the *New Pioneer*, a parallel doctrinal vein of thought which sought the synthesis of collectivist conservatism with fascism. The following passage, taken from another contributor, is representative of the latter doctrinal vein which abounded in the *New Pioneer*:

The English people have their own corporatist tradition...which a large number of Tories, including Disraeli, Cross, Lord Milner and Lord Robert Cecil were highly interested in...

The effort of Conservatives such as Disraeli, Oastler, and Cross whose spirit is still to be discerned in places within the modern Conservative Party, to restore the regulative intentions of government in industry have never been completely followed up by the modern Conservative Party. But if ever that Party...dares to announce a programme aimed at regulation in a manner and to a degree which forces us to see similarities with the Guild regulative system then we may manage to avoid the coming disaster.179

In the *New Pioneer*, Wallop advocated a truce with Nazi Germany and the extirpation of communist Russia, which he regarded as the agency of international Jewry. Arthur Keith Chesterton, cousin of G.K. Chesterton, and a founding member of Oswald Mosley's British Union of Fascists and who spent two of his six years in the B.U.F. as

Hereafter referred to as the B.U.F.
editor of *Action* and was Oswald Mosley's official biographer. He contended that President Roosevelt rather than Hitler was the enemy of the English working man as the former was the mouth piece of Jewry and the 'money power.' Whilst the fascist nations refused "to remain in the power of gold." John Scanlon, who used to write for the B.U.F. under the pseudonym John Emery, also frequently contributed to the *New Pioneer*. As did John Greene and John Beckett who were both ex-B.U.F. members, and the secretary and treasurer respectively of the British Peace Party. Both of the latter were imprisoned under Defence Regulation 18B in 1940.

All of the foregoing, including Ludovici, elaborated fascism explicitly in the *New Pioneer* throughout the initial phase of World War II. They agreed with its policy of isolation, that "the golden hordes of the future (Jews and Communists) are watching with patient jealous eyes for the civil war of Europe - England versus Germany, Bolshevism versus internal regeneration, or whatever form the struggle may take." Indeed, Joan Morgan wrote that Hitler was fulfilling the Nietzschean promise of the 'Superman'. In the last issue of the *New Pioneer*, in January 1940, she wrote that "Ghouls and Idealists" had precipitated degeneration by their recipe of: "Internationalism, Federalisation, Collective Security, Mongrelisation, Soil Erosion, World War, Civil War, Propaganda, Taxation, Armaments, Trustification, also all sorts of vices and perversions."

Finally, two of Ludovici's books were published by organisations whose clientele was fascist or extremely anti-Semitic. His *Jews* and *the Jews in England* was published by Boswell, primarily the creation
of the Duke of Northumberland, which was eventually taken over by the Britons Publishing Society. Ludovici's *The Specious Origins of Liberalism: the genesis of a delusion* was published by the latter in 1967. The Britons Publishing Society was founded in 1918 by Henry Hamilton Beamish, an anti-Semite of some notoriety. It was a significant source of racist and anti-Semitic publications in England from its inception.

Thus, the obvious conclusion of this final chapter is that Ludovici's political affiliations were fascist. Furthermore, and of major significance for this thesis, his primary affiliations like William John Sanderson, Gerald Vernon Wallop, the Order of the Red Rose, the English Mistery and the English Array were, like Ludovici, attempting to transmogrify the nature of conservatism into a doctrine indistinguishable from fascism. Indeed, Ludovici's doctrine provided direction for both the English Mistery and the English Array movements, and provided a source of inspiration for the Order of the Red Rose.
Notes to Chapter 6: Ludovici's Political Affiliations


2. *English Mistery, Orders of 1932, July 1, 1932.*


11. *ibid.,* p.35.


17. *ibid.,* p.16.

18. *ibid.,* p.17.


20. *ibid.,* p.11.


22. *ibid.,* p.17.

23. *ibid.,* p.22.


32. Order of the Red Rose [William John Sanderson], *Like a Thief in the Night*, Red Rose Pamphlet No. 12, 1918, p. 3.

33. *ibid.*, pp. 16-17.


41. *ibid.*, pp. 81-82.


44. *ibid.*, p. 22.


47. *ibid.*, p. 32.


49. *ibid.*, *The Order of the Red Rose*, Red Rose Leaflet No. 22, [1923].


54. Ibid.

55. Ibid., pp. 25-26.

56. Ibid., pp. 34-35.


61. Ibid., p. 11.


63. Ibid., p. 63.

64. Ibid., pp. 125-126.


68. Ibid., p. 64.

69. Ibid., p. 45.


73. Ibid., pp. 3-4.


517
Notes to Chapter 6


76. idem., Function and Composition of the Syndicate, Order of 1930, No.2, p.2.


79. ibid., p.124.


81. ibid., p.123.


83. ibid., p.4.

84. idem., Function and Composition of the Syndicate, Order of 1930, No.2, pp.1-2.

85. ibid., p.4.

86. ibid., pp.4-5.

87. idem., Orders of 1933, p.1.


89. idem., Rules of Procedure for All Audiences of the Syndicate and Meetings of the Kin, Order of 1930, No.4, p.5.

90. idem., Rules of Conduct for Companions, Order of 1930, No.5, pp.3-4.

91. ibid., pp.8-9.


96. idem., Notes on the Orders, 1933, p.11.

97. ibid., p.6.

98. ibid., p.22ff.


100. ibid., December 1938, p.1.

101. idem., Notes on the Orders, 1933, p.42.
Notes to Chapter 6


103. ibid., pp.10-11.


105. Lord Howard de Walden, in the *Recorder's Quarterly Guide* (London: English Mistery), March 1940, p.3.


108. ibid., pp.10-11.


110. idem., *A Description of the English Mistery*, Leaflet No.5, 1938, pp.9-10.


114. idem., *Orders on the Orders*, 1933, p.4.


117. ibid., December 1939, pp.3-4.


120. idem., *Chancellor's Index of Literature*, first edition, 1936, p.4.


122. ibid., June 1938, pp.3-4.

123. ibid., June 1939, pp.1-2.


125. ibid., December 1937, p.1.

126. ibid., June 1940, p.4.

127. ibid., June 1938, pp.3-4.

Notes to Chapter 6


133. ibid., pp.9-10.

134. idem., An Introduction to the English Mistery, 1944, p.8ff.


139. ibid., March 1945, p.1.

140. ibid., June 1945, p.1.


142. George Thayer, op.cit., p.106.


144. ibid., No.3, April 1938, p.4.

145. ibid., No.4, July 1938, p.1ff.

146. English Array, Quarterly Gazette of the English Array, No.5, October 1938, p.2.

147. ibid., p.3ff.


150. ibid., p.129.

151. ibid., p.185.


153. ibid., p.31ff.

154. ibid., p.120.

156. ibid., p.170.


158. ibid., pp.201-202.

159. ibid., p.203.


161. ibid., p.29.


163. ibid., p.18.


166. ibid., pp.17-18.

167. idem., *Alternative to Death* (London: Faber and Faber, 1943), p.64.


171. ibid., p.209.


175. Robert Benewick, loc.cit.


Notes to Chapter 6


181. ibid., Volume I, No.12, November 1939, p.277ff.

182. George Thayer, op.cit., p.54.


CONCLUSIONS

The conclusions of this thesis are that it is the tradition of ideologies that are incommensurable, not ideologies per se. That it is not logically impossible for fascism to be introduced into a party system, which it intends to succeed, through rendering the ideology of an established political party commensurable with fascism. That fascists have attempted to render established ideologies commensurable with fascism, and have succeeded. The doctrine of Anthony Mario Ludovici and his affiliates, in which conservatism is commensurable with fascism, demonstrates the above in relation to conservatism. Indeed, history is profuse with instances of established ideologies being rendered commensurable with fascism. Especially before World War I in continental Europe, 'socialists', 'conservatives', and those disillusioned with traditional ideologies generally, repudiated the traditions of established ideologies and rendered them commensurable with all political extremes. Some, on occasion, called themselves 'revolutionary conservatives', or 'national socialists'. Their innovations were intended for adoption by the adherents of political parties who were disillusioned with the traditions of their respective ideologies.

That the fascists who had rendered established ideologies commensurable with fascism, like Anthony Mario Ludovici and his affiliates, contingently failed to get their innovations accepted by the adherents of established ideologies, for whose adoption they were intended. They failed because ideologies are traditions, and the respective traditions of ideologies are incommensurable visions of how men should be associated and authority and power distributed. Incommensurable ideologies are both cause and consequence of the political divisions of party systems whose political parties deploy them as the language of their adherence.
The practical success of an innovation in any ideology is always and everywhere decided by its contingent acceptance or rejection by the custodians of the traditions of an ideology, political parties and their constituents. Political ideologies tend to inertia because they are traditions that are incommensurable. It is this inertia that the fascists who rendered established ideologies commensurable with fascism, could not overcome. Hence the obscurity of Ludovici and his affiliates.

Fascism is an ideology that could not be sustained in the party systems in which it arose. The inertia of political parties and the incommensurability of the traditions of their ideologies has overwhelmed those who have attempted to render the latter commensurable with fascism. Consequently, fascists renounced their original parties of affiliation. Oswald Mosley, after failing to render the ideologies of both the Conservative and Labour parties commensurable with fascism; Benito Mussolini and those fascists who were originally affiliated to political parties, renounced them. The 'revolutionary conservatives' of Weimar Germany, as their name implies, renounced all affiliations with conservatives and allied themselves with the National Socialists. Whilst Hitler and the National Socialists never attempted to operate within German socialist parties, they knew it would be futile. Fascists have succeeded in rendering established ideologies commensurable with fascism. However, they have found it practically impossible to transform the ideologies of their parties of origin and to get them accepted as commensurable with fascism. If they had succeeded in overcoming the inertia then the latter would have become what we now regard as 'fascist'.

Fascists only succeeded when they became associated in movements independent of the political parties whose ideologies they rendered commensurable in their eclectic ideology which drew
from all areas of the political spectrum. Their ideology reflected their recruitment from persons, like themselves, who were disillusioned with political parties and the traditions of their associated ideologies. Their success has occurred with the crises of party systems, especially the immediate aftermath of World War I and the Great Depression which provided the disillusionment with political parties and their associated ideologies on which fascism was sustained. Nowhere have fascists succeeded as the adherents of the political parties whose ideological inertia they condemned.

Ludovici and his affiliates are obscure because they attempted to reverse this familiar pattern. They never succeeded in getting themselves regarded as conservatives because the traditions of conservatism and the consensus among conservatives about its meaning as its traditions created sufficient inertia that the innovations which Ludovici and his affiliates sought could not be effected in the contemporary party system. If they had succeeded conservatism would have become regarded by 'conservatives', and others, as commensurable with fascism. Nevertheless, the reasons for the failure of Ludovici and his affiliates are contingent. The prognosis of Harold Nicolson, when noting the difficulty of launching a fascist movement where the political culture is governed by a party system, is not impossible of achievement: "The English mind functions only in a groove; get it out of that groove and it flops into panic distaste...... I also believe that if we ever have fascism in this country it will creep in disguised in the red, white and blue of patriotism and the young conservatives."

The success of Ludovici and his affiliates could be posthumous.

Anthony Mario Ludovici died on 3 April 1971, aged eighty-nine years. His will specifies that two of his manuscripts be published from the moneys derived from the sale of his estate, and he published of a quality not inferior to that of his The Quest of Human Quality. How to rear leaders (London: Rider, 1952). The two manuscripts are: "The English Countryside", "My Autobiography (The Confessions of an Anti-feminist)". They have not been published due to the absence of any publisher willing to accept them as suitable for publication. However, the only surviving Executor, Mr. Thomas R.T. Manning of Manning, Rollin & Co., Solicitors and Commissioners for Oaths, Park House, Mere Street, Diss, Norfolk, (telephone 0379-3555) is prepared to release temporarily the deceased's manuscripts, consisting of "several large files", to a responsible Repository for the purposes of bona fide study.

Unfortunately, the deceased's papers have been lost to posterity. It was understood by the surviving Executor that the deceased's papers were sent by the deceased's nephew, Mr. John Ludovici of 1 Han's Place, London SW1, to Edinburgh University's Department of Social Medicine. The deceased's papers were indeed offered to the Department of Social Medicine of Edinburgh University. However, the Department of Social Medicine declined the offer. Subsequently, the deceased's papers, several teachests full, were lost, whilst in store, when John Ludovici, in whose permanent

---

1. John Ludovici, "Interview with the Author", 19 March 1980.

526
custody they were, went to Iran for two and a half years.¹

Misfortune, or perhaps deliberate misinterpretation, also blighted the deceased's substantial bequest to Edinburgh University. In his will, after sundry bequests, he goes on to bequeath the residue of his Residuary Estate in trust to the University Court of the University of Edinburgh. It was to be held in trust for the following purposes. Firstly, a sum of £2,000 was to be invested in trustee securities and the income thereof to be used to provide a money prize to be known as the "Ludovici Prize" to be awarded annually or at the discretion of the said University Court for the purpose of research into the influence of miscegenation on man's quality and well-being, such research being carried out under the auspices of the University Department of Social Medicine. However, the Department of Social Medicine chose to study Huntington's chorea rather than the effects of miscegenation - with Ludovici's financial bequeathment. I think the following is fair comment on the subject:

"If we have universities refusing to carry out research because they fear that there will be a certain amount of popular criticism against them for doing so, then we have a degree of suppression of the facts of the case. Ludovici did not demand that they were to find that the white races should prove superior to the black races; or that the crosses would prove to be bad between the two stocks. He merely asked that scientific research should be done."²

¹ John Ludovici, op. cit.
BIBLIOGRAPHY

ANTHONY MARIO LUDOVICI: PRIMARY SOURCES


528


---


---


---


---


---


---


---


---


---


---


---


---


---


---


---


---


English Liberalism London: English Array, [1939], pp.32.


537


LUDOVICI, Anthony Mario, "Is there a Sex War?" Review of Mrs. Bertrand Russell's Hypatia, or Woman and Knowledge (Kegan Paul, Trench, Trubner), New Age, Vol. XXXVII, No.3 (May 31, 1925), pp.29-30.


"Lysistrata; or, woman's future and future woman. London: Kegan Paul, [1926], pp. 117.


Man's Descent from the Gods; or, the complete case against prohibition. London: William Heinemann, 1921, pp. xi 255.


Number XXI, South African Observer, Vol. XII, No.12, September 1967, pp.11-12.


The Taming of Don Juan, London: Hutchinson, [1924]. pp.312.


Who is to be Master of the World? An introduction to the philosophy of Friedrich Nietzsche, with introduction by Dr. Oscar Levy, Edinburgh and London: T.N. Foulis, 1909, p.xii.199.


ANTHONY MARIO LUDOVICI: SECONDARY SOURCES


"Review of Man's Descent from the Gods; or, the complete case against prohibition, by Anthony Mario Ludovici, (London: William Heinemann, 1921)," The Times Literary Supplement, March 24, 1921, p.199 (b).


SICKERT, Richard, "Mr. Albert Ludovici. [An Obituary]" Letter to The Times, March 26, 1932, p.15.


ANTHONY MARIO LUDOVICI'S POLITICAL AFFILIATES

ENGLISH MISTERY, An Introduction to the English Mistery, n.d. [July 1944].


Chancellor's Index of Literature. Issued February 1, 1936.

Chancellor's Index of Literature. Issued February 20, 1936.


A Description of the English Mistery, 1938.

The English Mistery, Leaflet of 1934, No.1.

The English Mistery, Leaflet of 1934, No.2.

The English Mistery, Leaflet of 1935, No.1.

Finance, Order of 1930. No.6.

Functions and Composition of the Syndicate, Order of 1930, No.2.

Functions and Composition of the Syndicate, Order of 1930,

Membership of the English Mistery, Order of 1930, No.3.

Notes on the Orders, 1933.


Orders of 1932, issued July 1, 1932.

Orders of 1933, issued January 1, 1933.

Orders of 1931, Numbers 1 to 6, n.d.

Revised Orders of 1931, Numbers 1 to 8, n.d. [May 1931].

Revised Orders of 1931. Numbers 1 to 8, n.d. [September 1931].

Rules of Conduct for Companions, Order of 1930, No.5.

Rules of Procedure, for all audiences of the syndicate and meetings of Kin. Order of 1930. No.4.


ORDER OF THE RED ROSE, 
pseud. William John Sanderson] Rosemary for
Rememberance, Pamphlet No. 20, June 1919.

Before and After, Pamphlet No.1, 1913.

The Body Without a Soul, Pamphlet No.5, 1914.

Burn your Bonds, Leaflet No.9, n.d. [August 1916].

Burn your Bonds, Leaflet No.14, n.d. [September 1916].

Burn your Bonds, Leaflet No.17 n.d. [December 1917].

But if not, Pamphlet No.2, 1913.

The Case of the Amble Miners, Pamphlet No.3, 1916.

Drones in the Hire, Pamphlet No.10, 1916.

The Fight Against Degradation, Leaflet No.2, [June 1914].

Forgive us our Debts, Leaflet No.11, n.d. [August 1916].

The Industrial Crisis and its effect upon the Acomb Miners, Pamphlet No. 15, 1921.

Jesus College Rowing Notes, Pamphlet No.14, 1919.

Like a Thief in the Night, Pamphlet No.12, 1918.

Memorandum, Leaflet No.18 n.d. [December 1919].


The Needle's Eye, Leaflet No.8, 1916.


Order of the Red Rose, n.d. [February 1922].

Order of the Red Rose, Leaflet No.21, n.d. [February 1922].

Order of the Red Rose, Leaflet No.22, n.d. [December 1923].

Poor Prisoners, Pamphlet No.6, 1914.

Private Property, An Essay on the Political Significance of
the Institution, Pamphlet No.11, 1917.

A Red Rose, Pamphlet No.9, 1916.

The Red Rose, Leaflet No.19 n.d. [February 1919].

Red Rose Report and Balance Sheet, July 1914, Leaflet No.3.
n.d.

Red Rose Report and Balance Sheet, June 1915, Leaflet No.6,
n.d.

n.d.

555

The Rule of the Rose, Pamphlet No.13, 1919.

The Three Shift System, Leaflet No.1, n.d.

To the Immortal Memory of Arthur Curtis, n.d. [September 1916].

Voluntary Insurance, Pamphlet No.7, 1914.

The Whole Hog! The Northumberland Miners' War Memorial, Leaflet No.12, n.d. [August 1916].


"The Significance of the Royal Chair," Freemason, November 8, 1930.


That Which was Lost. A Treatise on Freemasonry and the English Mistery, London: Constable, 1930.


Alternative to Death, London: Faber and Faber, 1943.


THE MAIN CONTEMPORARY NEWSPAPERS AND PERIODICALS CONSULTED


NEW ENGLISH WEEKLY AND THE NEW AGE, The, etc. London: Vol.14, no.12/13 - vol.31, no. 5 January 1939 - 10 April 1947. [Changed name to New English Weekly, etc.]


FASCISM: PRIMARY SOURCES


-------------, Big Boy Bevin, n.d. [November 1937].

-------------, Blackshirts Back Mosley because Mosley backs Britain, n.d. [November 1937].

-------------, Britain and Jewry, 2nd impression, n.d. [April 1939].

-------------, British Union and the Transport Workers, n. d. [November 1937].

-------------, British Union' for British Race,n.d. [November 1937].

-------------, The British Union stands for Trade Unionism, n.d. [November 1937].

-------------, Dockers! Nothing has been done, n.d. [November 1937].

-------------, The Empire and the British Union, n.d. [November 1937].

-------------, Is Lancashire Doomed? n.d. [April 1939].

-------------, The Marching Song, n.d. [November 1937].

-------------, Membership Form, November 7, 1932.

-------------, The Miners' Only Hope, n.d. [November 1937].

-------------, Pharmacy in British Union,n.d. [April 1939].

-------------, The Simple Jewish Worker, n.d. [November 1937].

-------------, Support Fascism and Save the Fisherman, n.d. [November 1937].

-------------, 10 Points of Fascism, n.d. [November 1937].

-------------, To Every Britain, n.d. [November 1937].

-------------, Trade, Unionists you are the Victims, n.d. [November 1937].

-------------, What Jews did in the War, n.d. [November 1937].


CHAMBERLAIN, Houston Stewart, The Foundations of the Nineteenth Century, London: John Lane, 1911, 2 volumes.


COLAN, pseud. 'Then Atheistic Communism will Cease', London: British Union of Fascists, n.d. [November 1937].


GINGERING, Herman, Germany Reborn, London: Elkin Matthews and Marrot Ltd., 1934.


HEYWARD, Peter, Menace of the Chain Stores, London: British Union of Fascists, n.d. [April 1939].


———. Mein Kampf, translated by James Murphy, London: Hurst and Blackett, 1942.


IMPERIAL FASCIST LEAGUE, Agriculture comes first, n.d. [February 1935].

———. Destroy British Imperialism............ n.d. [December 1934].

———. The Era of World Ruin! (The Era of Democracy), n.d. [March 1934].

———. Fabian Political Control, n.d. [February 1935].

———. Freemasonry, 1935.


———. The Hidden Hand Revealed in Black and White, n.d. [December 1934].


———. Let us all go mad! n.d. [May 1939].


———. Mightier Yet! Back to Reality, June 1935.

———. Money no Mystery, Mastery by Monopoly, n.d. [December 1934].


———. Our Jewish Aristocracy, January 1936.


560

Release Leese, n.d.

To a Gentile Jester (of the Variety Profession), n.d. [March 1934].


KEYSERLING, Herman, Europe, London: Jonathan Cape, 1929.


LEESE, Arnold Spencer, Bolshevism is Jewish, n.p: Imperial Fascist League, n.d. [March 1934].


January 1928, pp.5-15.


Fascism in Britain, London: British Union of Fascists, n.d. [November 1937].


Taxation and the People, London: British Union of Fascists, n.d. [April 1939].

Tomorrow We Live, Sixth edition, London: Greater Britain, 1939.


PALMIERI, Mario, The Philosophy of Fascism, New York: Fortuny's, 1936.


SPENGLER, Oswald, *The Decline of the West,* New York: Knopf. 2 volumes.


STRASSER, Otto, *Germany Tomorrow,* London: Jonathan Cape, 1940.

History in my time, London: Jonathan Cape, 1941.

Hitler and I, London: Jonathan Cape, 1940.


FASCISM: SECONDARY SOURCES


---


BISCHOFF, R.F. Nazi Conquest through German Culture, Harvard University Press, 1942.


BLUME, Hilary S, "A Study of Anti-Semitic Groups in Britain 1918-1940" (Sussex University, M.Phil. thesis, 1971).


HENTSCHEL, Cyril, The Byronic Teuton, Aspects of German Pessimism 1800-1933, London; Mathuen, 1940.

HERTZMANN, Lewis, D.N.V.P., Right Wing Opposition in the Weimar Republic, Lincoln: University of Nebraska Press, 1963.


LEBOVICS, Herman, Social Conservatism and the Middle Classes in Germany 1914-1933, Princeton University Press, 1969.

LEBSELTZER, Gisela C., Political Anti-Semitism in England 1918-1939.


The Nationalisation of the Masses: Political Symbolism and Mass Movements in Germany from the Napoleonic Wars through the Third Reich, New York: Ferfig, 1975.


RAUSCHNING, Herman, Germany's Revolution of Destruction, Road to Nihilism, London: Heinemann, 1940.

— The Beast from the Abyss, London: Heinemann, 1941.


RIDGE, George R. The Hero in French Decadent Literature, University of Georgia Press, 1961.


VERMEIL, E, The German Scene: Social, Political and Cultural, 1890 to the present day. London: George and Harrop, 1956.

VIERECK, Peter, Metapolitics: From the Romantics to Hitler, New York: Alfred A. Knopf, 1941.


ed. The Origins of Modern Consciousness, Detroit, 1965.


CONSERVATISM: PRIMARY SOURCES


CECIL, Lord Hugh, Conservatism, London: Williams and Norgate, 1912.


DAWSON, Christopher, Beyond Politics, New York: Sheed and Ward, 1939.

DISRAELI, Benjamin, Earl of Beaconsfield, Whigs and Whiggism, Political Writings, London: John Murray, 1913.


Notes Towards the Definition of Culture, Glasgow University Press, 1948.


Quality or Equality? London: Signpost, 1944.


Reconstruction; A Plea for a National Policy, London: Macmillan 1933.


SELLON, Hugh, Democracy and Dictatorship, London: Lovat Dickson, 1934.


CONSERVATISM: SECONDARY SOURCES


MISCELLANEOUS


EAGLETON, Terry, Criticism and Ideology: A Study in Marxist Literary Theory, London.


